

THE
NEW BRAZIL

MARIE ROBINSON WRIGHT

THE NEW BRAZIL

ITS RESOURCES AND ATTRACTIONS

HISTORICAL, DESCRIPTIVE, AND INDUSTRIAL



PHILADELPHIA: PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY

GEORGE BARRIE & SON

LONDON: C. D. CAZENOVE & SON, 26 HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, W. C.

PARIS: 19 RUE SCRIBE

COPYRIGHT, 1901, BY GEORGE BARRIE & SON

TO HIS EXCELLENCY

Dr. Manoel Ferraz de Campos-Salles

PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF BRAZIL

A LEADER AMONG THE GREAT MEN WHO ARE SHAPING THE DESTINY OF THE WESTERN WORLD
AND HONORED AS ONE OF THE FOREMOST STATESMEN IN THE
CREATION OF THE NEW REPUBLIC

Is Dedicated

THIS WORK IN DESCRIPTION OF THE LIFE AND PROGRESS OF A NATION WHOSE FIRM
ADHERENCE TO THE PRINCIPLES OF INDEPENDENCE HAS FOUND
REWARD IN THE GREAT PROSPERITY OF
THE NEW BRAZIL

BIBLIOTECA SENADO FEDERAL
Este volume acha-se registrado
sob o n.º L-2003-926

CONTENTS

	PAGE		PAGE
DEDICATION	5	CHAPTER X	
LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS	9	MUSIC, ART, AND LITERATURE	163
INTRODUCTION	13	CHAPTER XI	
CHAPTER I		ORATORY AND THE PRESS	177
EARLY HISTORY AND TRADITION	17	CHAPTER XII	
CHAPTER II		NATURAL RESOURCES, CLIMATE AND MANUFACTURES	189
NATIONAL INDEPENDENCE	35	CHAPTER XIII	
CHAPTER III		COMMERCE AND TRANSPORTATION	199
FALL OF THE EMPIRE, AND GENESIS OF THE REPUBLIC	53	CHAPTER XIV	
CHAPTER IV		THE STATE OF RIO	213
THE FIRST DAYS OF THE REPUBLIC	71	CHAPTER XV	
CHAPTER V		COFFEE	225
THE CIVIL PRESIDENTS	87	CHAPTER XVI	
CHAPTER VI		SÃO PAULO	237
THE FEDERAL CAPITAL AND SUBURBS	103	CHAPTER XVII	
CHAPTER VII		MINERAL WEALTH AND VEGETATION	251
THE BOTANICAL GARDEN	123	CHAPTER XVIII	
CHAPTER VIII		MINAS GERAES	265
PICTURESQUE SCENES	133	CHAPTER XIX	
CHAPTER IX		BAHIA	275
SCHOOLS AND CHARITABLE INSTITUTIONS	149	CHAPTER XX	
		ESPIRITO SANTO, SERGIPE, AND ALAGOAS	287

CHAPTER XXI	PAGE	CHAPTER XXIX	PAGE
RELIGION AND SOME OLD CHURCHES	293	AMAZONAS	367
CHAPTER XXII		CHAPTER XXX	
PERNAMBUCO	305	MATTO GROSSO AND GOYAZ	385
CHAPTER XXIII		CHAPTER XXXI	
PARAHYBA, RIO GRANDE DO NORTE, AND PIAUHY .	317	YERBA MATE	391
CHAPTER XXIV		CHAPTER XXXII	
AGRICULTURE AND IMMIGRATION	323	PARANA	399
CHAPTER XXV		CHAPTER XXXIII	
CEARA	333	SANTA CATHARINA	407
CHAPTER XXVI		CHAPTER XXXIV	
MARANHAO	339	RIO GRANDE DO SUL	413
CHAPTER XXVII		CHAPTER XXXV	
PARA	347	PRIMITIVE INHABITANTS AND FOLK-LORE	421
CHAPTER XXVIII		CHAPTER XXXVI	
THE RUBBER INDUSTRY	361	NATIONAL CUSTOMS AND CHARACTERISTICS	439

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE		PAGE
DR. MANOEL FERRAZ DE CAMPOS-SALLES, PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF BRAZIL <i>Fronts.</i>		MARSHAL FLORIANO PEIXOTO	63
MONUMENT TO CABRAL, RIO DE JANEIRO	17	MILITARY SCHOOL, RIO DE JANEIRO	66
RUSTIC BRIDGE IN THE GARDEN OF THE PRESIDENT'S PALACE, RIO DE JANEIRO	19	PALACE OF AGRICULTURE, RIO DE JANEIRO	70
SALON IN THE PRESIDENT'S PALACE, RIO DE JANEIRO	21	NATIONAL PRINTING-OFFICE, RIO DE JANEIRO	73
CATTETE PALACE, RESIDENCE OF THE PRESIDENT OF BRAZIL, RIO DE JANEIRO	23	FIESTA IN THE CITY OF RIO DE JANEIRO	75
SCENE IN THE GARDENS OF CATTETE PALACE, RIO DE JANEIRO	25	BOLSA, RUA PRIMEIRO DE MARCO, RIO DE JANEIRO	77
NATIONAL MUSEUM, SAO CHRISTOVAO, RIO DE JANEIRO	27	QUAY OF LA GLORIA	80
ENTRANCE TO THE HARBOR OF RIO	29	PATHWAY IN TIJUCA	82
FORT OF SANTA CRUZ, ENTRANCE TO THE HARBOR OF RIO	32	COPACOBANA, RIO DE JANEIRO	84
YPIRANGA, MONUMENT ON THE SITE OF THE PROCLAMATION OF BRAZILIAN INDEPENDENCE, SAO PAULO	33	RIO DE JANEIRO	86
INTERIOR OF YPIRANGA	38	DR. PRUDENTE JOSE DE MORAES BARROS, FIRST CIVIL PRESIDENT	88
CORRIDOR IN YPIRANGA	40	DR. OLYNTHO DE MAGALHAES, MINISTER OF FOREIGN AFFAIRS	89
RUA DO OUVIDOR, RIO DE JANEIRO	41	DR. JOAQUIM DUARTE MURTINHO, MINISTER OF FINANCE	90
RIO DOCKS BY MOONLIGHT	43	DR. SEVERINO VIEIRA, MINISTER OF PUBLIC WORKS	91
OLD CARIOCA AQUEDUCT, RIO DE JANEIRO	46	GENERAL MALLET, MINISTER OF WAR	92
PUBLIC GARDEN IN RIO DE JANEIRO	49	ADMIRAL BALTHAZAR SILVEIRA, MINISTER OF MARINE	93
BOTAFOGO, RIO DE JANEIRO	52	DR. EPITACIO DA SILVA PESSOA, MINISTER OF JUSTICE AND OF THE INTERIOR	94
STATUE OF EMPEROR DOM PEDRO I., RIO DE JANEIRO	53	DR. THOMAZ WALLACE DA GAMA COCHRANE, SECRETARY OF THE PRESIDENCY	95
PRACA DA REPUBLICA, RIO DE JANEIRO	56	AQUEDUCT ROAD TO CORCOVADO	98
CASA DA MOEDA [MINT], RIO DE JANEIRO	59	PALACETE ITAMARATY	100
OFFICIAL RECEPTION ON THE ARRIVAL OF A FOREIGN DIPLOMAT, RIO DE JANEIRO	61	CORCOVADO, FROM SYLVESTRE	102
MARSHAL DEODORO DA FONSECA, FIRST PRESIDENT OF THE REPUBLIC OF BRAZIL	62	VISTA OF RIO DE JANEIRO	103
		THE MUNICIPAL CHAMBER, RIO DE JANEIRO	105
		PAQUETA	107
		SUMMIT OF CORCOVADO, RIO DE JANEIRO	109
		VISTA AT SYLVESTRE, SUBURB OF RIO	111
		CHURCH OF THE CANDELARIA, RIO DE JANEIRO	113
		TIJUCA FOREST	115
		MISERICORDIA HOSPITAL, RIO DE JANEIRO	117

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE		PAGE
GRAND CASCADE, TIJUCA	119	DR. JOAQUIM FRANCISCO DE ASSIS BRASIL, MINISTER TO THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA	179
STATUE OF GENERAL OSORIO, RIO DE JANEIRO	120	DR. FERNANDO MENDES DE ALMEIDA, JR., EDITOR "JORNAL DO BRAZIL," RIO DE JANEIRO	180
THE BAMBOOS, BOTANICAL GARDEN, RIO DE JANEIRO	122	DR. JOSE CARLOS RODRIGUES, EDITOR "JORNAL DO COMMERCIO," RIO DE JANEIRO	181
LILY-POND IN BOTANICAL GARDEN	123	DR. RUY BARBOSA	182
AVENUE OF PALMS, BOTANICAL GARDEN	124	GROUP OF DISTINGUISHED EDITORS OF AMAZONAS SENHOR ANTONIO FONTOURA XAVIER, CONSUL- GENERAL TO THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA	183
BOTANICAL GARDEN, RIO DE JANEIRO	125	DR. JOAQUIM NABUCO, MINISTER TO ENGLAND	185
IN THE BOTANICAL GARDEN	126	IN THE HEART OF THE TROPICS	188
GLIMPSE OF CORCOVADO FROM BOTANICAL GARDEN	127	BRAZILIAN WATER-CARRIER	189
RUA LEADING TO THE BOTANICAL GARDEN, RIO DE JANEIRO	129	NATIVE PALMS	190
THE BAMBOOS, BOTANICAL GARDEN	130	A PEASANT GROUP	191
GREAT FALLS IN MINAS GERAES	132	COCOANUT PALM	192
MOUNTAIN SCENE IN MINAS GERAES	133	NEGRO CARREGADOR	193
YAPO RIVER, NEAR CASTRO, PARANA	135	A CONTENTED SON OF THE FOREST	194
ROCKS AT VILLA VELHA, PONTA GROSSA, PARANA	136	LAVANDEIRAS	196
NATURAL MONOLITH AT VILLA VELHA, PARANA	137	PONTE BOA VISTA, ON THE CENTRAL RAILWAY	198
PINES OF PARANA	138	VIEW ON THE CENTRAL RAILWAY	201
CURIOUS NATURAL PILLARS, PONTA GROSSA, PA- RANA	139	RAILWAY BRIDGE AT CASTRO, STATE OF PARANA	202
SCENE ON THE AMAZON RIVER	140	PARANA RAILROAD BRIDGE OVER THE IGUASSU RIVER	203
SALTO GRANDE DO RIO DOS PATOS, IN SOUTHERN BRAZIL	141	VIADUCT ON THE PARANA RAILWAY	204
FOREST BROOK IN SERGIPE	142	SCENE ALONG THE PARANA RAILROAD	205
INDIAN OF THE RIO BRANCO, AMAZONAS	143	THREE-RAIL TRACK ON LEOPOLDINA RAILROAD, STATE OF RIO	206
APPIACAZ INDIAN CHIEF, AMAZONAS	144	VIADUCT ON THE SERRA BETWEEN SANTOS AND SAO PAULO	207
CHIEF OF THE JAUAPIRY INDIANS	145	CABLE ROAD BETWEEN SANTOS AND SAO PAULO	208
WOODLAND SCENE IN SANTA CATHARINA	146	A RIVER-BOAT WITH NATIVE INDIAN OARSMEN	209
NORMAL SCHOOL, SAO PAULO	148	VIEW OF HARBOR AT SANTOS	210
POLYTECHNIC SCHOOL, SAO PAULO	150	PETROPOLIS	212
A BRAZILIAN CHAUTAUQUA	151	DR. QUINTINO BOCAYUVA, PRESIDENT OF THE STATE OF RIO	213
AMERICAN COLLEGE, PETROPOLIS	152	RIVER SCENE IN PETROPOLIS	214
COLLEGE OF LAW, SAO PAULO	153	PRINCIPAL AVENUE OF PETROPOLIS, BATHED BY RIO PIABANHA	215
GYMNASIO, MANAOS	154	JAPANESE LEGATION, PETROPOLIS	216
DR. HORACE M. LANE, PRESIDENT OF MACKENZIE COLLEGE	156	OLD DILIGENCE ROUTE TO PETROPOLIS	217
HOSPITAL MISERICORDIA, BAHIA	157	LIBRARY, PETROPOLIS	218
HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE, RIO DE JANEIRO	159	GERMAN LEGATION, PETROPOLIS	219
MACKENZIE COLLEGE, SAO PAULO	160	MOUNTAIN DRIVE-WAY, PETROPOLIS	220
PEDRO AMERICO. HONOR AND COUNTRY	162	PRESIDENT'S PALACE, PETROPOLIS	221
PEDRO WEINGARTNER. COUNTRY BALL	164	AMERICAN LEGATION, PETROPOLIS	222
THE BERNARDELLI BROTHERS	165	FAZENDA OF BARAO GERALDO DE REZENDE	224
CARLOS GOMES	166	BARAO GERALDO DE REZENDE	225
MODESTO BROCOS. MANIOC	167	A COFFEE-TREE	227
PEDRO WEINGARTNER	168	DRYING COFFEE	228
PEDRO AMERICO	169	PICKING COFFEE	229
STUDIO OF A BRAZILIAN ARTIST	170	SCENE ON A COFFEE FAZENDA	230
FERRAZ D'ALMEIDA. DURING THE REST	171		
PEDRO WEINGARTNER. BY OBLIQUE LINES	172		
HENRIQUE BERNARDELLI. MOTHER	173		
RODOLPHO AMOEDO. THE DEPARTURE OF JACOB	174		
OLD IMPERIAL PALACE, PETROPOLIS	176		
DR. BERNARDINO DE CAMPOS	178		

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE		PAGE
A GROUP OF COFFEE-PICKERS	231	A PRIMITIVE INDUSTRY	289
SAO ANTONIO COFFEE FAZENDA, SAO PAULO	232	PRIMITIVE METHOD OF THRESHING BEANS	290
FAZENDA NOVA LONGA	233	INTERIOR OF THE FRANCISCAN CHURCH, BAHIA	292
COFFEE-GATHERER'S CABIN	234	ARCHBISHOP ARCOVERDE, OF RIO DE JANEIRO	293
THE PALACE AT SAO PAULO	236	CHURCH OF SANTA ANNA, PARA	294
GARDEN SCENE, SAO PAULO	237	CATHEDRAL, MARANHAO	295
DR. RODRIGUES ALVES, PRESIDENT OF SAO PAULO	238	CHURCH DO CARMO, PERNAMBUCO	296
VIEW OF SANTOS AND HARBOR	239	SHRINE OF BOMFIM, BAHIA	297
PALACETE OF CONSELHEIRO PRADO, SAO PAULO	239	RUINS OF CONVENT IN OLINDA, PERNAMBUCO	297
IMPOUNDING DAM, SAO PAULO WATER-WORKS	240	CHURCH OF SAO FRANCISCO, CAMPOS	298
RUA FLORENCIO D'ABREU, SAO PAULO	240	SECTION OF DADO, FRANCISCAN MONASTERY, BAHIA	299
PUBLIC SQUARE IN SAO PAULO	241	CHURCH OF NOSSA SENHORA DE NAZARETH, PARA	300
STREET IN CAMPINAS, STATE OF SAO PAULO	242	CHURCH OF MONTSERRAT, BAHIA	301
COL. PRESTES, EX-PRESIDENT OF SAO PAULO	243	PATIO OF THE FRANCISCAN MONASTERY, BAHIA	302
HOSPITAL DE ISOLAMENTO, SAO PAULO	243	CHURCH OF NOSSA SENHORA DO CARMO, PARA	303
RESERVOIR DA LIBERDADE, SAO PAULO	244	CHAPEL OF NOSSA SENHORA DA GRACA, BAHIA	304
BEACH AT GUARUJA, STATE OF SAO PAULO	245	OLINDA LIGHTHOUSE, PERNAMBUCO	305
HOTEL AND CASINO AT GUARUJA	246	GOVERNOR'S PALACE, PERNAMBUCO	306
LARGO DO PALACIO, SAO PAULO	247	DR. GONCALVES, GOVERNOR OF PERNAMBUCO	307
FOUNTAIN LIBERDADE, SAO PAULO	248	PONTE DE BOA VISTA, PERNAMBUCO	307
QUARRY AT MORRO VELHO, MINAS GERAES	250	DERBY MARKET, PERNAMBUCO	308
THE COQUILLA-NUT PALM	251	STREET SCENE IN PERNAMBUCO	309
DIAMOND MINER'S HUT	252	RESIDENCE AT DERBY, PERNAMBUCO	310
BANANA-TREES IN A PRIVATE GARDEN	253	RECIFE LIGHTHOUSE, PERNAMBUCO	311
MANGO-TREE	255	PRACA MANOEL PINHEIRO, PERNAMBUCO	311
PAPAW-TREE	256	BOA VISTA, CITY OF PERNAMBUCO	312
TYPES OF HALF-BREED INDIAN WOMEN	257	THEATRE, PERNAMBUCO	313
THE BAMBOO PALM	259	HOTEL DERBY, PERNAMBUCO	314
WASHING DIAMONDS	261	NATIVE FAMILY	316
BANANA-TREES	262	SCENE IN PIAUHY	318
CASCADE NEAR MORRO VELHO, MINAS GERAES	264	THE MONJOLO [PRIMITIVE GRIST-MILL]	318
CASCADE NEAR BELLA HORIZONTE, MINAS GERAES	266	OX-TEAM, PIAUHY	320
THE MOUNTAIN CITY OF OURO PRETO, MINAS GERAES	267	IMMIGRANTS AT HOSPEDARIA, STATE OF SAO PAULO	322
JUIZ DE FORA, STATE OF MINAS GERAES	269	A CHEERFUL GROUP AT THE HOSPEDARIA	324
MORRO VELHO, MINAS GERAES	271	DISEMBARKING OF IMMIGRANTS, PARA	325
A SYLVAN SCENE, MINAS GERAES	272	POLISH COLONIST'S HOUSE IN PARANA	326
BAHIA. VIEW FROM THE UPPER CITY	274	TYPICAL BLUMENAU COTTAGE	327
MONUMENT SEGUNDO DE JULHO	275	AMAZON RIVER SCENE	327
PRACA IN LOWER CITY, BAHIA	276	FIRST GLIMPSE OF THEIR ADOPTED LAND	328
DR. LUIZ VIANNA, EX-GOVERNOR OF BAHIA	277	PUBLIC BUILDING IN BLUMENAU	329
SENHOR S. S. SCHINDLER, BAHIA	278	THE LATEST ARRIVALS FROM OVER THE SEA	330
PANORAMA OF BAHIA FROM THE BAY OF ALL SAINTS	279	PANORAMA OF ALEMQUER, ON THE AMAZON RIVER	331
CATHEDRAL, BAHIA	279	STEAMER LANDING IMMIGRANTS IN SANTOS HARBOR	332
THEATRE, BAHIA	280	VENDOR OF CEBOLLAS	333
RUA DO COMMERCIO, BAHIA	281	STREAMLET IN CEARA	334
MUNICIPAL PALACE, BAHIA	281	RAILROAD BRIDGE OF ACARAHU, CEARA	335
BRIDGE CROSSING RIO UNA, STATE OF BAHIA	282	RAILROAD BRIDGE OF CHORO, CEARA	336
RESIDENCE OF SENHOR MONTEIRO, BAHIA	283	RAILROAD DEPOT, CEARA	337
HOUSE OF THE SENATE, BAHIA	284	DAM OF QUIXADA, CEARA	338
STREET SCENE IN THE UPPER CITY, BAHIA	286	MUNICIPAL PALACE, MARANHAO	340
A LAKE SCENE NEAR VICTORIA	287	CASA DA PRACA, MARANHAO	341
TYPICAL COUNTRY CONVEYANCE	288	LARGO DO CARMO, MARANHAO	341

	PAGE		PAGE
COTTON-MILLS, MARANHÃO	342	RIVER-BOAT LOADED WITH YERBA MATE	393
LARGO DOS REMEDIOS, MARANHÃO	343	INDIANS CARRYING YERBA MATE TO THE MILL	394
GAZOMETRO, MARANHÃO	343	YERBA-MATE TREES	395
PIER AT MARANHÃO	344	CUYAS	396
PRACA VISCONDE DE RIO-BRANCO, PARA	346	WATER-FALL NEAR CURYTIBA, PARANA	398
DR. AUGUSTO MONTENEGRO, GOVERNOR OF PARA	347	A PATHWAY IN PARANAGUA, PARANA	399
ESTRADA DE NAZARETH, PARA	348	PUBLIC GARDEN, CURYTIBA	400
THE CUSTOM-HOUSE, PARA	349	RUA 15 DE NOVEMBRO, CURYTIBA	401
ESTRADA SAO JERONYMO, PARA	350	POST-OFFICE, CURYTIBA	401
FOYER OF LA PAZ THEATRE, PARA	351	HOUSE OF CONGRESS, CURYTIBA	402
BOSQUE MUNICIPAL, PARA	352	A RUSTIC SCENE IN THE PUBLIC GARDEN, CURYTIBA	403
THEATRO DA PAZ, PARA	353	STREET IN CURYTIBA	403
PUBLIC GARDEN, PARA	354	PALACE OF THE GOVERNOR, CURYTIBA, PARANA	404
SENATOR JUSTO CHERMONT, PARA	355	THE AMERICAN CHURCH, CURYTIBA	405
THE PALACE, PARA	356	PUBLIC WASH-HOUSE	406
AVENIDA DA REPUBLICA, PARA	357	SUBURBS OF FLORIANOPOLIS, SANTA CATHARINA	407
DOCKS, PARA	358	LAKE AT BLUMENAU, SANTA CATHARINA	408
TABATINGA, ON THE PERUVIAN FRONTIER	360	CASCADE IN SANTA CATHARINA	409
HUT OF A SERINGUEIRO	362	STREET SCENE IN FLORIANOPOLIS	410
RUBBER-TREE	363	PRACA GENERAL DEODORO, PORTO ALEGRE	412
RUBBER-GATHERERS IN THE AMAZON COUNTRY	365	JARDIM PUBLICO, PELOTAS	413
COLONEL NERY, GOVERNOR OF AMAZONAS	367	BUSINESS STREET, PORTO ALEGRE	414
RUA DO INSTALLACAO, MANAOS	368	LANDING, RIO GRANDE DO SUL	414
GOVERNOR'S PALACE, MANAOS	369	RUA SETE DE SETEMBRO, PORTO ALEGRE	415
OLD PALACE OF GOVERNOR, MANAOS	369	ISLAND OF PEDRAS BRANCAS, NEAR PORTO ALEGRE	416
THEATRO DO AMAZONAS, MANAOS	370	QUARTEL AND INTENDENCIA, RIO GRANDE DO SUL	416
POLICE STATION, MANAOS	371	CASCADE IN RIO GRANDE DO SUL	417
PUBLIC MARKET, MANAOS	371	MATRIZ, PORTO ALEGRE	418
MONUMENT IN MANAOS	372	PORTUGUESE HOSPITAL, PORTO ALEGRE	419
RUA MUNICIPAL, MANAOS	373	LIGHTHOUSE OF ITAPOAN, NEAR PORTO ALEGRE	420
BENJAMIN CONSTANT INSTITUTE, MANAOS	373	INDIAN. BOLIVIAN, OF MANAOS	421
WATER-WORKS AT CACHOEIRA GRANDE, MANAOS	374	HEAD OF A GOD	422
VIEW OF MANAOS AND THE RIO NEGRO	375	INDIAN OF MATTO GROSSO	423
JARDIM PUBLICO, MANAOS	376	AMAZONIAN INDIAN BOY	424
INTERIOR OF THEATRE, MANAOS	376	A BOTOCUDO MOTHER	425
MONSIGNOR COUTINHO, VICE-GOV. OF AMAZONAS	377	INDIAN ORNAMENTS FROM THE BORDER OF PERU	426
OFFICES AND CARS OF ELECTRIC RAILWAY, MANAOS	378	AMANAS. CANNIBALS, WITH ARMS AND ORNAMENTS	427
SUBURBAN VIEW, MANAOS	378	AMAZONIAN INDIAN GIRL	428
REV. YOSE LOURENCO, BISHOP OF AMAZONAS	379	CAIXANAS. SAVAGE INDIANS, MAN AND WOMAN	429
MANAOS, STATE OF AMAZONAS	380	CAIXANAS. WITH CROWN OF CREEPERS	431
HARBOR OF MANAOS	381	IMPLEMENTS MADE BY THE INCAS	433
BRIDGE AT CACHOEIRINHA, MANAOS	382	RUINS OF THE PALACE OF THE INCAS	435
STEAMBOAT STATION ON THE LAKE OF FONTE BOA	384	POTTERY OF THE INDIANS	436
CAYAPO INDIAN CHIEF	385	RIACHUELO MONUMENT IN BAHIA	438
PICTURESQUE COUNTRY ROAD	386	GAUCHO OF SOUTHERN BRAZIL	439
BAIAO, ON THE RIO TOCANTINS	387	BAHIAN NEGRESS	440
ANCIENT INDIAN POTTERY	388	A LIBERIAN PLUTOCRAT OF BAHIA	442
WEAVING BASKETS FOR CARRYING PRODUCE	389	A MOCO CARRYING WATER	443
GARUPA, STATE OF PARA, ON AMAZON RIVER	390	PICTURESQUE SCENE, NEAR PARA	445
CUYAS AND BOMBILLAS	391	INDIAN CUISINE	447
TRANSPORTING YERBA MATE	392	COUNTRY SCENE	449
MATE BLOSSOMS	393	DAUGHTERS OF THE NEW BRAZIL	450

INTRODUCTION



BY the recent celebration of her four hundredth anniversary, Brazil not only signalized her wonderful growth and development from apparent insignificance to a position of great importance among the nations, but also marked the successful inauguration of new conditions with the influence of new forces at work to mould the high destiny of a people who will stand among the controlling powers of twentieth-century civilization. There is a constantly growing interest, among English-speaking people especially, regarding the present condition and probable future of this vast republic which promises to be such an important factor in the political and commercial development of the western continent. Scientific explorers have repeatedly drawn attention to her inexhaustible resources; travellers have pictured with enthusiasm her marvellous natural beauties; but from these sources little information of a commercial character can be expected. Geologists and botanists recognize the priceless value of the vast stores hidden in the mines or growing out of the fertile soil, but only in their relation to the needs of the student seeking fresh knowledge in the field of scientific research; the average traveller is impressed with existing appearances rather than inherent possibilities; and neither of these can fully appreciate the importance of attracting the attention of the world to the general growth and expansion of commerce which must result from the highest development of such unlimited natural wealth. The time has come, however, when to the investigations of the scholar and the discoveries of the traveller are to be added the practical application of commercial talent and much capital with a view to the realization of substantial profit of a twofold character: that which grows out of the employment of idle means and enriches the investor, and that which accrues to the world at large from the stimulated growth and activity of trade. It has been a popular supposition among foreigners, fostered by reckless and unreliable writers, that the climate of Brazil must forever prove a serious obstacle to her commercial development, standing in the way of immigration and, consequently, of a great population; but an unprejudiced study of the true conditions,

as furnished by the vital statistics, proves such a view groundless, and tells an entirely different story from some of the articles written by heedless correspondents of sensational papers.

The present work, while giving such attention to the political and social development and the natural beauties of the country as is necessary for a general knowledge, is designed also to give a faithful description of the commercial and industrial features of Brazil.

No books on Brazil have been published in English since the days of the Empire, and few within the past fifty years. Yet great progress has been made in that time, and especially within the past decade, during which, in spite of the difficulties that necessarily attend first efforts, the republic has steadily forged ahead in the direction of power and prosperity.

At the opening of the twentieth century, all eyes are turning toward South America, as they turned toward her northern neighbor at the beginning of the century just closed; and there is every reason to believe that the phenomenal growth and progress which marked the history of the United States of America during the nineteenth century will be duplicated during the present one by her young republican sister and friend—The New Brazil.

During extended travels in Brazil, covering thousands of miles and requiring nearly two years for completion, the author was the recipient of many kind attentions which will ever be remembered with appreciation. From a grateful heart thanks are expressed to the illustrious President of Brazil, Dr. Campos-Salles, and the members of his cabinet, for unfailing interest and assistance in this work, and for many distinguished courtesies. To officials of the State department of the United States, and to its honored representatives in Brazil, Minister Charles Page Bryan and Consul-General Eugene Seeger, to the courteous Consul-General of Mexico, Commendador Simões dos Santos, and to Mr. Charles R. Flint, of New York, who have generously extended every possible aid, a great indebtedness is acknowledged with heartfelt obligations; and sincere thanks are tendered to all who have given information of value in the preparation of "The New Brazil."

DR. MANOEL FERRAZ DE CAMPOS-SALLES

PRESIDENT

OF THE UNITED STATES OF BRAZIL

Copyright 1901 by S. Chase & Co.



THE NEW BRAZIL

CHAPTER I

EARLY HISTORY AND TRADITION



MONUMENT TO CABRAL,
RIO DE JANEIRO.

PEDRO ALVARES CABRAL, the Portuguese navigator who discovered the southern continent of the western hemisphere, and set in the royal diadem of Portugal a gem of brilliant lustre destined to eclipse the crown itself, owed the honor and fame that immortalize his memory to one of those happy caprices of destiny that visit a few men once or twice in a century. It was certainly a "favoring fortune" that guided his ships, as he steered westward out of his course to avoid the dead calm off the coast of Africa on his way to the Indies, and suddenly wafted him upon the wonderful "Land of the Southern Cross."

A Spanish navigator, Vicente Yañez Pinzon, is thought to have sighted the coast of Brazil some months earlier than Cabral, passing the mouth of the Amazon River, which he named the "Fresh-water Sea;" but he did not take possession of the newly found territory, and the news of its discovery is declared to have reached the Old World first through Cabral. Thus the honor of priority is somewhat divided, opinions differing as to the claims of the two.

It was on Good-Friday, the 22d of April, 1500, that Cabral first landed, taking possession of the country in the name of the king of Portugal. The point of disembarkation was not far from the present site of Bahia, at what is known as Porto Seguro. The territory was named the "Island of the True Cross," but this was changed the following year to "Santa Cruz," and a little later to its present name, "Brazil;" so called from the abundance of red-wood known to commerce in those days as "brazil." On Sunday, the 26th of April, an altar was erected, and the first Mass was celebrated in Brazil by Friar Henrique, of Coimbra. A few days later, the fleet left the harbor, proceeding on its way to the Indies, having put ashore in the newly discovered territory two *degradados* [mutineers].

Between 1501 and 1504, two expeditions were sent out by Portugal: the first, under Andre Gonçalves, sailing along the coast from Cape São Roque southward; and the second, under Gonçalo Coelho, proceeding from Bahia southward. Amerigo Vespucci accompanied the latter expedition. Two small forts were built,—one, by Vespucci, at Cape Frio, and the other, by Coelho, at Rio de Janeiro,—but both were destroyed by the Indians. Vespucci returned to Lisbon in 1504, and one of his letters, still extant, is the first published document giving information about the new country, which he describes in enthusiastic terms as a “terrestrial paradise.”

In 1503, the Brazilian coast was explored from Cape São Roque to Maranhão by the Portuguese navigator João Coelho, and the following year a Portuguese expedition made a survey southward, extending the discoveries to the Rio de la Plata and Patagonia. Nearly all the Portuguese fleets sailing for the Indies at this time, put into port somewhere along the coast of Brazil.

Of the earliest Portuguese colonists whose names have been perpetuated in the annals of history, three are especially noted for their influence upon the civilization of that time, their descendants being numbered among the first families of Brazil to-day. These were Duarte Peres, João Ramalho, and Diogo Alvares Corrêa. Peres was a nobleman, who had been transported to the island of Cananéa in 1501, and who afterward became a power in colonial affairs. Ramalho arrived in Brazil in 1512 (some say he was shipwrecked). He made his way to the Indian camp of the chief Teberyça, who gave him not only a kindly welcome, but also his daughter in marriage. Thus was founded the sturdy race of “Mamelucos,” the pioneer Paulistas, who were of such valuable assistance to Affonso de Souza in his efforts to colonize the province of São Paulo, and to establish the settlements of São Vicente and Piratininga. Corrêa was shipwrecked near Bahia in 1510, and is celebrated as “Caramurú.” His rescue and romantic marriage to the Indian maiden Paraguassú gave rise to the following story of a Brazilian Pocahontas.

From the mass of poetic fictions and romantic traditions that embellish the pages of Brazilian chronicles, the history of Paraguassú, the South American “Pocahontas,” stands forth in such picturesque effectiveness that one is unwilling to class it among pure legends, however reasonable may be the doubts as to the authenticity of its details.

Paraguassú was the daughter of a chief of the Tupinambá Indians, and the story affirms that it was through her influence that the Portuguese captain Diogo Alvares (called “Caramurú,”—man of fire), who was shipwrecked off the coast of Bahia in 1510, was saved from a horrible death at the hands of the Indians. Inspired with gratitude and affection for his Indian protectress, Diogo Alvares married her. Tradition has it that he took her to France, where King Henry II. and Queen Catherine de Medicis received her, and witnessed her baptism, the queen acting as godmother and giving the little Indian princess her own name, after which both the king and queen witnessed her marriage to Diogo. At all events, their union is a matter of history, and their descendants may be counted to-day among the most influential families of Bahia. Paraguassú lived to be nearly a hundred years of age, and at

her death, in 1583, her mortal remains were placed in the church of the monastery of Nossa Senhora da Graça, in the city of Bahia.

The tradition which explains the title "Caramurú," given to Diogo Alvares Corrêa by the Indians, varies according to different chroniclers, but the generally accepted version seems to be that Diogo Alvares Corrêa, in company with eight others, was shipwrecked off the coast of Bahia, on a voyage from Portugal to the Indies; that all his companions were killed and devoured by the savages, who had reserved Alvares for their last morsel; and that as they approached to seize him he fired a shot from a musket he had saved from the wrecked ship, which so terrified them that they fled in all directions, shouting "Caramurú!



RUSTIC BRIDGE IN THE GARDEN OF THE PRESIDENT'S PALACE, RIO DE JANEIRO.

Caramurú!" which means "man of fire." It is further related, that, through the favor of the chief's daughter, "Paraguassú" (whom he afterward married), Alvares succeeded in making friends with the Indians, and through his influence with them became one of the most powerful personages in Brazil during the early days of colonization; that he aided very materially in the settlement of the capitania of Bahia, where he established his family at the place afterward called "Villa Velha," maintaining a position of importance second only to that of the governor-general himself.

In the ancient registry of deaths in the cathedral of Bahia appeared the following note: "On the 5th day of October, 1557, died Diogo Alvares Corrêa Caramurú, of the hamlet of

Pereira; he was buried in the monastery of Jesus; leaving for his executor, João de Figueiredo, his son-in-law."

In 1539, Orellana made a voyage down the Amazon River from Peru, by order of Pizarro. He was eight months on the journey, and the thrilling stories of adventure which he related in an account of his experiences during that time outrival some of the boldest tales of ancient heroes. It was from his account of the warrior-women of the Amazon that the river received its name, though his story is not the only record of the existence of such a tribe. He related that there lived in the forests of the Amazon country a great and powerful tribe of woman-warriors who ruled over a large territory, and were invincible in battle. They were described as very tall, robust, fair, with long hair twisted over their heads, skins around their loins, and bows and arrows in their hands.

Regarding this story, it may be remarked, in passing, that it has been told in substance by nearly all the early explorers of that region. La Condamine, the great French scientist, on his return home after a voyage of exploration in the Amazon country, wrote a pamphlet on the subject, expressing his belief in the existence of these women. He located their head-quarters on the upper Rio Negro. Humboldt also seems to have believed in them, and tells in all seriousness the account given him by the Indians about a "community of women who made sarbacanas [blow-guns] and other weapons of war, and who once a year admitted to their society the men of the neighboring tribe, whom they sent back with presents of sarbacanas. All the male children of these women were killed in infancy." Another authority says regarding them: "They are women of great valor, who have always kept themselves from ordinary intercourse with men; and even when these, according to agreement, come every year to their land, they receive them armed with bows and arrows, which they brandish for a time till assured that the men come peaceably; then throwing down their weapons, they rush to the canoes, and each one lays hold of a hammock, carrying it to her house along with its owner, who is to be her guest for a few days—after which the men are sent back to their own country, returning every year at the same time. The female children resulting from this union are brought up by the Amazons, the males being given to their fathers the next year or else killed."

Southey gives the following record of Orellana's adventures with the Amazon women, and of a battle that took place in their territory: "Fray Gaspar affirmed that ten or twelve Amazon women fought at the head of these people, who were subject to their nation, and maintained the fight desperately, because any one who fled in battle would be beaten to death by these female tyrants." And then follows Orellana's description of these women, said to have been obtained by questioning the Indians: "They lived after the manner of the Amazons of the ancients, and possessed gold and silver in abundance. There were in their dominions five temples of the sun, all covered with plates of gold; their houses were of stone, and their cities walled." From which it would seem either that Orellana made a very "free translation" indeed of the Indians' language, or that the Indians played extravagantly upon Orellana's credulity.

Dr. Barbosa Rodrigues, Director of the Botanical Gardens at Rio, relates a story that is still told in the region of the Jamundá River: "Long ago, some women who had abandoned the men of their tribe came down the river Jamundá. The men, discontented, followed them, but numberless obstacles barred their way so that they could never overtake the women: sometimes the thorns formed dense thickets in the forests; again, ferocious animals protected the flight of the fugitives, howling monkeys pelted their pursuers, and *curupira* [spirit-voices] led them astray. At length, the women took pity on their husbands and lovers and received them,—but as vassals,—promising to admit them to their society once a year. Of the children born of these unions, only the females were to be retained by the



SALON IN THE PRESIDENT'S PALACE, RIO DE JANEIRO.

mothers, and only the fathers of female children were held worthy to be presented with the precious talisman, a jade, or 'sacred green stone of the Amazon,' which they called the *muirá-kitan*."

There is an interesting tradition about the jade, and the manner in which the Amazon women secured this sacred talisman. It is said that at a certain time of the year and a certain quarter of the moon they came to a lake near the Jamundá River to celebrate a festival dedicated to the moon, and to the "Mother of the Amazon Stone," who dwelt in this lake. After having purified themselves for some days by this festival, which was expiatory, they dived into the water late at night when the moon was reflected in the lake

and received from this "Mother of the Amazon Stone," in whatever shape they desired, the precious gem, which hardened as soon as it was exposed to the sunlight, so that it could not change.

In 1531, Martim Affonso de Souza, who was sent out by the Portuguese government, arrived with a fleet and four hundred colonists. He stopped first at Bahia, then in the harbor of Rio de Janeiro, and the following year he pursued his course as far south as La Plata, and founded the colonies of São Vicente and Piratininga, in the present State of São Paulo. He sent troops into the interior in search of gold, but they were driven back and killed by the Guarany Indians. Soon after establishing the settlement at São Vicente, he imported some sugar-cane from the Madeira Islands, which was cultivated in the new colony with great success. It was introduced into Pernambuco about the same time by Duarte Coelho.

From 1532 to 1535, the effort to settle the new country was facilitated by making a division of the territory into parallel strips from the coast inland, each strip extending along fifty leagues of coast, and of unlimited extent inland. These parallel divisions were called "capitanias," and were given, by King João III., as hereditary grants to such of his followers as were willing to undertake their settlement; the title to the capitanias giving full power of jurisdiction, both civil and criminal.

Martim Affonso de Souza was the founder of the first capitania, that of São Vicente. His brother, Pero Lopes de Souza, took his fifty leagues in two allotments,—one adjoining his brother's, and called São Amaro, and the other between Pernambuco and Parahyba. Vasco Fernandes Coutinho founded Espirito Santo; Pedro de Campo Tourinho, Porto Seguro, afterward merged into one of the other States; Francisco Pereira Coutinho founded the capitania extending from São Francisco to Bahia; and Dom Duarte Coelho Pereira was the founder of Pernambuco. Other capitanias were founded later, but when the central government was established, the capitanias were made tributary, though each maintained the office of "ouvidor" [magistrate], whose authority in the college of finance was second only to that of the governor.

The establishment of a central government was deemed necessary as a protective measure against the invasions that continually threatened the new colony. It was formed in 1549, and Thomé de Souza was appointed governor-general, with full powers, civil and criminal. São Salvador de Bahia, founded by him the same year, and raised to a bishopric two years later, was for some time the government capital and the official residence of the governor-general. Rapid progress was made during the four years of Souza's government. Sugar plantations were laid out in the vicinity of the capital, the city was substantially built up, and much good accomplished, both for the colonists and the natives. The Jesuits who went to Brazil with Souza devoted themselves to the moral and religious training of the Indians; the most distinguished for their labors in this field being Father Anchieta and Father Nobrega, known as the "apostles of Brazil." Although Father Anchieta began his work in Bahia, and Father Nobrega in São Vicente (near which he established the Jesuit

college of São Paulo, the nucleus of the present city of São Paulo and the capital of that State), the two priests united their efforts finally in behalf of the Indians of São Paulo and Minas Geraes. The first bishop of Brazil, Dom Pedro Fernandes Sardinha, arrived in Bahia January 1, 1552, and remained four years. On attempting to return to Lisbon, he was shipwrecked, and falling into the hands of cannibal Indians, he was destroyed by them. Tradition says that the scene of his martyrdom, which had, previous to this horrible crime, been fertile and green, was reduced to an arid and sterile place where nothing could be made to grow. Soon after the foundation of the colonies of Pernambuco and Bahia,



CATTETE PALACE, RESIDENCE OF THE PRESIDENT OF BRAZIL, RIO DE JANEIRO.

negro slaves were brought over to these settlements, and in 1583 the first contract for the importation of slaves was signed at Rio de Janeiro.

Meantime, Thomé de Souza had been succeeded as governor-general, in 1553, by Duarte da Costa, who remained in office until 1558, when Mem de Sá succeeded him, and governed for fourteen years. During his rule, the French made a determined effort to secure a foothold in Rio de Janeiro, under the leadership of Villegaignon, sent out by Admiral de Coligny to settle a colony of Huguenots in Brazil. They were defeated in this attempt by Mem de Sá, who took possession of their stronghold on the island of Villegaignon, and, reinforced by the colonists of São Paulo, São Vicente, Espirito Santo, and Bahia, expelled them from the country.

He then founded the city of Rio de Janeiro, the present capital of Brazil, in the year 1567. In 1572, Diogo Laurenço de Veiga became governor-general, and the colonies enjoyed a brief period of prosperity until the conquest of Portugal, by Philip II. of Spain, in 1580, and the union of the two crowns, made Brazil a Spanish possession. It was regarded, however, as inferior to Spain's other colonies in mineral wealth, and was consequently neglected; the result being that Brazilian shores were invaded and plundered by adventurers of all countries for half a century.

Even to this day there exist in Brazil evidences of early invasions, of which the most important in its influence upon the country is that of the Dutch, who came over first in 1624, but who, after a total defeat in their efforts to hold Bahia, then the capital of Brazil, retired the following year. They returned, however, in 1630, when they took possession of Olinda and Recife (Pernambuco). The Brazilians, under General Mathias de Albuquerque, at once began a determined fight against them that lasted for twenty-four years, during which time the Dutch added greatly to their possessions, though they were repeatedly checked by the Brazilians, who fought every inch of territory with unexampled bravery. Under the Dutch general Maurice de Nassau, the invaders succeeded in extending their dominions from Rio Real at the south to Maranhão at the north, their leader founding on the island of San Antonio the town of Mauritzstadt, which became a flourishing centre, and is to-day one of the quarters of Recife. Maurice is credited with having been progressive in his efforts to establish a successful Dutch colony in the new country, and is said to have drawn around him artists and savants, to have proclaimed freedom of belief, and to have obtained from the States-General liberty of commerce, limiting the West India Company's monopoly to the importation of slaves and war ammunition and the exportation of dyewoods. During this time, Holland sent some of her greatest sailors to these parts, among them Piet Heyn, who was defeated by the Brazilians in his efforts to seize Victoria, in the province of Espirito Santo.

When the Spanish union with Portugal was broken, in 1640, and the Duke of Braganza proclaimed king of Portugal under the title of Dom João IV., an armistice was signed between Holland and Portugal. It did not, however, prevent the Brazilians from persisting in their efforts to drive out the invaders, and, in 1642, the people of Maranhão rose in revolt, followed by the Pernambucans in 1645. During this war were fought the two famous battles of Guararapes, in 1648-1649, which were won by the Brazilians, who gained possession of the main strongholds of the enemy and forced their leader, General van Schoppe, to capitulate, all the fortresses still occupied by the Dutch being by the terms of capitulation turned over to the king of Portugal. Many Brazilian soldiers distinguished themselves in this war. The battles of Guararapes were won under the generalship of Barreto de Menezes; Fernandes Vieira gained an important victory at Tabocos, and Vidal de Negreiros at Casa Forte. Luiz Barbalho, the Indian Camarão, and the negro Henrique Dias were conspicuous for their heroism. Even the Brazilian woman had her share in the war. Dona Clara Camarão, wife of the brave chief, placed herself at the head of a company of heroic women, who

fought right nobly in defence of Pernambuco, and rendered good service to their country in driving back the enemy.

During the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, the Paulistas, who were the pioneers of Brazil in the centre and south of the empire, advanced far into the interior in search of gold, and to extend their conquest over the Indians, whom they then reduced to slavery on their plantations along the coast. In this way, they founded the provinces of Minas Geraes, Goyaz, Matto Grosso, Santa Catharina, and the northern part of Rio Grande do Sul. They drove out the Spanish Jesuits established in the east of Parana, and forced them to abandon their claims, and to take refuge with their confrères in the province of Tape (Rio Grande do Sul). Afterward the Jesuits were pursued even to this retreat, and made to evacuate their missions. Successful in these efforts, the victors then drove the Spaniards out of all the country east of the Uruguay, though the Jesuits afterward returned and established new missions. A long struggle followed between the Paulistas and the Jesuits, the latter claiming the right to protect the Indians from slavery, the former asserting that this right was used for purposes of profit by the Church. At São Paulo, the people seized all the Indians working in the Jesuit college, and, in 1640, expelled the Jesuits. Bulls from the pope and orders from the king condemning slavery were not executed.



SCENE IN THE GARDENS OF CATTETE PALACE, RIO DE JANEIRO.

Ten years later, the Jesuits were permitted to return to São Paulo under certain conditions. But the animosity against them was bitter, the people of Maranhão and Para expelled them from their territories, and other provinces showed a strong feeling against them, until, in 1759, the whole order was finally expelled from Brazil by the minister Pombal. About the same time, Pombal obtained the signature of King José I. to two laws which put an end to the slave-trade in Indians. The Paulistas made an effort to gain their independence about the middle of the seventeenth century, naming Amador Bueno their ruler; but when the hour arrived for the proclamation, Amador himself frustrated their purpose by shouting: "Long live King João IV., our rightful sovereign!"

According to information furnished by Father Anchieta, in 1585, there were at this time in the colonies of Brazil about 25,000 white persons,—250 at Itamará, 8000 at Pernambuco, 12,000 at Bahia, 1500 at Porto Seguro, 750 at Espirito Santo, 750 at Rio, 1500 at São Vicente;

and more than 13,000 negro slaves,—10,000 at Pernambuco, 3000 at Bahia, 100 at Rio; the civilized Indians were counted at 19,000, making the population in all about 57,000. Sergipe, in 1590, and Para, in 1615, were among the places founded about this period.

When Portugal separated from Spain, in 1640, Brazil was divided into two great governments, called States; to the north was the State of Maranhão, composed of Para and Maranhão, and to the south, the State of Brazil (with its capital at Bahia), taking in all the rest of the territory, and including the governments of Pernambuco, Bahia, and Rio de Janeiro. The State of Brazil was made a vice-royalty in 1640. During the seventeenth century, the emigration from Portugal was nearly all directed toward Bahia and Pernambuco, but gradually it turned southward, until the discovery of mines, in the eighteenth century, brought the whole tide of Portuguese emigration to Rio.

The first mint was established in Brazil in 1694. The king of Portugal sent over officials authorized to coin money good only for circulation in Brazil. As it was not deemed advisable to send large amounts of money any great distance on account of the imperfect facilities for transporting it in safety, the plan was adopted of removing the mint to each capital in turn until a sufficient supply had been coined for the whole country, after which the mint ceased to exist. The money was coined first at Bahia, then at Rio, and afterward at Pernambuco.

In 1762, Rio de Janeiro became the colonial capital in place of Bahia, and in 1775 the State of Maranhão was joined to that of Brazil. The country had already begun to be subdivided by the creation of new captaincies—São Paulo and Minas, together in 1709, were separated in 1720; Santa Catharina became a province in 1738; Goyaz and also Matto Grosso, in 1748; Rio Negro, in 1757; Para and Maranhão separated in 1775; Ceará, Espirito Santo, and Parahyba were created in 1799; Piahy, in 1811; Alagoas, in 1817; Sergipe, in 1821. The province of Amazonas was created, in 1850, from the old captaincy of Rio Negro, which had been a part of Para since 1823. The province of Parana was formed in 1853.

In 1680, the Colonia do Sacramento was founded by Dom Manoel Lobo, on the left bank of the river La Plata. It was the source of numerous quarrels with Spain, and, finally, by the treaty of Madrid, in 1750, it was ceded by Portugal to Spain in exchange for the territory of the Jesuit missions on the left bank of the Uruguay. This arrangement did not suit the Jesuits, who excited the Indians to resist it, and, as a result, war was begun in order to reduce them to subjection. It was at this time that Pombal ordered the expulsion of the Jesuits from Brazil. The treaty of Madrid was afterward broken, and the dispute over the possession of the colony began again, lasting for some years, during which several battles were fought with varying results. Finally, an agreement was made by which Spain kept the colony, giving up certain lands that had been seized by her during the war and renouncing claims to other territory within the disputed limits.

In 1789, a conspiracy for independence was discovered and crushed in Minas Geraes, the leaders being sent into exile, with the exception of one Silva Xavier, "Tiradentes," who was executed. The history of this conspiracy is interesting, showing the influence of the

French Revolution and the American war of independence upon some of the patriotic spirits of Brazil. A few years before, a number of Brazilian students at Coimbra had banded themselves together and taken a solemn pledge to devote their lives to the cause of Brazilian liberty. One of their number, José Joaquim da Maia, addressed Thomas Jefferson, then American Minister to Paris, on this subject, both personally and by letter, asking the support of the United States in the cause of Brazilian independence. An enthusiastic member of the little company, Dr. José Alves Maciel, returned to Brazil just at the time when the people of his native province, Minas Geraes, were discontented and alarmed by measures which the government was taking to enforce the collection of taxes. These the people



NATIONAL MUSEUM, SÃO CHRISTOVÃO, RIO DE JANEIRO.

were unable to pay on account of the falling off in the yield of the mines and the consequent scarcity of money. Maciel took advantage of the situation to advance his theories regarding the necessity for the political regeneration of Brazil, having met in "Tiradentes" a kindred spirit aflame with ideas of independence. The real leader of the plot, in which Maciel immediately joined on his arrival at Minas, was his brother-in-law, Francisco de Paula Freire de Andrada, though it is said to have originated at the house of Thomaz Antonio Gonzaga, the poet; hence it has been referred to as "a dream of students, and a conspiracy of poets."

Chiefly, it is said, through the influence of Freire de Andrada, who was connected with two of the noblest families of Portugal, in high favor at court, the conspirators were saved.

from the gallows—all except the poor scapegoat, “Tiradentes,” who was beheaded and quartered. As a final indignity, his head was exposed in the public square of Ouro Preto, his house burned to the ground, and his family disgraced to the third generation. He was only a secondary character in the forming of the plot, but he won immortal fame by his sufferings and death; and the name of “Tiradentes” is to-day inscribed in the annals of Brazilian history as belonging to one of her greatest heroes,—the first republican who shed his blood in the cause of Brazilian independence. A fitting monument to his memory now marks the spot of his martyrdom, bearing on its pedestal his motto: “*Libertas quæ sera tamen*,” and the dates 1789–1889, the year of the conspiracy and the year of the establishment of the present republic of Brazil. Just a century later!

When Napoleon’s army descended upon Portugal, in 1807, the prince regent, Dom João, who ruled in the name of his mother, Queen Maria I., of Portugal, realizing the impossibility of offering successful resistance to the invading force, sought refuge, with all the royal family, in Brazil, and arrived at Rio de Janeiro March 8, 1808. On two previous occasions, when disaster threatened, it had been suggested that the seat of the Portuguese government should be transferred to Brazil,—in 1736, by Dom Luiz da Cunha, and in 1761, by the Marquis de Pombal; but the danger having passed before arrangements were completed, the change had been postponed. It came at an opportune moment for Brazil, struggling under the oppression of colonial misrule.

Soon after his arrival, Dom João opened Brazilian ports to foreign commerce; encouraged the free development of every kind of industry by all classes of Brazilians (under the colonial system permission was grudgingly given to manufacture a few articles of coarse quality, for slaves, from the cotton which grew in the country); established the printing-press, which had been inhibited in Brazil up to this time because of its supposed dangerous effects; built a gunpowder factory; established a royal treasury and a council of finance to regulate the receipts and expenditures of the national income; created a national bank; instituted a school of anatomy, surgery, and medicine, annexed to the Royal Military Hospital; and founded a chemical laboratory, and a quarantine lazaretto for contagious diseases brought from foreign ports. About this time, vaccination was introduced by the Marquis de Barbacena, who made the first experiment on his own son (now Visconde de Barbacena, of Rio de Janeiro, almost a centenarian in years, but in appearance and general activity still holding his own on the sunny uplands of life, among men of half his years). In 1814, the first national library was opened to the public, a new treasury and mint were completed, a new custom-house was erected, and the city of Rio was built up, and beautified by parks and gardens. The following year, the royal decree was issued, naming the new seat of government the “Kingdom of Brazil,” forming, with the other possessions, the “United Kingdoms of Portugal, Algarves, and Brazil.” Just at this time, Queen Maria I. died, and, after a year’s mourning, the acclamation of Dom João’s succession took place; the royal arms were adopted as suitable to designate the new kingdom, and by royal decree added to those of Portugal and Algarves, consisting of an armillary sphere of gold in a field azure, with an escutcheon



ENTRANCE TO THE HARBOR OF RIO.

containing the Quinas of Portugal and the seven castles of Algarves placed on the sphere, surmounted by the royal crown.

The acclamation ceremony took place on the 5th of February, 1818. The mode of enthroning monarchs by acclamation was among the most ancient usages of the Portuguese people, dating as far back as the early part of the twelfth century, when the first Affonso was acclaimed king by his soldiers after his victory over the Moors. The ceremony, in earlier times, consisted in the king standing on a shield which was then lifted above the heads of his soldiers, who proclaimed him their king; but later the shield was dispensed with, and at the coronation of Dom João VI. the ceremony was chiefly religious, the acclamation being made in a loud voice as the royal standard was unfurled after the celebration of Mass in the chapel royal: "Royal, royal, royal, by the very high and very powerful Senhor, King Dom João VI., our sovereign!" The acclamation was accompanied by the pealing of bells, the music of military bands, explosions of artillery, fire-works, and deafening *vivas!*

Almost during the whole period of Dom João's residence in Brazil, his armies were engaged in war in the Banda Oriental. Finally, a succession of victories for his troops resulted in the demoralization of the Uruguayan forces and the flight of their leader into Paraguay. The Banda Oriental was then united by federation with the kingdom of Brazil, under the name of the "Cisplatine Province," in 1821.

Meantime, there was trouble brewing in the mother-country. The commerce of Portugal was suffering in consequence of the opening of Brazilian ports, and there was considerable jealousy felt toward this young "upstart colony" which, since it had been raised to the dignity of a kingdom and had become the residence of the royal family, threatened to take away the laurels of the parent kingdom. Consequently, after the close of Napoleon's wars, when Spain and Italy had set the example by demanding the organization of constitutional governments, the Portuguese followed in their lead and insisted on the convocation of the Cortes for the purpose of forming a constitutional charter. One of the first acts of this body was to publish a manifesto in which all the evils existing in the form of reduced revenues and a general retrograde movement in Portuguese affairs were traced to the residence of the royal family and court at Rio de Janeiro instead of at Lisbon, and the opening of the ports of Brazil to the vessels of all nations, which threatened the extinction of the manufactures and commerce of Portugal.

The sympathies of the European residents and the military in Brazil were with the Cortes; and King João was induced through their influence to sign a decree stating that he would return to Portugal and leave the kingdom of Brazil in charge of his son, Dom Pedro, as regent, until the general constitution of the Portuguese nation should be established. But the Brazilians were not inclined to submit tamely to arrangements made by the Portuguese, conflicting with the interests of their own country; they opposed the departure of the king, and having good reason to fear that the new constitution to be framed by the Cortes would be constructed in such a manner as to favor Portugal at the expense of Brazil, they decided that the Spanish constitution should be the one adopted, and sent a deputation to the king,

requiring its immediate acceptance. King João gave his royal assent to their demands, just as he had previously done to the requirements of his Portuguese followers and the army. He was anxious to conciliate all parties, having constantly in mind the unhappy fate of Louis XVI., and trembling at every demonstration of popular feeling that was of a spontaneous character. It is said he fainted in his carriage when an enthusiastic mob of his loyal subjects took out the horses on one occasion and drew the royal equipage themselves. The day after he had received the Brazilian deputation, the king issued a decree annulling all that had been enacted the previous evening; conferred the dignity and attributes of regent on Dom Pedro, and formed a new ministry, in which the Count of Arcos, chief adviser and confidant of Dom Pedro, whose influence is said to have had a strong effect in inflaming the ambition of that young prince, was made Minister of Foreign Affairs, and the Interior and Justice. Two days afterward, King João embarked for Portugal, accompanied by a large suite.

It is related that in the final interview with his son at the palace of São Christovão, the king, who looked upon the independence of Brazil as already assured, thus counselled the young prince: "Pedro, if such an event should occur, put the crown on thine own head before some adventurer lays hold of it." And in one of a published collection of his letters, written during the war of independence, Dom Pedro reminds his father of this advice, and even recalls the place and the room where their conversation on this subject was held. Dom Pedro acted upon his father's advice; but when he put on the crown of Brazil, it meant a new régime, which limited the power of the monarch and gave larger liberties to the people.



FORT OF SANTA CRUZ, ENTRANCE TO THE HARBOR OF RIO.



YPIRANGA, MONUMENT ON THE SITE OF THE PROCLAMATION OF BRAZILIAN INDEPENDENCE, SÃO PAULO.

CHAPTER II

NATIONAL INDEPENDENCE



WHEN Dom Pedro became regent, he was twenty-two years of age; he had married, in 1818, the Archduchess Dona Maria Leopoldina of Austria (sister of Napoleon's wife, Marie Louise), and was the father of two children,—Dom João Carlos, Prince de Beira, who died in childhood, and Princess Dona Maria de Gloria, afterward Queen Maria II. of Portugal. His biographers have described Dom Pedro as an active, energetic prince, fond of the chase, exceptionally skilled in driving a four-in-hand, having a taste for mechanics, and passionately devoted to music. Some of his compositions are regarded as possessing decided merit.

From the first establishment of the regency, the Portuguese element in the new country seems to have been in constant opposition to all liberal efforts in behalf of Brazil, on the part of the government. It insisted on the dismissal of the Count of Arcos from the ministry, the placing of the army under the authority of a military commission, and the appointment of a junta responsible to the Cortes of Lisbon, without whose approbation no law should be promulgated or any important business decided upon. Dom Pedro acceded to all these demands; but when, in addition, the Cortes of Lisbon passed a law that all the provinces should be detached from the central government at Rio, and made subject directly to the administration of Portugal, he became incensed by the efforts made to nullify his power and reduce Brazil again to the condition of a mere colony. Added to this was the trying dilemma in which he found himself in consequence of the financial embarrassment of the treasury. Notwithstanding its advantages, the establishment of the Portuguese court in Rio had not been an unmixed blessing. A host of impecunious followers had come over with the royal family, caring nothing for the progress of Brazil, regarding their stay as merely temporary, and desirous of enriching themselves at the expense of the Brazilian treasury. The extravagance of the court was enormous, and the household of the royal family alone is said to have cost the country annually over half a million pounds sterling. Besides this, the king made many gifts to his followers, which had a depleting effect on the treasury.

Then, when his Majesty returned to Portugal, accompanied by his entire suite, numbering about three thousand, they exchanged all the paper money in their possession for bullion, so that the Bank of Brazil was reduced to embarrassing straits, the government debt to the bank at that time amounting to considerably more than the actual capital of the institution. This financial stress was keenly felt by the regent, who wrote to his father: "There are no longer any funds, and I do not know how to obtain them."

The people of Brazil had no reason to feel particularly friendly toward their Portuguese cousins, in view of the arbitrary attitude which the latter assumed toward them; and when two despotic decrees, sent from Portugal by the Cortes, were received at Rio,—one of them commanding the organization of a provisional government which should reduce the country again to the condition of a province, and the other ordering the immediate return of the prince regent, Dom Pedro, to Portugal,—the spirit of rebellion blazed up in one consuming outburst; the newspapers were filled with revolutionary editorials and letters; and the people of São Paulo and Minas Geraes spoke in united voice against what was termed "an illegal, impious, and impolitic measure." An address drawn up in the name of these two States by Dom José Bonifacio de Andrada, containing the following indignant protest, best shows the state of feeling that prevailed: "How dare those deputies of Portugal, without deigning to wait for the concurrence of those of Brazil, legislate on a matter which involves the most sacred interests of the entire kingdom? How dare they deprive Brazil of her privy council, her court of conscience, her exchequer, her board of commerce, her court of requests, and so many other institutions just established among us, and which promised us such future benefits? Where now must the people apply in their civil and judicial concerns? Must they once more, after enjoying for twelve years the advantages of speedy justice, seek it in a foreign land, across two thousand leagues of ocean, amid the procrastinations and corruptions of Lisbon tribunals, where the oppressed suitor is abandoned by hope and life?" This address concluded with an appeal to the prince to remain in Brazil, and not suffer himself to be "led about like a school-boy surrounded by masters and spies." The prince regent's reply was prompt and decided: "As it appears to be the general wish and for the general good, I will remain."

A new ministry was formed January 16, 1822, with Dom José Bonifacio de Andrada as Home Secretary and Minister for Foreign Affairs, his brother, Martim Francisco de Andrada, also becoming a member of the cabinet a few months later. It was the original intention to preserve the union with Portugal, but to have a parliament at Rio. Deputies were sent to the Cortes to urge the adoption of this measure, and to voice the general sentiment against the demands of the latter, as contained in the decrees sent over to Brazil.

The young prince seems, at least, to have been possessed of energy, and decision of character, judging from his prompt methods of dealing with affairs at this time. On the 16th of February, he issued a decree calling the chief legislators of the provinces of Brazil to assemble in Rio de Janeiro. On the 25th of the same month, he issued another, declaring that no law promulgated by the parliament at Lisbon should be obeyed in Brazil without his sanction. When it was announced that there was opposition to his authority over Minas

Geraes, he immediately went to that province, visited all the villages and towns, won the loyalty of the whole people, and returned followed by acclamations. When public notices appeared of hostile measures taken by the government of Portugal against Brazil, Dom Pedro accepted the title "Perpetual Defender of Brazil," which, in the name of the people, was offered him, on the 13th of May, by the senate of the municipal chamber.

Dom Pedro did not, at first, show any intention of seeking to establish an independent empire in Brazil. He declared only against the infringement of his rights as regent of the kingdom. In a proclamation issued August 17, 1822, he announces:

"The dignity and power of regent of this vast empire, that the king, my august father, had granted to me, having been confirmed to me by the unanimous consent and spontaneous will of the people of Brazil, a dignity of which the Cortes of Lisbon, without any of the deputies of Brazil being heard, has dared to deprive me, as is notorious; and I, moreover, having accepted the title and duties of perpetual defender of this kingdom that the same people have so generously and so loyally conferred upon me; in obedience, therefore, to my sacred duties, and in gratitude for so much love and fidelity, which call upon me to take all the measures indispensable to the salvation of this greatest portion of the Portuguese monarchy, that has been confided to me, and whose rights I have sworn to preserve uninjured by any attack; and inasmuch as the Cortes of Lisbon continues in the same erroneous and evidently unjust system of recolonizing Brazil even by force of arms, notwithstanding that she has already proclaimed her political independence and has gone so far that there is already convened, by my royal decree of the 3d of June last past, a general, constitutional, and legislative assembly, at the request of all the chambers, thus proceeding with a formality that did not take place in Portugal, where the convening of the Congress was originally only an act of secret and factious clubs; and I also considering his Majesty the king, Dom João VI., of whose name and authority the Cortes endeavors to avail itself for its own sinister purposes, as a prisoner in that kingdom, without any will of his own, and without that liberty of action that is given to the executive power in constitutional monarchies,—I command, having first heard my council of State, all the provisional juntas of government, generals, military commandants, and all the constituted authorities to whom the execution of this decree may appertain, as follows:

"I. That all and whatever troops that shall be sent from Portugal or elsewhere to Brazil without my previous consent, upon whatever pretext, be reputed enemies; but without interruption to the commercial and friendly relations between both kingdoms, for the preservation of the political union that I greatly desire to maintain.

"II. That if they arrive peaceably, they shall immediately return, furnished with provisions and supplies necessary for their voyage back.

"III. That, in case said troops shall not obey these orders, and shall dare to land, they be driven back by force of arms, putting into execution, if necessary, all means to burn the vessels and sink the boats in which the troops may attempt to land.

“IV. That if, notwithstanding all these efforts, it shall happen that the troops get possession of any port or part of Brazil, the inhabitants shall retire to the interior and carry on against them a war of posts and guerrillas until freed from the enemy.

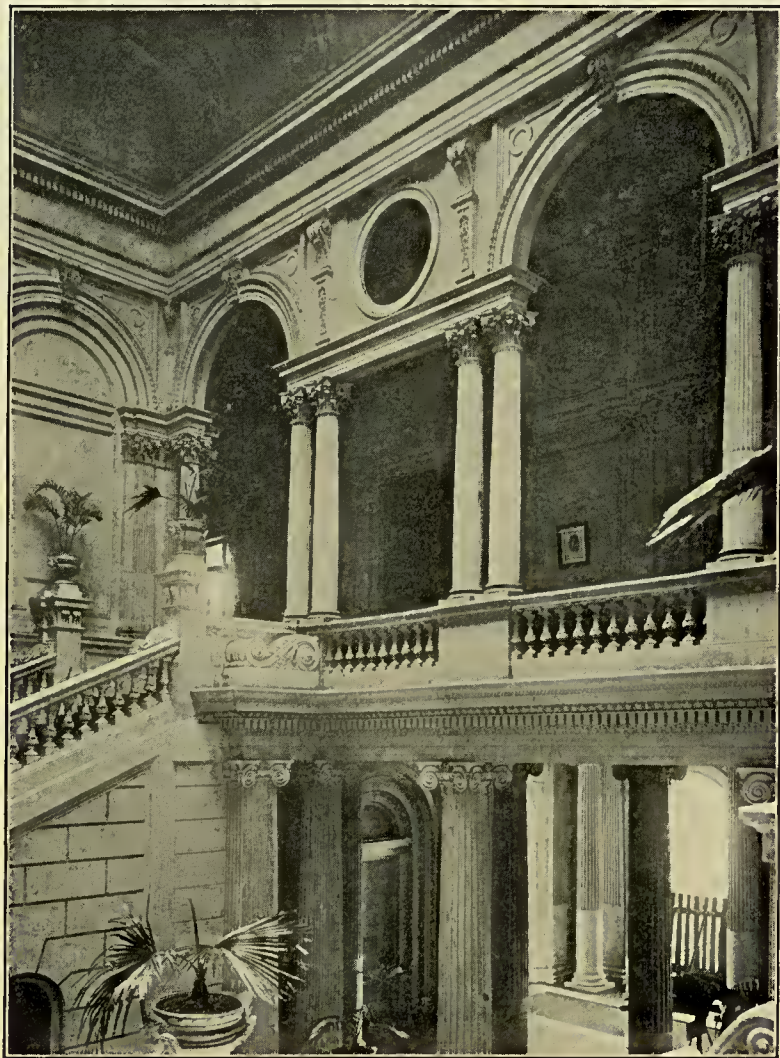
“V. That it shall be the duty of all the competent military and civil authorities to fortify all the ports of Brazil, under strict and severe responsibility.

“VI. The civil and military authorities to whom appertain the execution of this, my royal decree, are to fulfil it, and cause it to be fulfilled, with all due zeal, energy, and promptitude,

under the responsibility of being guilty of high treason if they shall fail to do so.

“Palace of Rio de Janeiro, the 17th of August, one thousand eight hundred and twenty-two. By his Royal Highness the Prince Regent,” etc.

In a manifesto signed “Prince Regent,” Dom Pedro calls upon the Brazilians to unite themselves “with interest, love, and hope,” —to “command the august Assembly of Brazil to manage the helm of State with justice and prudence.” He urges: “Let no other shout be issued from your lips but ‘union;’ let no other word be reiterated from the Amazon to the La Plata but ‘independence.’ Let all our provinces be strongly chained in unanimity not to be broken by any force. Let old prejudices be banished, substituting in their place the love of the public good.” His closing words are



INTERIOR OF YPIRANGA.

full of enthusiastic patriotism: “Brazilians! friends! let us unite ourselves; I am your companion, I am your defender; let us obtain, as the only reward of all our toils, the honor, glory, and prosperity of Brazil; for the accomplishment of which I shall always be at your front in the most dangerous places! Permit me to convince you that your felicity depends on mine. It is my glory to rule an upright, valiant, and free people. Give

me the example of your virtues and of your union, and be assured that I shall be worthy of you." This manifesto gave zest to the popular sentiment.

It soon became evident that it would be impossible for Brazil to continue united with Portugal under existing conditions; and the crisis was precipitated, first, by the antagonistic and even insulting attitude maintained in the Cortes toward the Brazilian deputies, who were silenced ignominiously when they attempted to speak in behalf of their country's cause; and, secondly, by the passage of a decree ignoring all Brazilian claims, and peremptorily ordering the prince regent to Europe. The effect of this news upon the prince is well known, as recorded in the dramatic story of "Ypiranga," the name of a little stream in the province of São Paulo, made famous in history as the birthplace of Brazilian independence. It was here that the prince, as he and his friends were returning from a hunting-party, received the dispatches containing news of the last act of the Cortes. Upon reading them, the prince called his followers to his side, and, with the watchword, "Independencia ou Morte!" declared that he would never leave Brazil, but would be her protector and defender against the wrongs that Portugal sought to heap upon her. This was on September 7, 1822, and on October 12, 1822, Dom Pedro was proclaimed Constitutional Emperor of Brazil, the ceremony of his inauguration taking place on the 1st of the following December. The magnificent museum of Ypiranga, which to-day marks the site of this famous occurrence in Brazilian history, is a fitting monument in honor of the great event. Upon his return to Rio a few days after the scene at Ypiranga, the prince appeared at the theatre, wearing on his arm a green badge, with the motto, in letters of gold, "Independencia ou Morte." The people, as he entered, arose in a perfect delirium of enthusiasm and greeted him with tumultuous applause.

The coronation ceremony took place in the chapel attached to the palace, and was a brilliant affair. In the evening, the new emperor attended the grand opera, and his appearance was the signal for prolonged cheers and shouts of "Viva o Imperador!" The empire was established with comparatively little opposition. The Portuguese troops were soon dismissed from Rio; in July of the following year, they evacuated Bahia, and later in the same year capitulated at Maranhão, at Para, and at Montevideo. Before the end of 1825, Portugal gave up the fight, and recognized the independence of Brazil, but succeeded in saddling on the new empire, as the price of her freedom, debts amounting to nearly ten millions of dollars. On the 2d of December, 1825, the prince Dom Pedro, afterward Emperor Dom Pedro II., was born, at Rio de Janeiro.

The following account of a Brazilian woman's heroism makes an interesting addition to the history of this period. Dona Maria Quitéria de Jesus Medeiros, a Bahian girl, hearing her father lament that he had no son to fight in the cause of Brazilian independence, disguised herself as a soldier and enlisted in the artillery. This proving too hard a service, she succeeded in changing to the light infantry called the "Volunteers of the Prince," and served until the end of the war. She led a troop of Bahian Amazons against the Lusitanians who were attempting to land near the mouth of the Paraguassú, and drove them back, for which



CORRIDOR IN YPIRANGA.

heroic service she was knighted by Dom Pedro I., and decorated with the "Imperial order of the Cruzeiro."

In 1824, the northern provinces, led by Pernambuco, revolted against the imperial government, and disclaimed its authority, which they asserted was being maintained in the interests of Portugal rather than Brazil, and they declared their independence under an alliance entitled the "Federation of the Equator." Their chief leader was Manoel Carvalho Paes de Andrada, the elected president of the province of Pernambuco, whom the central government had attempted to replace by one of the emperor's favorites, but without success, the inhabitants of Pernambuco refusing to acknowledge any authority except that of their elected president. Carvalho led the revolutionists against the im-

perial forces with skill and bravery, engaging General Barreto's army by land while a small naval force blockaded them by sea. Lord Cochrane was sent to co-operate with Barreto's troops and to blockade the city of Pernambuco, and troops under General Lima were dispatched to reinforce those of Barreto. By their united efforts, the imperial forces finally succeeded in entering Pernambuco, and driving Carvalho back to the parish of Recife, where, having burned the bridge connecting it with the city, he and his followers entrenched themselves and opened fire on the imperialists. They were, however, defeated at last, and three of their number executed,—Ratcliff, Metrowich, and Loureiro; Carvalho escaped.

The next year, 1825, the unpopular war in the Cisplatine province began, lasting three years and resulting in the independence of Uruguay. It created an important addition to the national debt of Brazil, which was already too burdensome to be borne by the people without many evidences of discontent and dissatisfaction. In 1826, by the death of King Dom João VI., Dom Pedro succeeded to the throne of Portugal, and immediately abdicated in

favor of his daughter, Dona Maria. The Marquis de Barbacena was appointed to accompany the young princess, who had been created Duchess of Oporto, to Europe, where she was to be received at Genoa by her aunt, the ex-Empress of France, Marie Louise, and Count Leibzeltern, and taken to Vienna. Information obtained at Gibraltar, however, led to a change of these plans, and the princess was taken to England, returning soon afterward to Brazil. A scheme for her marriage to her uncle, Dom Miguel, with a view to uniting the rival claims to the Portuguese throne, was not carried out, and Dom Miguel seized the crown, though he was afterward forced to surrender it to Dona Maria, who became Queen Maria II. a few years later.

The death of the Empress of Brazil, on the 11th of December, 1826, under peculiarly sad circumstances, was the subject of much court gossip and of a very severe criticism of Dom Pedro, who was popularly accused of having treated her most unkindly. His open infatuation for her lady-in-waiting, upon whom he bestowed the title of Marchioness of Santos and a magnificent residence close to the royal palace, as well as his acknowledging her daughter as his child, to whom he gave the title of Duchess of Goyaz, were humiliating trials to the proud daughter of the Hapsburgs; but a final indignity, which gossips and biographers have only hinted at, and which is said to have occurred on the day of the emperor's leaving for the southern provinces, was, by common report at the time, held to be the cause of the violent illness which attacked the empress suddenly, and, owing to her delicate condition, proved fatal. When Dom Pedro received the news of his empress's death, he wept copiously and paid a very beautiful tribute to her many virtues. If gossip is to be relied upon, he did not, however, refrain from punishing the daring minister who placed himself before the door of the dying empress's apartments and refused admission to



RUA DO OUVIDOR, RIO DE JANEIRO.

the Marchioness of Santos when she demanded an entrance. There are those who extenuate the conjugal shortcomings of the emperor, and blame the empress for having lost her husband's affection by a careless disregard of all those delicate feminine graces and charms in which the heart of man ever delights. They say that soon after her marriage she became negligent in dress, went about in coarse boots and ill-fitting clothes, and rode on horseback astride. She had never been beautiful, and her looks did not improve with passing years. On the other hand, she was an affectionate mother, and a wife of blameless virtue.

The popularity which the emperor enjoyed when he ascended the throne was short-lived. From the first, his actions seem to have been open to the adverse criticism of the Liberal party, who strongly opposed his tendency to be guided by Portuguese influences, and his high-handed methods of governing. Among his first unpopular acts were the dismissal of the ministry of the Andradas, who had been the most staunch promoters and supporters of the independent movement; his appointment of the Paranagua ministry a few months later, composed of the extreme Conservative element; and his dissolution of parliament the day after this appointment, when six deputies were made prisoners and banished to Europe, among them the Andrada brothers. The ministry of São Leopoldo succeeded that of the Marquis of Paranagua, and was similar in character. The continual change of ministries which marked the entire course of Dom Pedro's reign is held responsible for a large share of the popular dissatisfaction, and the charge made against him by the Liberals, that he was trying to establish an absolute monarchy. On the 20th of November, 1827, the ministry of the Marquis de Olinda took office, but difficulties growing out of the emperor's dismissal of the Minister of War led to the resignation of its members, and a new cabinet was formed under Clemente Pereira. This, like its successor, the second ministry of the Marquis of Paranagua, encountered lively opposition in the Chamber of Deputies and in the press. Federalist and Republican journals sprang up in increasing numbers and influence at this time, and played an important part in politics.

On the 19th of March, 1831, Dom Pedro appointed a Liberal ministry; but this apparent effort to conciliate the opposing party failed. When this ministry was soon afterward dismissed, and a cabinet composed exclusively of senators named to take its place, a popular uprising resulted, and the return of the dismissed ministry was demanded. Dom Pedro refused to listen to the demand, and realizing the strength of the opposition which threatened his government, and perhaps anxious to go to Portugal, where his daughter's right to the throne needed protection against the usurping Dom Miguel, he abdicated on the 7th of April, 1831, in favor of his son, afterward Dom Pedro II. In his farewell proclamation, he said; "I shall retire to Europe, and leave a country that I have always loved and still love." Dom Pedro I. died in 1834, having enjoyed the satisfaction of seeing his son received as emperor of Brazil, and his daughter enthroned as queen of Portugal.

As early in her history as 1821, Brazil had among her political leaders a champion of "woman's rights" in the deputy sent from Bahia to the Cortes at Lisbon, Dom Domingos Borges de Barros, Visconde de Pedra Branca, a Liberal in political principles, who took this

occasion to advocate political liberty for women in Portugal. He met with little encouragement. He was a man of talent, and a poet as well as a politician, being the author of a graceful tribute in verse: "To the Brazilian Ladies." He assisted in the arrangements for the second marriage of the Emperor Dom Pedro I., and was a distinguished member of several European scientific societies.

The little prince Dom Pedro was only five years of age when he succeeded his father to the throne of Brazil as the Emperor Dom Pedro II. During his minority, the country was governed at first by a regency, composed of three members elected by the legislative chambers, and afterward by a single regent chosen by all the electors in the same manner as the



RIO DOCKS BY MOONLIGHT.

deputies. At this time, the councils of the provinces were replaced by legislative provincial assemblies. In 1835, Father Diogo Antonio Feijó, of São Paulo, was chosen regent. He had previously held the office of Prime Minister, and is described as "a man of iron will, prompt action, and unhesitating decision." During his ministry, there were innumerable disturbances throughout the country, the result of unsettled conditions following the abdication of Dom Pedro I. Many parties and cliques were organized, and there was an imperative demand for various rights and reforms. There were the "Restoradores," who wanted Dom Pedro I. back again; the "Moderate Liberals," of which Vasconcellos and Evaristo da Veiga were the powerful chiefs; the "Liberal Exaltado," composed largely of men holding republican principles; the "Separatists;" the "Society of the Defenders of Liberty and

National Independence," and others. Civil war caused bloodshed in Pernambuco, Para, Bahia, Maranhão, and more especially in Rio Grande do Sul, where it lasted ten years.

After two years as regent, Feijó resigned, and the Marquis de Olinda succeeded him. His rule failing to satisfy all parties, it was demanded that the young emperor should be given his majority, and, in 1840, in the fifteenth year of his age, this event took place, his accession being hailed with general rejoicing. Two political parties were rivals for the ruling power all through the reign of Dom Pedro II., the Conservatives and the Liberals. At the time of the emperor's accession, the Liberals held sway, but they were soon displaced by the Conservatives, the two parties afterward superseding each other in the political leadership at varying intervals of from four to eight years, though the Liberals gained ground constantly, and at one time there was a union of the two parties under their banner. This did not last long, however, but it was one of the "signs of the times." The Liberal party became more thoroughly imbued with republican ideas and principles, and the Conservatives recognized the necessity of modifying their policy to meet the demands of the hour. There were many changes in both parties, some former Conservatives allying themselves with the Liberals, and a few who had been prominent in the Liberal party going over to the Conservatives. It was the "leavening process" in the political progress of affairs.

The civil war in Rio Grande do Sul, which had lasted ten years, was terminated by General de Caxias, on March 1, 1845, and peace hovered over the banner of Brazil until some six years later, when the government lent the assistance of her squadron and army to Uruguay in a fight against the Argentine dictator Rosas. Through an alliance negotiated by the Brazilian Minister for Foreign Affairs, Paula de Souza, the independence of Uruguay was again established, freedom of navigation being declared at the same time in the tributaries of the river Plata. In 1864, however, a dispute arose, and Brazil declared war against Uruguay. Under the commands of Generals Barreto and Flores and Admiral Tamandaré, her military and naval forces attacked Montevideo, and took Paysandu.

One of the most terrible wars in history was that waged against the Paraguayan dictator, Lopez, by the allied forces of Brazil, the Argentine, and Uruguay. It began in 1865, and lasted until 1870, when scarcely a man was left of the whole Paraguayan population. The country was reduced to a deplorable condition, from which it is just now beginning to recover, after more than a quarter of a century. It has been called a war of national vindication. Lopez had invaded the territory of all three of the countries forming the alliance, and in sheer revenge (it is said because the emperor had refused him the hand of his daughter in marriage) he attacked a Brazilian vessel on its way up the river to Matto Grosso in November, 1864. The Triple Alliance determined to crush the lawless bandit, and on May 1, 1865, began a long and terrible war, of which Brazil supported the bulk of the burden. General Mitre, at that time President of the Argentine Republic, had command of the allied armies during the first years of the war. On the 7th of January, 1865, the Brazilian Prime Minister, Francisco José Furtado, issued the decree which called out the "Voluntarios da Patria," and the splendid battalions that responded to his call paid a tribute to the wisdom of the

distinguished statesman at once gratifying and deserved. The magnificent service of these troops in the field was a convincing proof of Brazilian bravery and patriotism. At the same time, the navy was reconstructed, and orders were given for the immediate building of the first Brazilian iron-clads in the naval arsenal of the capital. The Brazilians started out with the naval victory of Riachuelo, gained by Admiral Barroso over the Paraguayan squadron, which threatened at first to destroy that of Brazil by the superiority of its naval force, aided by batteries suddenly unmasked on the high bank of the river. The scene on board the Brazilian ship *Parnahyba* was one of fearful carnage, the quarter-deck being drenched with blood when the enemy boarded her from their four vessels, overwhelming her brave defenders. But the onslaught was as temporary as it had been sudden, and the power of the Paraguayan fleet was effectually crushed by the Brazilians.

A Paraguayan division which advanced on the right bank of the Uruguay was destroyed at Yatay by the allies under the command of General Flores, President of the Republic Oriental. Another branch of the army, which had penetrated into the Brazilian province of Rio Grande do Sul, was besieged at Uruguayana and forced to lay down arms. The Emperor Dom Pedro II. then took command of the allies, and it was in this encampment that he received the minister Thornton, sent by England to arrange a renewal of diplomatic relations with Brazil which were broken in 1863. Lopez abandoned his position, and retired to meet his enemies on Paraguayan territory, behind the line of the Paraná. In 1866, the allies succeeded in crossing this river and seizing the first outposts after three battles: Confluencia, in which the Brazilian general Osorio had command; Desterro Bellaco, led by Generals Flores and Osorio; and Tujuty, where Generals Mitre, Osorio, and Flores united their forces. They were obliged, however, to remain inactive, waiting for reinforcements, before the entrenchments of the enemy. At the same time, in the month of July, the allies attempted an attack on the coast of Sauce, but without success. When the first reinforcements arrived, the Brazilian general Porto Alegre took possession of Curuzú; but some days after, the same general and President Mitre failed in the assault of Curupaity. The Brazilian captain, Vital de Oliveira, commanding the iron-clad *Silvado*, was killed in this engagement.

The next year, Brazil concentrated the command of her armies, by land and sea, under Marshal de Caxias, and nearly all the Argentine army retired to repress revolts and resistances among their provincial governors. After several months of forced inaction, owing to the ravages of cholera, and after the departure of General Mitre for Buenos Aires, Marshal de Caxias began operations against the fortifications of Humayta. The Brazilian cuirassiers, under Admiral Inhaúma, forced the passage of Curupaity in 1867, and that of Humayta in the following year, under Commodore Delphim de Carvalho. At the same time, Marshal de Caxias seized all the defences raised on this side of the river, also those of Tebicuary, and proceeded northward to attack the lines of Angostura and Pikysyry, which covered the road to the capital. He gained the victories of Itôróró, Avay, and Lomas Valentinas, in the month of December, 1868, which gave to the allies possession of all the west part of the country. But Lopez had escaped to the interior, where he succeeded in organizing a new army.

The last campaign of the war was conducted by the Condé d'Eu, in 1869 and 1870, when the Brazilians took by assault the town of Piribebuy, crushed the greater part of the army of Lopez at the battle of Campo Grande, and pursued the vanquished in all directions, to the depths of the deserts and the forests of eastern and northern Paraguay. After several minor engagements, General Camara surprised the Lopez encampment at Cerro Corá, on a branch of the Aquidaban, March 1, 1870. The dictator, who had only a thousand men in his following, was killed while attempting to escape, and the war was brought to an end. The treaty of 1872 fixed the frontiers.



OLD CARIOCA AQUEDUCT, RIO DE JANEIRO.

Perhaps the youngest hero of the Paraguayan war was Antonio Joaquim Rodrigues Torres, scarcely seventeen years of age, a cadet of the third company of the first battalion of foot-artillery. He fought with great bravery, saving the lives of two of his officers, though he himself fell under the enemy's bayonets, shouting with his last breath: "Long live the Brazilian nation!"

During the reign of Dom Pedro II., the Crown-Princess Isabel was three times regent of the empire: from May 25, 1871, to March 30, 1872; from March 26, 1876, to September 25, 1877, during the emperor's visit to the United States; and from June 30, 1887, to August 21, 1888.

It was during Isabel's last regency that the emancipation of the slaves was effected, although the gradual abolition of the traffic had been going on for many years, and it was only a question of a comparatively short time when the evil would have ceased to exist under the laws already in effect at the time of the princess regent's proclamation. The number of slaves in Brazil had been reduced from two and a half millions in 1854 to a little over half a million in 1888. The signing of the emancipation bill was, nevertheless, an act requiring both courage and decision, especially in view of the circumstances. For it was well known that, in the event of her succession (the emperor's abdication was regarded as an approaching certainty), Isabel would have to look for her chief support to that class whose interests she was imperilling by giving her consent to the liberation of the slaves. Indeed, it has been claimed that this act was responsible, in a great measure, for the absence of any support from among the friends of the empire in the hour of her direst need. Nevertheless, when this view of the case was afterward presented to the princess, she replied that she did not regret her action, but would do the same thing again under the same circumstances.

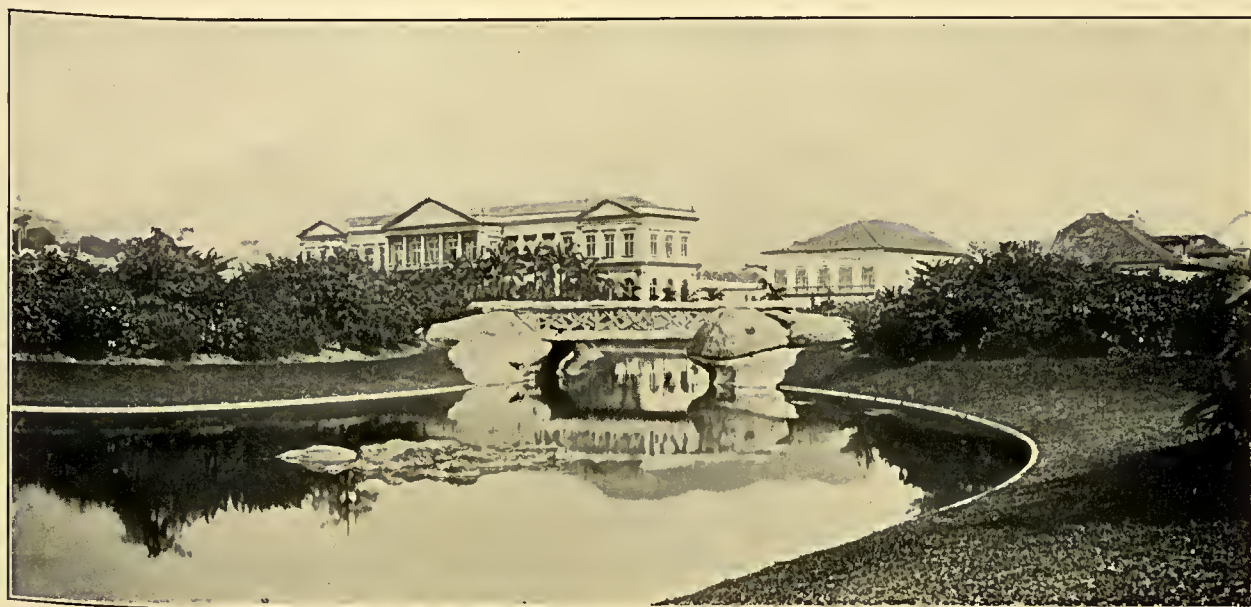
Before giving the history of the final emancipation bill, it is necessary to record the various steps of the progress made toward this end, in order to appreciate the situation fully. The history of slave-traffic in Brazil dates back to the sixteenth century, the first contract for the importation of slaves having been signed in Rio de Janeiro in 1583. The question of emancipation was agitated early in the colonial days, Abbé Manoel Ribeiro Rocha, of Bahia, having published a work, in Lisbon, in 1758, called "Ethiope Resgatado," pleading both for the liberation of slaves after a time of service sufficient to repay their masters for their purchase, and for the freedom of the children of slave women after reaching fifteen years of age. The *Correo Braziliense* published articles urging the gradual emancipation of slaves, in 1808-1822. In 1810, Velloso de Oliveira, of São Paulo, in a memorial to the Prince Regent Dom João, spoke of granting freedom to the children of slave mothers. In 1822, a proposition for the restriction of the slave-trade was presented to the Cortes at Lisbon by one of the Brazilian deputies, Borges de Barros, of Bahia, afterward Visconde de Pedra Branca; but as the Cortes was paying little heed to any suggestions from Brazil just at that particular time, nothing came of it. The importation of slaves was opposed by Domingos Moniz Barreto in 1814, and by Maciel da Costa in 1821. Dr. Antonio Ferreira França, deputy from Bahia, offered a project about this time for gradual abolition. Dom José Bonifacio de Andrada took up the question with his characteristic vigor, and in a memorial published in 1825 presented a plan for emancipation. In 1830, the Chamber of Deputies was asked to consider a proposal for the gradual abolition of slavery, to be consummated by March 25, 1881; and, two years later, a project was submitted to their consideration which declared all new-born children free. But the Chamber was not ready for such radical measures, and refused to consider them. A law was, however, passed in 1830, making the importation of slaves illegal, but it was constantly evaded.

In 1849, a circumstance occurred which gave a new impetus to the anti-slavery movement. The first case of yellow fever was brought over to Brazil that year in a slave-ship,

and the ravages of the disease were more eloquent as arguments against the traffic than the most inspired speeches on the subject. Gradually, an abolition party was formed, and, as far as consistent with his constitutional obligations, the emperor was its protecting patron. Measures favorable to the slaves continued to be urged by prominent leaders from this time forward. In 1854, the minister Eusebio de Queiros secured the passage of a bill for suppressing the trade, which was rigorously enacted, and the old law of 1830, forbidding the importation of slaves, was no longer, in practice, a "dead letter." Plans for gradual emancipation, presented to the emperor by the Marquis de São Vicente, were examined by the Council of State, but action on them was delayed by the breaking-out of the Paraguayan war. As soon as peace was restored, however, the question received renewed attention, and a project for gradual emancipation, proposed by Visconde de Cruzeiro, was drawn up by a committee of the Chamber of Deputies, August 15, 1870. The following year marked a great victory for the Abolition party, in the passage of the famous "Rio-Branco" law, secured by the Prime Minister, J. M. da Silva Paranhos, Visconde de Rio-Branco, September 28, 1871, after a parliamentary struggle of five months. This law abolished slavery in principle, declaring that all children should be born free, and remain only until their majority in the service of the masters of their mothers in order to pay for the expenses of rearing and education; and making it obligatory on all masters to register the nationality, birthplace, and age of their slaves. All slaves not registered in the annual census were considered free.

Slavery was now destroyed at its two sources,—importation and birth. Not satisfied, however, with this gradual process of stamping out the evil, a new abolition party was formed, in 1880, declaring for immediate emancipation. Among its champions were many leading politicians and journalists: Senators Jaguaribe, Octaviano, and Silveira da Mota, Deputy Joaquim Nabuco, and the well-known journalists Ferreira de Menezes, Gusmão Lobo, Patrocínio, Serra, Rebouças, Vicente de Souza, and others. The principles of this party were first carried into effect in Amazonas and Ceará, where slaves were freed in 1884. The Rio-Branco law of 1871 was supplemented by a law passed in 1885, through the efforts chiefly of the ministers Saraiva and Cotegipe, and the distinguished Paulista Dr. Antonio da Silva Prado, declaring free all slaves over sixty years of age, on condition that they should serve their masters another three years; marking a scale of redemption prices that would at the end of twelve or thirteen years make the slaves of such little money value that the trade would cease to exist; the value of female slaves was considered one-quarter less than males. The first clause of this law caused a good deal of discussion because it threatened a serious complication, arising out of the false registrations of ages that had been going on since the passage of the Rio-Branco bill, in consequence of the necessity for concealing the previous illegal importation of slaves. This was contrary to the old law of 1830, which, as before mentioned, was evaded up to the year 1854. Slaves imported between 1830 and 1854 were, therefore, registered at an age that would admit of the supposition of their importation prior to 1830; as a result, the law of 1885 gave freedom to thousands of slaves actually less than fifty years of age, but "officially" over sixty.

The abolition of slavery was at this time the vital question in Brazilian politics. The two conflicting parties—those who advocated a gradual system of freeing the slaves, and those who clamored for immediate emancipation—strove for ascendancy. In São Paulo, Senator Antonio da Silva Prado, a wealthy planter, and the owner of many hundreds of negroes, set the example of immediate emancipation by liberating all his slaves. Numerous other rich land-owners of this State followed his lead, popular sentiment being greatly influenced by such evidences of self-sacrifice for the sake of principle, not alone here, but throughout the neighboring provinces. Encouraged by the increasing efforts made in their favor, the slaves on some of the plantations left *en masse*, and when their owners sought to recover them by law and demanded that the militia should lend assistance, the abolitionists maintained, as Senator Prado declared, that the army could not be called out against fugitive



PUBLIC GARDEN IN RIO DE JANEIRO.

slaves who had committed no crime. The Provincial Assembly of São Paulo voted such a heavy tax on slaves, that it amounted practically to a prohibition, though the vote was not ratified by the president of the province. Finally, the Cotegipe ministry, which favored gradual emancipation, resigned, and the princess regent called upon Senator Corrêa de Oliveira to form a new ministry, which came into power on the 10th of March, 1888, Senator Antonio da Silva Prado being one of its members. These two leaders realized the importance of immediate action, and at once prepared a law which was presented to the chambers by Roderigo Silva in the name of the cabinet, and passed almost unanimously, granting immediate liberty to all slaves, without restriction, on the 13th of May, 1888. Following upon the vote of the Senate, the princess regent gave the law her sanction on the same day, affixing her signature with a handsome gold pen which had been purchased by popular subscription

and presented to her for this purpose. The whole population of Rio rose in enthusiastic manifestation of joy over the event, all the large cities of the empire joining in the celebration, which extended throughout all America. France observed July 10, 1888, as a fête-day in honor of the event.

In the speech from the throne at the opening of parliament on the 3d of May, 1888, the princess regent had urged the passage of a bill for immediate emancipation, in the following language: "To the honor of Brazil, under the influence of national sentiment and individual liberality, the extinction of the servile element has made such progress that it is to-day a hope acclaimed by all classes, with many admirable examples of self-sacrifice on the part of proprietors. Now that private interest itself has worked spontaneously to deliver Brazil from the unhappy heritage which the necessities of tillage bequeathed, I feel assured that you will not hesitate to efface from the national law the single exception which contrasts with the Christian and liberal spirit of our institutions."

And thus the suppression of slavery was accomplished in Brazil without bloodshed. There have been economic difficulties to face in consequence of the sudden cutting-off of the labor-supply on the coffee plantations; but every effort has been made to promote immigration, and thus remedy the deficiency; and if some of the former wealthy land-owners have been reduced to poverty by the change, it is as nothing compared with the sad condition of financial affairs that followed the emancipation of slaves in the Southern States of the North American republic.

The year following was not marked by any evidences of widespread discontent. To be sure, there was a feeling of bitterness among some of the former slave-owners at the sudden deprivation which they suffered from the law that took away from them what they considered rightful property. But there was no tendency toward open revolt; and when the emperor visited the State of São Paulo soon after the liberation of the slaves, he was received everywhere with demonstrations of the most friendly character.





BOTAFOGO, RIO DE JANEIRO.

CHAPTER III

FALL OF THE EMPIRE, AND GENESIS OF THE REPUBLIC



STATUE OF EMPEROR DOM PEDRO I.,
RIO DE JANEIRO.

TO appreciate the original causes that led to the downfall of the empire and the establishment of a republic in Brazil, it is necessary to trace the political history of the country back to colonial days. For the principles of republicanism that found their final triumph in the events of November, 1889, were rooted deep in the Brazilian character, which has always been possessed of a goodly share of the New World spirit of independence. Even in the days of her swaddling-clothes, her people manifested, in no uncertain manner, that "god-like discontent" with existing conditions which is one of the healthy signs of progression.

As early as the year 1550, Martim Affonso, while endeavoring to settle the capitania of São

Vicente, in the present State of São Paulo, visited the territory governed by João Ramalho and formally recognized Ramalho's authority; twenty years later, this settlement, which was called São André, was officially recognized by the colonial government as an independent State. It was really the first republic in Brazil, and thrived for over a hundred years, until the accession of the Braganzas in 1640. The "Mamelucos," as its people were named, had refused to submit to Spanish rule when the union of Spain and Portugal took place, and they refused to accept their old rulers when the Portuguese power was restored; they rose in revolt, claiming that their rights were not respected, and demanded "that noblemen of disinterested Christian blood should be sent to govern them," bitterly resenting the interference of the Jesuits, who sought to invade their privileges, or what they regarded as such. When they

were called upon to swear allegiance to King Dom João IV. of Portugal, they brought out a ruler of their own, intending to place him in authority; but he was not willing to have this "greatness thrust upon him," and defeated the purpose of his would-be subjects. This republic declined, without its originators suspecting that they had founded one, but the spirit of independence and enterprise exhibited itself in their descendants, and contributed to make the Paulistas the energetic and progressive people they have been in the development of their country, always among the foremost leaders in the political and educational advancement of Brazil.

The republican conspiracy of 1789, while it amounted to little in actual results, was, nevertheless, a strong influence in the development of republican principles; it was one of those political "straws that show which way the wind blows." It is more than likely that, had it not been for the removal of the Portuguese court to Brazil, which resulted in raising the struggling and oppressed colony to the dignity and advantages of a kingdom, with its ports open to commerce and its industries free to development, republicanism would have made progress earlier than it did, and the "Tiradentes" conspiracy would have marked more than the beginning of a determined struggle for constitutional liberty. Under the circumstances, it was, no doubt, best for Brazil at that time that events occurred as they did, for the new country took a long stride forward during the few years that followed the establishment of the court at her capital, notwithstanding the evils which attended the benefits received; and during all this time the independent spirit of the nation was growing healthy and strong. The sentiment that sprang into living action when the Cortes tried to inflict arbitrary measures upon the young government in 1822, was the same in principle as that which caused the famous "Boston Tea Party" in the New England colony. That Brazil became an empire instead of a republic at the time, was due, in a great measure, to the peculiar circumstances of her position. Even as it was, an important advance was made toward the destined goal when her independence from Portugal was secured and a constitutional system of rule established by her own people. The history of the reign of the Emperor Dom Pedro I. is a record of persistent and determined struggles for national liberty as opposed to monarchical domination. The first emperor always maintained that he was governing within the rights granted him by the Constitution. The people did not accept his views, and he was forced to abdicate. They asked the second emperor to revise the Constitution, which he refused to do; and when his ministers took advantage of the authority it gave, and imposed unjust measures, especially through the centralizing system, which was responsible for so many abuses in the provinces, the people became more and more determined in their opposition to the monarchy. Republicanism grew rapidly and spread its influence through all parts of the empire, the government support became weaker and weaker, until there was no longer any question in the public mind regarding the inevitable outcome, which waited only for a favorable opportunity to become manifested.

A commentator upon the downfall of the Brazilian empire says: "The revolution of 1889, accomplished without bloodshed, would seem to indicate a people obedient to law,

not prone to violent action, essentially dissatisfied with the monarchical system and thoroughly imbued with the republican idea." As a matter of fact, the existence of the imperial government had been merely tolerated for some time, and it was only a question of the fitness of the occasion when the change should be brought about. The ruling emperor, Dom Pedro II., was well beloved by his people, and it was generally understood that no steps would be taken to overthrow the empire during his life-time, particularly as he was a man of advanced years and in failing health. But a succession of events occurred which led so unavoidably to the climax, that there was no possibility of pursuing any other course than the one chosen, which resulted, in November, 1889, in the establishment of the republic and the banishment of the imperial family.

The first signs of the approaching storm began to show themselves when it was rumored that the emperor intended to abdicate on the 2d of December, his birthday, in favor of his daughter, the Crown-Princess Doña Isabel, whose accession to the throne was not considered desirable. Added to her own unpopularity as a possible ruler was the general dislike of her husband, the Conde d'Eu, one of the Orleans princes, who possessed many characteristics that did not appeal to the admiration of the Brazilians, and whose power in the government, in the event of Princess Isabel's becoming the reigning monarch, would undoubtedly be of great importance. The Republican party, whose two chief strongholds consisted of the "Associated Republican Leagues," organized mainly by Quintano Bocayuva, and the "Military Club," founded by Deodoro da Fonseca at the close of the Paraguayan war, determined to thwart the imperial plans for the succession, and immediately began preparations toward that end. The army and navy were dissatisfied with the restrictions put upon their authority by the ministry, and the army was especially discontented because of the refusal of a petition for increased pay; so that the government had good reason to fear their opposition. In order to counteract these adverse influences, the Conde d'Eu undertook to create a strong Imperial Guard of Honor as a counterpoise to the power of the army in case the latter should actively oppose the imperial claims of the Crown-Princess Isabel; and, in addition to this movement, arrangements were made to disperse the army over the remote provinces of the interior, so that military opposition would thereby be effectually weakened in any crisis that might arise. Everything was ready for the carrying-out of these projects, and the 15th of November was the day set for the departure of the troops to the interior; on that day, the government suddenly found itself facing the revolution which overcame it, and overthrew the empire in twenty-four hours. The members of the emperor's cabinet at this time were: Imperial Prime Minister and Minister of Finance, Visconde de Ouro Preto; Minister of the Interior, Baron de Soreto; Minister of Justice, Senator Candido de Oliveira; Minister of Foreign Affairs, Dr. Diana; Minister of the Army, Visconde de Maralaju; Minister of the Navy, Baron de Ladoris; Minister of Agriculture, Laurenço de Albuquerque.

On the morning of the 15th of November, as Emperor Dom Pedro was leaving the imperial chapel at his summer residence in Petropolis after the service of Mass, he was

handed a telegram from the Prime Minister, requesting him to come to Rio immediately, as insurgents had placed the city under siege, and artillery commanded the streets. The emperor at once complied with the request. On his arrival at the imperial palace in Rio, it was promptly surrounded by the revolutionary troops, and the following manifesto was read, proclaiming the republic:

“Fellow-citizens: The people of the army and navy are in perfect accord with the sentiments of our fellow-citizens residing in the provinces. The fall of the imperial dynasty has just been decreed, and the consequent destruction of the monarchical system. As an



PRAÇA DA REPUBLICA, RIO DE JANEIRO.

immediate result of this national revolution, essentially patriotic in its character, there has just been established a provisional government whose principal mission is to guarantee the maintenance of public order and the protection of the liberty and rights of citizens. To carry on the government until the sovereign nation can, through its constitutional organization, select a definite government, the undersigned citizens were appointed as the chief executive power of the nation.

“Fellow-citizens: The Provisional Government—simply the temporary agent of the national sovereignty—is the government of peace, liberty, fraternity, and order. It will use the attributes and extraordinary powers with which it is vested for the defence of the subjects of the country and of public order. The Provisional Government, by all the means

at its command, promises to guarantee to all the inhabitants of Brazil, native and foreign, security of life and property, and to respect their rights, both individual and political, except when they require to be limited for the good of the country and for the legitimate defence of the government proclaimed by the people, by the army, and by the navy.

“The ordinary functions of justice, as well as those of civil and military administration, will continue to be exercised by those bodies heretofore existing. In regard to those holding office, the rights acquired by each functionary will be respected. The abolition of the Senate is decreed, and also of the Council of State. The Chamber of Deputies is declared dissolved.

“Fellow-citizens: The Provisional Government recognizes and acknowledges all the national engagements contracted by the former government: the treaties with foreign powers; the public debt, both internal and foreign; the contracts now in force, and the obligations legally established.”

This manifesto was signed by Marshal Deodoro da Fonseca, chief of the Provisional Government; Aristides da Silveira Lobo, Minister of the Interior; Ruy Barbosa, Minister of the Treasury and Justice; Benjamin Constant, Minister of War; Eduardo Wandenkolk, Minister of Marine; Quintino Bocayuva, Minister of Foreign Affairs.

After the reading of the manifesto, Dom Pedro held a meeting of his ministers and councillors of State. He endeavored to form a new ministry, with Saraiva at the head, but Marshal Deodoro da Fonseca objected to this, and sent the following message to the emperor: “The democratic sentiments of the nation, combined with resentment at the systematic repressive measures of the government against the army and navy, and the spoliation of their rights, have brought about the revolution. In the face of this situation, the presence of the imperial family is impossible. Yielding, therefore, to the exigencies of the national voice, the Provisional Government is compelled to request you to depart from Brazilian territory with your family within twenty-four hours. The government will provide at its own expense the proper means for transport, and will afford protection for the imperial family during their embarkation. The government will also continue the imperial dowry fixed by law until the constituted Assembly decides thereon. The country expects that you will know how to imitate the example set by the first emperor of Brazil on April 7, 1831.”

Dom Pedro's answer to this communication, which was promptly sent to Fonseca on the same day, was as follows: “Yielding to the imperiousness of circumstances, I have resolved to set out with my family to-morrow for Europe, leaving this country so dear to us all, and to which I have endeavored to give constant proofs of deep love during the nearly half a century in which I have discharged the office of chief of State. While thus leaving with my whole family, I shall ever retain for Brazil the most heartfelt affection and ardent good wishes for her prosperity.”

On the same day, the Condessa d'Eu, Princess Isabel, issued the following manifesto: “With a broken heart I part from my friends, from the whole people of Brazil, and from

my country, which I have so loved and still do love, toward whose happiness I have done my best to contribute, and for which I shall ever entertain the most ardent good wishes."

The Conde d'Eu, husband of Isabel, wrote to the Minister of War, resigning command of the artillery, and requesting leave to go abroad, adding that he had loyally served Brazil, and that but for the circumstances which obliged him to quit the country, he "would be ready to serve it under any form of government."

At two o'clock in the morning of the following day, General Deodoro sent one of his officers and a detachment of soldiers with orders to the imperial family to embark forthwith, it being deemed inadvisable to wait until daylight lest some demonstration in the streets might lead to bloodshed. The Crown-Princess Isabel, the Conde d'Eu, and their children walked to the quay, which was but a short distance from the Palace, followed immediately by the emperor and empress in a carriage guarded by troops. The party embarked on a steam-launch, and were taken on board a man-of-war which conveyed them to Ilha Grande (the present quarantine station, about sixty miles from the capital), where they remained until the afternoon, when they were transferred to the steamship *Alagoas*, accompanied by two lieutenants of the navy commissioned to see that the steamer went direct to Lisbon. The *Alagoas* was also convoyed a part of the way by the Brazilian iron-clad *Riachuelo*.

The first official notification of the revolution received abroad was sent to the Brazilian legation in London, and read as follows:

"BRAZILIAN MINISTER, LONDON:

"The government is constituted as the 'Republic of the United States of Brazil,' the monarchy is deposed, and the imperial family have left the country. Tranquillity and general satisfaction prevail. The executive power is intrusted to a Provisional Government, whose head is Marshal Deodoro, with myself as Finance Minister. The Republic respects all engagements, obligations, and contracts of the State.

"RUY BARBOSA, *Finance Minister*."

It is a remarkable fact, and without a parallel in history, that within a few days after the proclamation of the republic there was little to indicate, from the general appearance of things, that the empire had ever existed. The London *Times*, in an editorial commenting on the event, said: "The Brazilian revolution has been carried out with a sobriety, a coolness, an attention to detail, and a general finish about all the arrangements, which in all the circumstances of the case are really remarkable." The *Fortnightly Review* remarked: "The leaders of the revolution did nothing more than peacefully enact a change upon which the heart of the country had long been set."

In the carrying-out of their programme, the republicans showed no animosity toward the old emperor, for whom, personally, there was a general feeling of regard. Their quarrel was not with the gentle scholar who represented in his person the monarchical government,

but with the system itself and the constituted authorities who had abused its powers. Dom Pedro II. was a man of many good qualities, a student, and a lover of science. Agassiz once said of him: "Alas! Dom Pedro is a most unfortunate man; for, if he were not an emperor, he would be a scientist." An impartial biographer describes him as "not a man born to rule millions." Art, engineering, classic lore, nothing came amiss to him, and he talked equally well on all subjects, albeit he was inclined to push scholarship to pedantry. He was refined and courtly in manner, and scrupulously careful to avoid hurting the susceptibilities of others. He never refused to visit a school, a hospital, or institution of any kind; he was in his element in any international exhibition, equally interested in every department. He gave foreigners of culture a cordial welcome to his court, whatever might be their social position; and he never, to the day of his death, ceased to puzzle over the problem as to why every Brazilian had not tastes similar to his own. He was not without a sense of humor, as shown in his remark to the expert who was explaining the working of a big wheel in a factory exhibit in England: "One thousand revolutions a minute, you say? Why, that beats South America!" But though Dom Pedro II. was not gifted with the qualifications of a ruler, he had the best



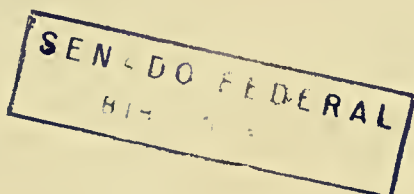
CASA DA MOEDA (MINT), RIO DE JANEIRO.

royal blood of Europe in his veins. He was descended from the Hapsburgs, the Bourbons, and the Braganzas. By marriage, he was related to the royal and imperial families of England, France, Russia, Spain, and Italy, and his relatives ranked from the most despotic of rulers to the mildest of constitutional monarchs. He married, in 1843, the Princess Theresa Christina Maria, daughter of King Francis I. of the Sicilies, and their family consisted of two sons, who died in childhood, and two daughters, one of whom is still living and has her residence in Paris,—the Princess Isabel, wife of the Conde d'Eu, and mother of three sons, Dom Pedro, Dom Louis, and Dom Antonio. The Princess Leopoldina, younger sister of the Princess Isabel, died in 1871, leaving four sons, of whom three are living,—Dom Pedro Auguste, Dom Auguste, and Dom Louis Gaston. Dom Pedro II. had three

sisters, of whom the eldest was Queen Maria II. of Portugal; the others, Dona Januaria, who married Prince Louis of Bourbon, Count of Aquila; and Dona Francisca, who married the Prince de Joinville, son of Louis Philippe. Dom Pedro died at Paris, on the 5th of December, 1891, and was buried in the home of his ancestors, Lisbon.

As to the reasons which led to the fall of Dom Pedro and of the empire, many have been given, and conservatives in Europe asserted that the Brazilian empire fell on account of its liberalism. But Castelar came nearer the true reason when he intimated that an empire surrounded by republics and unable to keep its great army continually amused by conquest and military glory had in it the element of death—the seed of a better life. “When the time came,” says Castelar, “a worn-out régime was supplanted by the fitting organism of contemporary democracy.” This seems to be about the real gist of the case; monarchy had run its course, and could no longer exist upon American soil. The rule of Dom Pedro was not particularly irksome; in fact, the monarch himself was well beloved, but during his reign the psychological moment arrived for the institution of a republic. It was not a question regarding the reigning sovereign; the handwriting was upon the wall, the people felt inspired to obey its mandates, and so the shadow of the crown passed away from Brazil forever. Other causes may have hastened a result that could not, in any event, have long been stayed. Dom Pedro was old, and in such feeble health that he could scarcely attend to the requirements of his great office. Dona Isabel, whom he had selected to succeed him, was, as has been said before, unpopular, and this unpopularity was increased by her marriage to the Conde d’Eu, a member of the unfortunate and much disliked Orleans family, which, not only in its own country, but in several others, has constantly aimed at statecraft, and has never gone beyond unsuccessful scheming. These, however, were minor influences, such as may in some measure help along, but do not inspire, a great purpose that must accomplish itself. It was as Castelar says: “The hour had come.” And with that hour a new republic was created, almost without a disturbing circumstance. Everything was ready and awaiting it. On January 29, 1890, the President of the United States of America formally recognized the Provisional Government by accepting the credentials of J. G. do Amaral Valente as Minister to the United States, and of Senhor Salvador de Mendonça as Minister on a special mission to the United States.

Among the first acts of the Provisional Government was the issuing of a decree granting the right of suffrage to every male Brazilian citizen who could read and write, unless deprived of his civil and political rights, the electoral process being left to the decision of the Minister of the Interior. A commission was next appointed, consisting of Dr. Joaquim Saldanho Marinho, president, and Dr. Americo Brasiliense de Almeida Mello, Dr. Antonio Luiz dos Santos Werneck, Dr. Francisco Rangel Pestana, and Dr. José Antonio Pereira de Magalhães Castro, to prepare a draft of a Federal Constitution. On December 21st, a decree was issued naming September 15, 1890, as the time for holding a general election for delegates to the Constituent Assembly, and November 15, 1890, the anniversary of the revolution,



as the date for its first session, which should take place at Rio de Janeiro. A confederation of twenty States, consisting of the former provinces, was formed, adding the Federal district of the capital. The separation of Church and State was declared, and State patronage of religious institutions abolished, though it was guaranteed to furnish ecclesiastical revenue and support for the actual personnel of the Catholic Church, and to subsidize the seminary professorships for one year. Titles of rank were abolished, though those possessing them are allowed by courtesy to bear them still. An order of the Legion of Honor was created, and the military cross was retained. All other orders were abolished. Officials who adhered to the monarchy were allowed to retire, and a few were discharged. Many remained in their places.

Public institutions, vessels of the navy, etc., named in honor of the banished dynasty, were christened afresh, the crown emblems were everywhere replaced by stars, and a new national flag was adopted by a decree signed on the 19th of November, 1889. This flag, while changed in some respects from the emblem of



OFFICIAL RECEPTION ON THE ARRIVAL OF A FOREIGN DIPLOMAT,
RIO DE JANEIRO.

the empire, preserves the old national colors, the government considering that, as they remind the people of many hard-fought battles and glorious victories of the army and navy in defence of their country, they should be retained to symbolize, independently of the form of government, the perpetuity and integrity of the country among the nations. Accordingly, the flag adopted by the republic maintains the tradition of the old national colors,—green and yellow,—having a yellow lozenge on a green ground, and in the centre a blue sphere

crossed by a white zone descending obliquely from left to right, bearing the motto: "Ordem e Progresso" [order and progress]; in the blue sphere are twenty-one stars, including the famous "Southern Cross," placed according to the correct astronomical situation, representing the twenty States of the Union and the Federal district. The decree authorizing the adoption of the new flag bears the signatures of the provisional President and his cabinet: Manoel Deodoro da Fonseca, Aristides da Silveira Lobo, Ruy Barbosa, Quintino Bocayuva, Manoel Ferraz de Campos Salles, Benjamin Constant, and Eduardo Wandenkolk.

It was not to be expected that absolute harmony would reign from the beginning in all departments of the government under such a radical change in the whole order of things.



MARSHAL DEODORO DA FONSECA,
FIRST PRESIDENT OF THE REPUBLIC OF BRAZIL.

Signs of discontent appeared when the governors and assemblies of the several provinces were dismissed and their places filled principally from the military ranks; when commissions were appointed to govern in the place of the city councils of Rio de Janeiro and Para; and more especially when continual delays occurred in calling the constitutional convention, which led to a suspicion that the new Constitution was to be promulgated by a decree without being submitted to the approval of the people. However, no very serious disturbance occurred, and when Congress met, its first efforts were directed to adopting or amending the provisions of the Constitution submitted for its approval by the commission that had drafted it. When the articles were finally adopted, an election was held, Marshal Deodoro da Fonseca was made President, the first of the republic of Brazil, and members were elected to the Senate and House of Representatives.

At the first election under the new government, the Senate had 63 members, 3 from each State and 3 from the Federal district. The Chamber of Deputies had 205 members, of which there were 37 from Minas Geraes; 22 from each of the two States of São Paulo and Bahia; 17 from each of the two States of Rio and Pernambuco; 16 from Rio Grande do Sul; 10 from Ceará; 10 from the Federal district; 7 from each of the two States of Para and Maranhão; 6 from Alagoas; 5 from Parahyba; 4 from each of the five States of Piahy, Rio Grande do Norte, Sergipe, Parana, and Rio Grande do Sul; 3 from Goyaz, and two from each of the States of Amazonas, Espirito Santo, and Matto Grosso.

The creation of the new republic required the determined will and unswerving patriotism of her people; the preparation of a Constitution for her future government demanded not only these qualities, but, in addition, clear-headed judgment and executive genius in the leaders chosen to represent her interests. After years of trial, during which the new republic has encountered all the discouraging factors that invariably hamper the progress of the inexperienced, results prove how perfectly the fathers of republicanism understood the needs of the nation and with what wisdom they accomplished the most difficult of all problems to a young republic,—the successful adoption of a national constitution. An apparently insignificant blunder might have been fatal; any selfish designs on the part of its projectors must have defeated its main purpose, and brought a train of disastrous consequences; if ever the country needed a tower of strength, a firm and steady “ship of State” that would carry her safely through the storm she had raised and out on the smooth sea of national content, it was at this time, and everything depended upon the builders. And they were grand, unflinching patriots, every one of them, fully appreciating their responsibility and ready to meet it like men. Prominent among those who assisted in framing the Constitution, and to whose genius and loyalty its perfection is due, was the present distinguished and honored President of Brazil, his Excellency Dr. Manoel Ferraz de Campos-Salles.

The Constitution of the United States of Brazil is embraced under five heads, treating, respectively, of the Federal organization, the States, municipalities, citizenship, and general matters, and of ninety-one articles numbered consecutively. Under the first heading are three sections, appropriated, respectively, to legislative, executive, and judicial power; and under the fourth heading are two sections, one of which specifies the qualifications of citizenship, the other containing a declaration of rights. The Constitution is modelled closely after that of the United States of America. Among its leading features are the following:

The Federal government cannot intervene in the internal affairs of the States, except to repel foreign invasion, or invasion from one State into another; to maintain the republican federative form of government; to re-establish order and tranquillity in the States, upon requisition of the local authorities; to ensure the execution of the laws of Congress and compliance with Federal decisions.



MARSHAL FLORIANO PEIXOTO.

The Union has exclusive power over taxes on imports, the entry, clearance, and port dues of ships; general stamp taxes; taxes on Federal posts and telegraphs; the creation and maintenance of custom-houses; and the establishment of banks of issue.

The States have exclusive power to levy taxes upon the exportation of merchandise of their own production; upon landed property, upon the transfer of property, upon industries and professions, and upon their own posts and telegraphs. A State may tax the importation of foreign merchandise only when it is destined for consumption in its own territory, the product of the tax reverting to the Federal treasury.

It is forbidden to the States, as well as to the Union, to levy taxes on the transit through the territory of a State, or in the passage from one State to another, of the products of other States of the republic or foreign countries, or upon the vehicles, on land or water, by which they are carried; to establish, subsidize, or embarrass the exercise of religious worship; and to enact retroactive laws.

The right of the Union and of the States to legislate upon railways and internal navigation is to be promulgated by a law of the national Congress.

The legislative authority is vested in a Congress composed of a Senate and Chamber of Deputies, holding a regular annual session beginning on the 3d of May of each year. The duration of each Congress is three years. The presence of a majority of its members is necessary to form a quorum of either house, the two houses meeting separately and holding public sessions, unless a secret meeting is ordered by a majority vote of the members.

The general conditions required for eligibility to the national Congress are: to be in possession of electoral rights; to be a Brazilian citizen for over four years in the case of a Deputy, and more than six years in the case of a Senator.

It belongs exclusively to the national Congress to estimate the revenue and fix the expenditure annually; to authorize the executive power to contract loans and obtain credits; to legislate as to the public debt and establish means for its payment; to regulate the collection and distribution of the national revenues; to regulate international trade as well as that between the States and the Federal district, and to create ports of entry; to legislate as to navigation on rivers that wash more than one State or run through foreign territory; to decide the weight, value, inscription, standard, and denomination of coins; to create banks of issue, legislate upon them, and tax them; to fix the standard of weights and measures; definitely to decide as to the limits of the States between each other or as touching the Federal district, or of those adjoining territory of other countries; to authorize the government to declare war and make peace; definitely to decide as to treaties and conventions with foreign nations; to change the capital of the Union; to concede subsidies as to the States when authorized by the Constitution; to legislate upon the service of post-offices and telegraphs, the organization of the army and navy, the civil, criminal, and commercial laws of the republic, public lands and mines, higher education in the Federal district; to adopt regulations to secure the safety of the frontiers; to fix annually the land and naval

forces; to concede or refuse passage to foreign troops through the country for military operations; to call out and utilize the National Guard and civic militia in cases provided for by the Constitution; to declare under martial law one or more localities of the national territory, in the emergency of aggression by foreign troops or domestic commotion; to regulate the conditions and process of election for Federal offices throughout the country; to establish uniform laws of naturalization; to create and suppress Federal public offices, to determine their powers and duties, and to fix their salaries; to organize the Federal judiciary; to concede amnesty; to commute and pardon penalties upon Federal functionaries for official crimes; to enact special laws for the Federal district; to subject to special legislation the portions of the territory of the republic necessary for arsenals or other establishments and institutions of Federal utility; to regulate the cases for interstate extradition; to decree the laws and resolutions needful for the exercise of the powers with which the Constitution invests the government of the Union; to decree the organic laws for the complete execution of the Constitution.

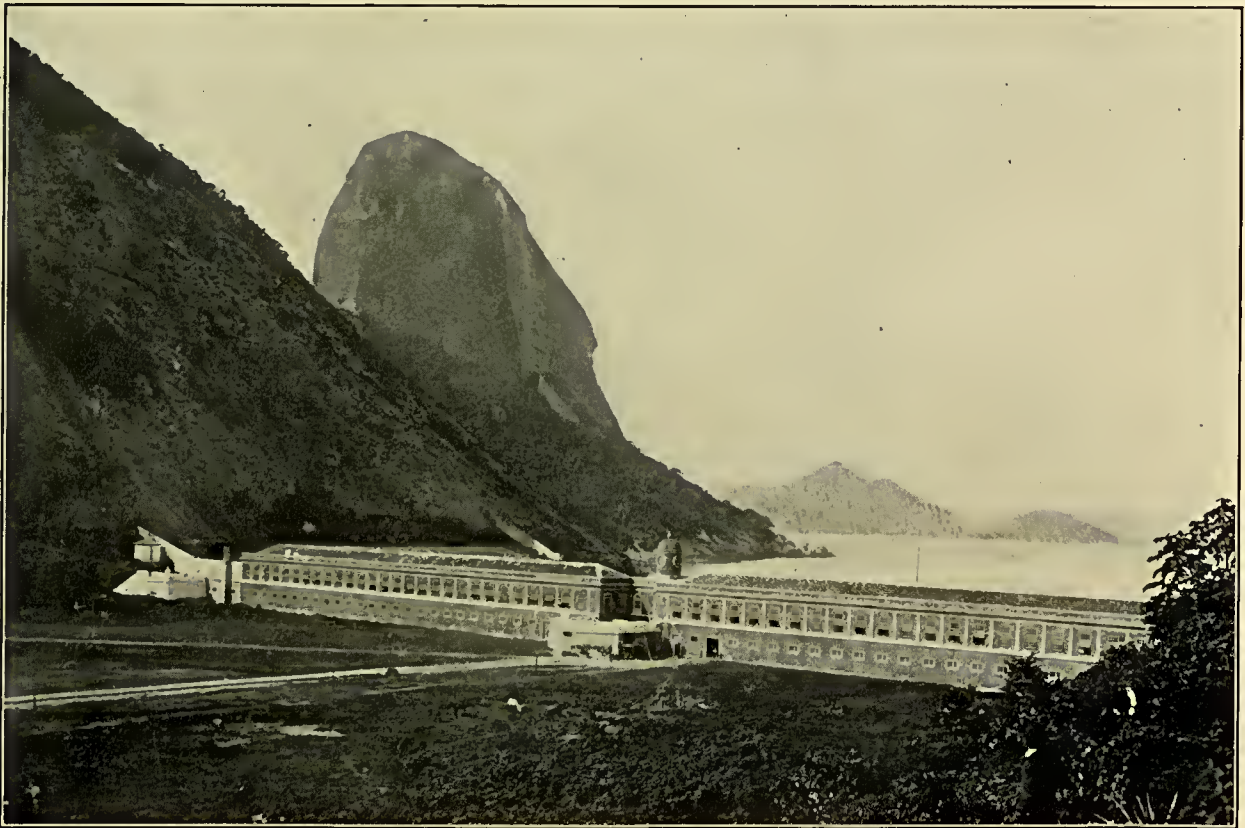
The veto power of the President and the procedure thereon are in all respects like those under the Federal Constitution of the United States; as are also the relations sustained by the ministers of State to the President and Congress.

The President of the republic, as elective chief of the nation, exercises the executive power. The Vice-President, elected simultaneously with him, performs the duties of the President in case of disability, and succeeds him in case of vacancy; and if the Vice-President is under disability or the vice-presidency is vacant, the presidency is assumed by the Vice-President of the Senate, the President of the Chamber of Deputies, or the President of the Supreme Federal Tribunal, in the order named.

To be eligible for election to the presidency, the candidate must be a native-born Brazilian, in the exercise of political rights, and over thirty-five years of age. His term of office is four years, and he cannot be re-elected for the next term. The Vice-President, should he be called upon to act as President in the last year of the presidential term, cannot be elected President for the next term. The President and Vice-President are chosen by direct vote of the people, a majority being necessary to a choice. The election is held on the 1st of March of the last year of the presidential term. The President has the exclusive right to sanction, promulgate, and make public the laws and resolutions of Congress; to issue decrees, instructions, and regulations for their execution; to appoint and dismiss the ministers of State; to act as commander-in-chief of the land and naval forces of the republic; to appoint Federal, civil, and military officers, except as the Constitution provides otherwise; to pardon and commute penalties for crime subject to Federal jurisdiction, except as otherwise provided in the Constitution; to declare war and make peace when authorized by Congress; to declare war immediately in cases of invasion or of foreign aggression; to report annually to the national Congress on the condition of the country, recommending measure and reforms in a message, which shall be sent to the secretary of the Senate upon the opening day of the legislative session; to call extra sessions of Congress; to appoint

Federal magistrates; to appoint the members of the Supreme Federal Tribunal and diplomatic ministers, with the approval of the Senate, with power during the intermission of Congress to make temporary appointments; to appoint all other members of the diplomatic corps and the consular agents; to maintain relations with foreign States; to declare, by himself or his responsible agents, martial law in any locality of the national territory in cases of foreign aggression or grave internal commotion.

The President is subject to trial and judgment, for common crimes, before the Supreme Federal Tribunal, after the indictment has been declared valid by the Chamber; and for



MILITARY SCHOOL, RIO DE JANEIRO.

impeachable crimes, before the Senate. In the latter are considered all those that attack the political existence of the Union; the Constitution and form of Federal government; the free exercise of political powers; the enjoyment and legal exercise of political or individual rights; the internal safety of the country; the integrity of the administration; the custody and constitutional employment of the public moneys; the revenue laws voted by Congress.

The judicial power of the Union is vested in a Supreme Federal Tribunal, seated at the capital of the republic, and as many Federal judges and tribunals distributed throughout the country as Congress may create. The Supreme Federal Tribunal is to be composed of fifteen judges, appointed among the citizens of notable wisdom and reputation, eligible

to the Senate. The Federal judges are appointed for life, the position being forfeited only through judicial sentence. Their salaries are fixed by law of Congress, and cannot be reduced. The President appoints the Attorney-General of the republic from among the members of the Supreme Federal Tribunal.

The States hold very much the same relation to the Union as is the case in the United States of America. Each State is governed by the constitution and by-laws it adopts, provided there is nothing contained therein to oppose the constitutional principles of the Union. Generally, the States are free to exercise all powers and rights not denied to them in the Constitution of the republic.

The right of suffrage is given to male citizens upward of twenty-one years of age, who have been registered according to law; but military men in active service, members of monastic orders, companies, or communities, subject to vows of obedience that involve the renunciation of individual liberty, paupers, and illiterate persons, are not permitted to register as Federal or State electors.

The Constitution guarantees the right of public meeting without arms, the right of petition, the right to enter and leave the republic in time of peace without a passport, the inviolability of private residence and correspondence, the freedom of the press, and the privilege of the writ of habeas corpus. All individuals and religious denominations may publicly and freely exercise their worship. The republic recognizes only civil marriages. Instruction furnished by public institutions must be secular. No denomination or church can enjoy official subsidy or hold relations of dependence or alliance with the government of the Union, or that of the States. No penalty can extend beyond the person of the delinquent. The punishment of the galleys is abolished. The death-penalty is also abolished. The laws of the empire, until repealed, continue in force so far as not explicitly or by implication contrary to the system of government established by the Constitution, or to the principles embodied therein. The Federal government guarantees the payment of the public domestic and foreign debt.

Every Brazilian is bound to military service in defence of the country and the Constitution, in accordance with the Federal laws. Forced military recruiting is abolished. The national army and navy are to be formed by voluntary enlistment or by conscription, through a previous enrolment. In no case, directly or indirectly, alone or in alliance with another nation, will the United States of Brazil engage in a war of conquest.

Important differences between the Brazilian Constitution and that of the United States of America are: In Brazil, the President cannot be re-elected for a second term. Each State has three Senators, thus avoiding a tie. Representatives are elected for three years, Senators for nine years.

The new Constitution, besides changing the form of government, made decided differences in the laws of the empire, under which the Roman Catholic had been the established Church; there had been a considerable property qualification for voters: Senators had been appointed for life by the emperor from triple lists sent up from the provinces, provincial

governors had been appointed by the central government, and the powers of provincial assemblies were very limited.

Centralization of government, in the strictest sense of the term, had been the dominant feature of the last imperial reign, and had hampered every effort made by the provinces to advance their interests and improve their condition. It had been the cause of constant discontent and antagonism against the ruling powers long before this spirit became evident in the attitude of the nation at large, and was a potent factor in creating widespread indifference toward the fate of the monarchy and universal acquiescence in the plan of the revolution, which was especially welcome because it promised a change in this respect, guaranteeing the establishment of a government that would recognize the rights of the provinces and observe their privileges, which, under the empire, had been so persistently and relentlessly trampled upon and ignored, without any means of redress being afforded. The new Constitution provided a remedy by establishing a system of federative decentralization, each province becoming a State as independent as one of the United States of America, and in this way receiving every encouragement in the promotion of its best interests and every incentive toward improvement and progress in the development of its social and political affairs.

Another feature of the imperial rule which had been unpopular, because it discriminated in favor of the rich against the poor classes, was the property qualification required to ensure eligibility to the rights of suffrage; under the republican Constitution, this disability was removed, and free privileges granted to all citizens not debarred by physical, mental, or moral incapacity to fulfil the responsibilities of citizenship. In brief, the republican Constitution, modelled upon a plan of government "of the people, for the people, and by the people," was so framed as to avoid the evils of class distinction and a usurpation of the rights of the weaker by the stronger, and at the same time to provide for "the greatest good to the greatest number," while looking ever toward the realization of the noble motto of the nation: "*Ordem e Progresso.*"





PALACE OF AGRICULTURE, RIO DE JANEIRO.

CHAPTER IV

THE FIRST DAYS OF THE REPUBLIC



HOW wondrous was the inauguration of the republic of Brazil! Accomplished without bloodshed or serious disturbance, it must always be regarded as one of the most brilliant events in history, and one which furnishes a shining example for all time. Never elsewhere in the world have such momentous changes been wrought without the horrors of civil war. Madame de Staël vainly hoped that France would have the honor of such a history, but Gallic liberties, and free and popular governments everywhere, save in Brazil, have been purchased with the price of blood. In terrible contrast with the record of this peaceful revolution are the bloody pages that tell of how, amid a festival of carnage and crime, the crown and sceptre of the old régime passed away from France. The revolution in Brazil was really a gradual evolution from the days when a sort of Magna Charta was obtained from Dom Pedro I. He was obliged to give to the people a large measure of liberty in exchange for his crown, and he and his successor ruled not by divine right, but by the consent of the governed. In the course of her political changes, Brazil has been singularly free from retrogressive steps. Every effort on the part of her monarchs to usurp undue authority has been met with determined resistance.

To those who did not appreciate the real condition of Brazil at the time of the banishment of the royal family, this act seemed unnecessarily harsh, and one that might have been delayed until the death of Dom Pedro II. But a false idea prevailed, and was generally entertained, regarding the rule of Dom Pedro, based upon his really high moral qualities, but exaggerated by those whose admiration was bestowed rather upon the monarch than the man. In the eyes of Europe and America, Dom Pedro was esteemed the best possible ruler for the needs of Brazil. But those who live under a government are the best judges of its merits, and the people of Brazil chafed under the absorption of too much power by the crown in defiance of constitutional privileges which had been guaranteed them. The centralization of power was stifling the provinces in the political embrace of the court.

This and other abuses, such as constant deficits in the budget, led a prominent revolutionist of the day to declare with bitterness that the error of the Brazilians had been in warming in their bosom the viper of monarchy, whose victim they had become. Dom Pedro was an excellent monarch, but he represented an element that could not flourish upon American soil. There could be but one logical outcome to the long struggle between monarchical and democratic principles. The latter accorded with New-World ideas, and naturally triumphed. A great law was behind them, the law of the "survival of the fittest."

There was a diversity of opinion at the time of the first election under the republic as to the wisdom of choosing a military leader for the presidency, but the popular vote favored this course. That President Deodoro allowed military methods to govern his policy is not surprising, and that mistakes were made by him through too great a confidence in the necessity of military discipline is no serious proof against his good intentions. Under the trying conditions that confronted the young republic, the great marvel is that matters progressed as favorably as they did. The first signs of discord appeared when Congress, immediately after the election, began to inquire into the actions of the Provisional Government. A disagreement arose between Congress and the executive, there was dissension in the cabinet, and the resignations followed of the Ministers of Agriculture, the Interior, Foreign Affairs, and Finance. Just at this time, the Minister of War, Benjamin Constant, died. In his death, Brazil lost one of her greatest men, and one of the prime movers in the creation of the republic. As a scholar and an educator, he was widely known and honored, devoting his attention especially to the science of mathematics, upon which he wrote several valuable treatises. As the head of the military academy at Rio, he had always exerted a powerful influence in political affairs, and his devotion to the republican cause had been shown in stirring speeches made to the students, urging them to defend the sacred principles of liberty at whatever cost, and to resist all measures aimed against their rights and privileges. In all his addresses he had advocated the establishment of a republican form of government, and thought the time propitious for striking a decisive blow against the monarchy. Opposing the idea, favored by so many of the republicans, of allowing the empire to remain until the death of the Emperor Dom Pedro II., he claimed that no man, however admirable his personal character, should be permitted to stand in the way of national progress, or to delay, even for the shortest time, the establishment of right government in accordance with the sovereign will of the people. It was largely through his influence that events took the course they did on the memorable Fifteenth of November, 1889; for, though he had secured the promise of Marshal Deodoro da Fonseca the night before, to call out the troops, it had not been the marshal's intention to head a revolution against the empire, but only to demand the resignation of the ministry and the reform of certain abuses; it was too late to draw back, however, when the cry of "*Viva la Republica!*" was raised, and there was no alternative for the military commander but to accept the situation, and acknowledge the honor forced upon him as leader of the revolutionary movement against the monarchy and in favor of the republic. All this had been foreseen by Benjamin Constant, who realized the

necessity of having a strong military power at the head of the revolution and afterward as leader of the new government, and for this reason, it is said, declined to become a candidate for the first presidency, though the people would perhaps have chosen him, had his name been placed in nomination. As Secretary of War under the Provisional Government, his services were of great value, and his unflinching opposition to all measures that he thought unjust or savoring of favoritism won him the approval of all classes. He reorganized the military schools, and when he left the war office to take charge of the new Department of Public Instruction, exercised his unbounded activities in reforms and improvements calculated



NATIONAL PRINTING-OFFICE, RIO DE JANEIRO.

to raise this department of the government to the highest plane of usefulness. At his death, Congress voted a pension to his wife and daughters, the erection of a monument to his memory in the Praça da Republica, and a national funeral. He has been called the Father of the Republic.

One of the chief causes of the disturbance of political harmony at this time was the existing state of financial affairs. In consequence of the exodus of negroes that followed emancipation, the question of securing labor on the plantations had become a serious one; and in order to improve these conditions, the Provisional Government voted large

sums of money for immigration purposes. As the treasury had been greatly depleted under the empire by the expenses of the Paraguayan war, it was deemed advisable to raise the necessary funds by an issue of paper in excess of the proportion of gold formerly deposited as a basis, and this action resulted in a fall in exchange which alarmed Congress and led it to pass a bill restricting the issue of paper money. A conflict followed between the President and Congress, and the President vetoed this and other bills passed by that body; in retaliation for which a measure was introduced to deprive the President of the vetoing power. On October 20, 1890, Senators Saraiva and Wandenkolk resigned their seats. They were both very influential men, Senator Saraiva having been one of the popular presidential possibilities when Deodoro was elected, and Senator Wandenkolk was formerly an admiral of the imperial navy, and the first Minister of Marine under the Provisional Government. Their resignations were intended as a protest against the existing order of things, and were designed to force an election for a new Congress. The crisis came when Congress sought to nullify the President's veto by passing acts over his disapproval. The president of the Chamber of Deputies, Senhor Matto Machado, ruled that the vetoed bills could not be considered during the same session; the Chamber overruled his decision, and he resigned, Senhor Bernardino de Campos being elected in his place. On November 2d, an act was passed in the Senate, over the President's veto, providing for a method of impeaching the President; and on the following morning the Senators and Deputies were prevented by a military force, with threats of arrest, from entering the chambers. The same day, the following decree was published:

"The President of the Republic of the United States of Brazil, in view of what at this date he explains in a manifesto to the country, decrees the National Congress elected September 15, 1890, hereby dissolved. The nation is convoked to choose new representatives at a date that will hereafter be designated. The new Congress will proceed to revise the Constitution of the 24th of February of the present year in points that will be made known in the decree of convocation. Let the minister of State of the affairs of the interior cause it to be executed.

"MANOEL DEODORO DA FONSECA.

"Federal Capital, November 3, 1891."

This was immediately followed by another decree declaring Rio de Janeiro in a state of siege, suspending constitutional guarantees, and appointing a commission to try persons proved to be enemies of the republic or disturbers of public order, with power to banish those found guilty. These edicts practically declared a dictatorship, as the President had no power constitutionally either to adjourn Congress or declare amendments to the Constitution, nor, except in cases of revolt, to suspend legal procedure. The manifesto issued by the President, in justification of his course, did not meet with approval, and discontent broke out in open revolution. The State of Rio Grande do Sul, with Silveira Martins at its head,

openly defied the authority of Deodoro, and declared its intention to secede from the republic, and similar threats came from Para and Pernambuco. The President ordered troops to Rio Grande do Sul to prevent the State authorities from carrying their declaration of independence into effect. The resistance was so powerful—an army of fifty thousand men having been raised, with General Osorio at their head, “prepared to march on Rio and depose the dictator,” as General Osorio’s manifesto threatened—that a dispatch was sent from the government saying that fair terms would be accepted in order to restore peace and tranquillity in the State; to which the revolutionary Junta, with Dr. Assis Brasil at its head, answered that the forces would not disarm until Deodoro should resign the presidency and



FIESTA IN THE CITY OF RIO DE JANEIRO.

Congress be reassembled at Rio de Janeiro. On November 21st, the President issued a proclamation appointing February 29, 1892, as the date for the general election, and May 3d for the assembling of the next Congress. He recommended that the Constitution should be amended to secure the independence of the judiciary and the executive by introducing safeguards to uphold the President’s veto, by enlarging the powers of the executive, and limiting those of Congress, and by reducing the number of Representatives.

But Deodoro’s downfall was assured, the navy and three-fourths of the army declaring against him; and when Admiral Wandenkolk and other leaders issued a military pronunciamiento against him, which was followed, on November 23d, by a demand for his abdication within twenty-four hours, “the dictator” realized the hopelessness of his position, and

tendered his resignation through his Prime Minister and friend, Baron Lucena, issuing a manifesto announcing his retirement, and stating that his motive in so doing was to avoid bloodshed. As soon as President Deodoro resigned, the insurgents in Rio Grande do Sul laid down their arms.

The first President of the republic was too much of a soldier to be much of a politician, but Brazilians will readily forgive him the grave political blunder that endangered for a while the peace of their country, and will remember him with gratitude. Manoel Deodoro da Fonseca was a native of Rio Grande do Sul, where he was born in 1834. Educated at the Polytechnic School of Rio de Janeiro, he received an excellent military training, and entered the army after graduating with honors. During the war with Paraguay, he distinguished himself in the battle of Mossoro, being promoted on the field from lieutenant to major. At the close of the war, he was decorated by the Emperor Dom Pedro II. with the order of the Rose. He was afterward given charge of the government cartridge-factory and magazine at Rio de Janeiro, and raised to the rank of general. An enthusiastic republican, he organized, at the close of the Paraguayan war, the "Military Club," which exerted a powerful influence in favor of republicanism in the army. He was the military chief of the revolution, though that position was not altogether voluntary, his friendship for the emperor and appreciation of many favors received from that high source making him reluctant to strike the blow that would fall with crushing effect upon his gracious benefactor. Once having accepted the responsibility, however, he was strong and determined in carrying out the plan arranged, as the events connected with it prove. A few months after his enforced resignation as President, Marshal Deodoro da Fonseca died, on the 23d of August, 1892. In personal appearance, the first President was short, sinewy, and of dark complexion, with a gray moustache and beard. His eyes are described as having been remarkable for their brightness and keenness of expression, and his manner was vehement and impressive.

Immediately after the resignation of President Deodoro da Fonseca, Marshal Floriano Peixoto, the Vice-President, was installed as President, with the following cabinet: Minister of Foreign Affairs, Fernando Lobo Leite Pereira; Minister of Agriculture, Antão de Faria; Minister of Justice, José Hygino Duarte Pereira; Minister of Marine, Admiral Custodio José de Mello; Minister of War, General Simões de Oliveira; Minister of Finance, Rodrigues Alves.

In answer to a decree issued November 25, 1891, the Congress which had been dissolved by President Deodoro reassembled on December 18, 1891, all the States being represented. The bills vetoed by the former President were passed over the veto. A new electoral law was enacted, one of the provisions of which stated that in case the presidency or vice-presidency should become vacant within two years from the beginning of the term, a new election should be held within three months after the vacancy occurs. A delay in carrying out this provision soon caused discontent among the people, which was fostered and increased by an apparent disposition on the part of the President to interfere with the rights of the States by forcing them to accept governors not elected by them, but appointed under Federal authority. A manifesto was issued by some friends of the former

President, condemning the methods of President Floriano, and calling upon him to "put an end to the disruption of the government by ordering a speedy election of a President, in accordance with the requirements of the Constitution and the last electoral law, free from all military pressure." This declaration was treated as a military conspiracy, and the signers were banished.

The State of Matto Grosso, resenting the attempt of the Federal authorities to remove its governor and put another in his place, rose in revolt, and in April, 1892, by the action of the State legislature, proclaimed itself an independent nation, under the name of the "Republica Transatlantica," raising its standard of blue and green with a yellow star in the centre. After a brief struggle, the revolt was quelled, and the insurgent leaders made their escape into Bolivia. In Rio Grande do Sul, the secession movement was revived, and bitter strife followed between the secessionists, or, as they were called, "Federalists," and the State government.

The central government intervened, and sent forces to defend the established authorities. This action was strongly opposed by the navy, and led to the resignation of the Ministers of Finance and Marine, although Rear-Admiral Custodio de Mello had been the staunch friend and ally of Floriano in bringing about the downfall of the previous administration. They were succeeded by Rear-Admiral Chaves as Minister of Marine, and Dr. Freire as Minister of Finance. The animosity of the navy was increased when a decree was issued declaring a trial by court-martial in the case of



BOLSA, RUA PRIMEIRO DE MARÇO, RIO DE JANEIRO.

Admiral Wandenkolk, who had been sent by the central government to Rio Grande to report on the existing conditions, and had openly espoused the cause of the Federalists, joining General Silveira Martins in an unsuccessful attempt to take the city of Rio Grande, which had resulted in his capture. The navy also resented the growing power of the army, which threatened to eclipse its own. The "Historic Republicans," an organization led by Ruy Barbosa and other members of the old Provisional Government, strongly opposed the President's policy of interference with the internal affairs of the States, and joined the navy in a protest against court-martial trial for ex-Admiral Wandenkolk. The Senate, taking action in the matter, decided, by a small majority vote, that the trial should take place in the regular courts. This did not, however, alter the hostile attitude of the navy, and a revolution was the outcome. Although the navy's course was declared to be based purely upon motives of patriotism, there were many who believed that Admiral Custodio de Mello's real purpose in fostering a revolution was to succeed to the presidency himself. Other rumors accused him of plotting for the restoration of the monarchy. Whatever was his design, he had the navy with him in his efforts, and on the evening of the 5th of September, 1892, while the officers of the fleet anchored in the harbor at Rio were at the opera, the admiral, with several of his friends, went on board the *Aquidaban* and raised his flag, afterward going to the other vessels and completing arrangements by which every government ship in the harbor was under his orders. The following morning, he sent a message to General Peixoto demanding his resignation and the surrender of the government offices within six hours. General Peixoto defied the naval squadron, and immediately took measures to frustrate the revolution, Congress voting him legal authority and supplies. By authority of Congress, Rio and Nictheroy were declared in a state of siege, and the President was empowered to extend this declaration to any part of the country. The press was placed under rigorous censorship, and telegraphic communication was shut off between Rio and the rest of the world. About six thousand troops of the army were distributed in the fortifications and strategic points of the bay, to prevent a landing, and a considerable force of infantry and artillery was sent to Nictheroy, the capital of the State of Rio, on the opposite bank of the bay, in order to keep open communication with the fortress of Santa Cruz, which guarded the entrance to the harbor. Admiral Mello's forces, including officers, marines, and sailors, were not sufficient to attempt a landing on the well-guarded shores of the bay. Neither could the ships venture out to sea past the forts and torpedoes at the harbor's entrance. The admiral had threatened that, if the forts fired on the ships, he would bombard the city; and as this was done, he opened fire on September 13th, first on the forts near Nictheroy, and afterward on the arsenal and public buildings facing the water-front in Rio. The port was blockaded to all Brazilian vessels, foreign vessels being allowed to enter and depart under protection of their country's warships. On September 22d, a second bombardment took place, causing a panic among the citizens. Admiral Custodio de Mello issued a proclamation charging President Peixoto, "aided by corrupt Senators and venal Deputies," with overriding the constitutional limits of his

power and "introducing a régime of arbitrary tyranny;" and promising that, if successful in his stand for liberty, the government would be handed over to the same honorable men who had given freedom to the nation before. Four members of Congress who were on board the *Aquidaban* constituted themselves a provisional government and issued a proclamation giving the command of the forces to Admiral Custodio de Mello for the purpose of restoring peace and re-establishing law and order and republican principles.

The President held his ground with determination. He obtained \$4,000,000 of advances to meet the expenses of the engagement, and arranged to fit out a naval squadron to fight the rebels on the sea. On October 10th, the bombardment of Rio was resumed because the shore batteries had not ceased firing on the fleet, and at the same time the admiral issued a new proclamation declaring that in the event of his success he would adhere to republican institutions (this in answer to a charge of imperial restoration intentions), that none of the leaders of the rebellion aspired to power for their own benefit, but for the restoration of peace to the oppressed country, and for the liberation of a people who had been sacrificed by the want of patriotism and the reckless ambition of the head of the government.

Meantime, President Floriano had provided himself with a fleet. He purchased some merchant vessels in the United States and converted them into war-ships, and secured the torpedo gun-boat *Destroyer* (which, however, never saw active service), besides nine torpedo-boats bought in Europe. The *Nictheroy* was armed with a pneumatic gun for dynamite bombs, invented by a United States army captain. The *America* was provided with an armament of heavy guns, and four torpedo-boats were fitted out and equipped with Hotchkiss guns. The *Tiradentes* was put in working order, and manned by a crew under the command of Rear-Admiral Gonçalves. Two Brazilian merchant ships were transformed into gun-boats. Rear-Admiral Duarte was given command of a naval division at Bahia.

In Rio Grande do Sul the Federalists gained ground for a time, and one town after another fell into their hands; and at Desterro, in the State of Santa Catharina, they effected a landing and placed troops in the field, which, however, were defeated, as well as a body of Federalists that came to join them from Rio Grande do Sul. General Saraiva and General Salgado were the leaders of the Federalists in the South.

In November, Admiral Custodio de Mello succeeded in running out of Rio harbor with the *Aquidaban* and the armed transport *Esperança*, under the fire of the forts, and Commodore Elisar Tavares, left in charge of the remaining naval force, was placed under the command of Admiral Saldanha da Gama. The departure of Admiral Custodio de Mello from Rio harbor with the best ships of the insurgent navy at the very time when the government's fleet was known to be concentrating there, was supposed by many to signify that his aims and purposes were not in harmony with those of Saldanha da Gama, who was known to be working for the restoration of the monarchy. Admiral Saldanha's support came chiefly from the churchmen and the imperialists, with whom the Federalists of the South had nothing in common except hostility to the government of President Floriano Peixoto.

It was assumed that Admiral Custodio de Mello's first desire was to save the cause in the South without regard to the situation at Rio. He hoped to succeed in establishing a provisional government in Santa Catharina, with the aid of the Federalist leaders of Rio Grande do Sul; international law requiring that a revolutionary government must administer some considerable portion of the territory before it can be recognized as a belligerent power, whereas the insurgents controlled so far only the little island of Santa Catharina.

In the harbor of Rio the firing between the forts and the rebel ships became more frequent toward the end of the year 1893, the guns on both sides being better managed than in the earlier engagements. The city suffered a good deal in consequence, and business was practically suspended for a time, people moving away to be out of range of the guns. Meantime, the necessity of placing a strong force in the southern country to combat the



QUAY OF LA GLORIA.

insurgents had resulted in weakening the central government's defence of the Federal capital and the shores of the bay. Saldanha da Gama was reinforced, January 12, 1894, by the return of the *Aquidaban*, which enabled him to maintain his position in the bay, that had been seriously threatened, as the government troops had succeeded in compelling him to retire from his best strongholds. He now advanced so boldly that he was able to put a stop to all commerce, until checked by the American admiral A. K. Benham, at that time commanding the South Atlantic Squadron in the harbor of Rio. The action of Admiral Benham in raising the blockade against American merchant ships in the harbor had a deterring effect upon the operations of the rebels. Admiral Benham objected to the order prohibiting foreign vessels from entering within the line of danger when no firing was in progress, claiming that it was an unjustifiable interruption of commerce, and promised the

captain of an American merchant ship that if he would unload his cargo in lighters flying the American flag he would be protected. At first, the rebels forbade the landing. But Admiral Benham stood firm in the attitude he had taken, and they withdrew all efforts at resistance. On January 23d, Admiral Benham invited the insurgent commander to an informal conference on board the *New York*, and having already ascertained the views of President Peixoto, counselled Admiral da Gama to give up the struggle. Admiral da Gama demanded the unconditional surrender of Floriano Peixoto and a free vote throughout the country as to the form of government and representation in Congress. President Floriano, on his side, demanded that neither a military nor a naval man should be eligible for the next President, but that he must be a civilian.

In the South, the revolutionary struggle continued in all its bitterness. In Paraná, General Saraiva formed a junction with Admiral Custodio de Mello, and, with the co-operation of the sailors, they captured the port of Paranagua, took possession of the provincial capital of Curityba, and advanced to southern São Paulo. The outlook was not promising just at this time for the government, the President having angered some of his best friends by the severity of his military discipline. The acting Minister of War, General Galvão, resigned because of his disapproval of the treatment of political prisoners. The confidence of many faithful supporters was shaken by a suspicion of the clandestine issue of paper money by the government. The commander of the fort of Santa Cruz, General Macedo, was arrested on a charge of disloyalty because of the repeated successful attempts of the *Aquidaban* in putting in and out of the harbor. In view of these circumstances, added to the fact that most of the regular army had been sent to defend São Paulo against the attack of Saraiva and Custodio de Mello, Saldanha da Gama determined to make a bold strike for possession of the land defences. A battle took place on the 9th of February, resulting in 550 killed and wounded of Peixoto's men and 272 of Saldanha da Gama's, the admiral himself being wounded in the neck and arm. Not long after this, the insurgents lost the war-ships *Venus* and *Jupiter* and the transport *Mercurio*, sunk by shells from the government forts. After Admiral Saldanha's reverse, the commanders in the South determined to strike at Santos. A portion of the National Guard joined the rebel standard under General Saraiva, whose idea it was to invade the State of São Paulo, with the ultimate object of entering Rio de Janeiro, while General Salgado kept in check the government garrison at Porto Alegre, in Rio Grande do Sul, preventing it from moving northward. São Paulo was still strongly held by government troops and forces, which the State had put at the disposal of the central government, and Santos was strengthened against the expected rebel attack.

This was the situation of affairs when the election, on March 1, 1894, was held for a President to succeed President Peixoto on the following November 15th. The rebels claimed that the election should have taken place in October, 1893; but the naval revolt and the declaration of martial law made an election at that time impracticable. Senators from most of the States had met in December, 1893, and nominated Dr. Prudente Moraes President. The state of siege was suspended, nominally, in order that the election might take place

under constitutional forms. The voting resulted in the election of Prudente Moraes for President and Manoel Victorino Pereira for Vice-President. In Rio Grande, Paraná, and Santa Catharina, where the insurgents were in the ascendency, no election was held. After the election, the state of siege was prolonged until May. By a decree of February 23d, all crimes connected with the rebellion were punishable by martial law, even if committed by civilians. Another decree, issued March 2d, authorized the Minister of War to raise regular troops by forcible conscription. Equipped with strong reinforcements, on March 11th Presi-



PATHWAY IN TIJUCA.

dent Peixoto gave forty-eight hours' notice of a general engagement, and the people of Rio and the ships in the harbor were warned to get out of range. The next day, Admiral Saldanha offered, through the Portuguese Minister, to surrender on condition that immunity should be granted all connected with the rebellion, that officers who were imprisoned should be pardoned, and all superior officers should be allowed to resign their commissions on promising never again to take up arms against the government of Brazil. He then took refuge on a Portuguese man-of-war, and sent another message, that the lives of private insurgents should be spared. President Peixoto replied that no terms would be considered but unconditional surrender. The rebels escaped on the Portu-

guese men-of-war, and when President Peixoto demanded their surrender, the commander refused to give them up without orders from his government. Most of the refugees finally made their escape.

Meantime, Admiral Custodio de Mello, who had been directing all his energies to the cause of the Federalists in the South, had returned again to Santa Catharina, where he was joined by Salgado, and, reorganizing and assuming the presidency of the Provisional Government there, had proceeded to appoint, in the place of the cabinet, a commission of three men representing the three revolted States. This had led to a quarrel in the rebel ranks, and

the "Junta" at Desterro, under the leadership of Custodio de Mello, Saraiva, and Salgado, had been repudiated by the Federalists of Rio Grande do Sul. Early in April, Admiral Custodio de Mello and General Salgado attacked the city of Rio Grande do Sul by sea and land, but there was lack of harmony in their operations, and they were defeated. Meantime, a fleet sent by the central government bombarded the forts at Desterro, and, after a brief naval engagement with the insurgents, succeeded in destroying the *Aquidaban*, which had been the mainstay of the revolt and the principal target of the government's guns throughout the rebellion. After the loss of the *Aquidaban*, the forts and vessels at Desterro were abandoned by the insurgents, the rebel junta fled to the South, and General Saraiva's forces retreated to the frontier. Admiral Custodio de Mello, after leaving General Salgado with 400 men on the Uruguayan territory, departed for Argentina, where he surrendered with his command of 1200 men, his five vessels, and his arms, on condition that they should not be delivered up to the Brazilian government. President Peixoto proclaimed pardon for all privates concerned in the rebellion, and on April 20, 1894, sent a communication to the members of the diplomatic body informing them that the revolt was at an end.

The guerrilla war in Rio Grande do Sul had been in progress for more than a year before the naval revolt began, the central government becoming involved in the contest by extending its protection by force of arms to the ruling governor, General Julio Castilho. The struggle still continued after the surrender of Admiral Saldanha and the departure of Admiral Mello, General Saraiva assuming the leadership of the guerrillas after his retreat from Paraná. In June, his forces were defeated by General Lima, and by the end of July the insurgents were exhausted, and General Saraiva was reported dead. It was not the end of the war, however, for, in the beginning of 1895, Admiral Saldanha da Gama put himself at the head of the rebels. In June, he met the government troops near Santa Anna, was defeated, and, after three hundred men were killed or wounded on both sides and most of his followers had abandoned the field, he ordered those who stood by him to retreat, and met his own death on the battlefield. On July 2d, General Galvão, commanding the government troops, arranged an armistice with General Tavares, the Federalist commander, and terms of peace were finally agreed upon, to which General Castilho, who had up to this time stood out for unconditional surrender, gave his assent. The terms were a free pardon to all who laid down their arms, with a guarantee of all civil rights to every person implicated in the revolution, including the right to appeal to the courts for the redress of injuries committed by the troops. General Castilho was to remain as provisional governor until the meeting of the State Congress, which was to alter the Constitution so as to make it conformable to the Constitutions of the other States. The amnesty bill was passed in September, after a sharp debate in both houses, with modifications debarring rebel officers from the army and navy for two years, and extending the amnesty to other political offenders and exiles.

After the war was over, President Peixoto established the most strict military discipline, frequent changes were made in the cabinet, and all branches of the army were strengthened,

the military force being increased from 14,000 to 24,000 men. Although bitter attacks had been made against the President in Congress, a resolution was finally passed approving his acts. It was recognized that he had successfully brought the country out of a period of agitation and revolt that threatened its very existence, and that he deserved the thanks of the people. At the same time, it was the general sentiment that in future the nation's President should not be a military commander, but a civilian. A few months after giving the reins of government into other hands, Marshal Floriano Peixoto succumbed to illness which proved fatal, his death occurring on the 29th of June, 1895.

In many respects, the "Iron Marshal," as he was popularly called, was a remarkable man. His firmness was unquestioned, his indomitable energy knew no bounds, and although he was regarded as a disciplinarian of over-strict methods, even this characteristic had its advantages when mild measures were perhaps not adequate to the exigencies of the times. The history of this unflinching leader shows him to have been thoroughly educated in military matters. He was a graduate of the Military Academy, an artillery officer, and distinguished himself in the Paraguayan war, receiving promotion to the rank of lieutenant-colonel for gallantry on the field, and upon his return at the close of the war, the title of colonel. In 1883, he was promoted to the general staff of the army. Under the empire, he held the political office of president of Rio Grande do Sul, and in the cabinet of the Provisional Government was Secretary of War, succeeding Benjamin Constant, who was transferred to the Department of Public Instruction. He resigned his position with other members of the cabinet who disagreed with President Deodoro.



COPACOBANA, RIO DE JANEIRO.



RIO DE JANEIRO.

CHAPTER V

THE CIVIL PRESIDENTS

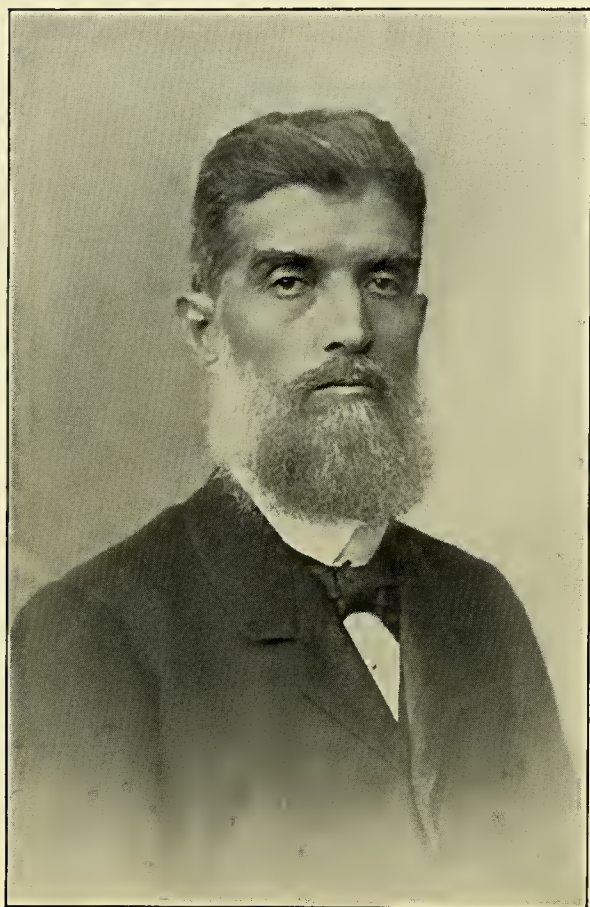


WHILE all honor must be given to the brave pilots that brought the ship of State safely through the first threatening storms, the institution of really republican ideals in the government of Brazil may be said to have been effected by the election of Dr. Prudente José de Moraes Barros as its President, a civilian, and acceptable to all classes of the people, who had outgrown the conditions requiring military rule. He was elected practically without opposition, and on November 15, 1894, was inaugurated President. In his first address, he promised to eradicate sectional differences, and to secure the fullest liberty to every law-abiding citizen. He said that he intended to make his administration one of economy, to be distinguished by the diminution of the public debt, the restoration of a sound currency, and the reduction of the standing army and navy. His ministers were: Foreign Affairs, Carlos Carvalho; Finance, Rodrigues Alves; Industry and Public Works, Antonio Olyntho; Interior, Gonçalves Ferreira; War, General Benjamin Vasques; Marine, Admiral Elisario Barbosa. Immediately on assuming office, President Prudente de Moraes sent General Niemeyer to Rio Grande to treat with the revolutionists, with a view to settling the differences. In the early part of the year, a movement began in favor of the restoration of Floriano Peixoto, having its origin chiefly in the army and navy. President Moraes closed the military school and expelled the students because they attempted to arouse feeling against the existing government. Other plots in favor of the ex-President were put down in Pernambuco and São Paulo. The sudden death of Floriano, on June 29, 1895, put an end to these disturbances.

The congressional session opened May 4th. The President, in his message, spoke of the necessity of encouraging immigration, of a reform in taxation, recommended the reorganization of the National Guard, and the strengthening of the coast defences. A bill was passed placing a heavy tax on foreign insurance companies doing business in Brazil. The indemnity claims of the British, French, German, and Italian governments for damages on account of losses sustained by their citizens in the late revolution amounted to a heavy sum.

On February 6, 1895, the dispute between Brazil and the Argentine regarding the boundary-line of the Missiones territory was settled by arbitration of the President of the United States, President Cleveland deciding in favor of Brazil, and establishing the boundary-line on the rivers Pepiri-Guaza and San Antonio. In this controversy, Brazil was represented by Baron Rio-Branco, and the Argentine by Dr. E. S. Zeballos.

In November, 1896, the President was obliged to retire on account of ill-health, and Vice-President Manoel Victorino Pereira became acting President until March, 1897, when



DR. PRUDENTE JOSÉ DE MORAES BARROS,
FIRST CIVIL PRESIDENT.

Dr. Prudente de Moraes had sufficiently recovered to resume his office. The financial difficulties which menaced the welfare of the republic at this time were met with an honest and determined endeavor to improve existing conditions by a rigid system of economy in all expenditures and by a careful administration of the nation's affairs. This was absolutely necessary, as there was a widespread feeling of anxiety and uncertainty regarding the political future of the country, which was suffering from great commercial depression consequent upon the fall in the value of coffee, from a continuous depreciation of the currency, and from financial embarrassment caused by the necessities of the previous presidency. During the third year of the administration, the government was called upon to assist the authorities of the State of Bahia in putting down an insurrection that had broken out in one of the interior districts at a place called "Canudos," the stronghold of a large band of religious fanatics, led by one Antonio Maciel, whom they called "Conselheiro" [Counsellor], or "Messiah." There is a mystery about this

war that has never been solved satisfactorily to all minds. By some people it is believed to have been an uprising for the restoration of the monarchy, with powerful support behind it, particularly as the rebels fought under the imperial flag and declared their mission to be a holy war against the existing government of Brazil, which they denounced as "atheistic, and undeserving of obedience, and doomed to be overthrown;" they also received, it is said, large quantities of arms and ammunition from unknown sources, and assistance in every way that could further their plans. On the other hand, many people are of the opinion that it was nothing more than an outburst of fanatic enthusiasm, simply a "holy

war," as its leaders called it. The history of the "Conselheiro" is interesting as a psychological study. Formerly a small farmer in Ceará, he belonged to a family of whom several had committed crimes under the influence of uncontrollable passion. He himself had unintentionally shot and killed his mother, who entered his house in disguise one night during his absence, intending to convince him of the infidelity of his wife, whom she hated. He then became insane, and on recovering, some time later, he learned that he was under sentence to a term of penitentiary imprisonment, at the end of which he went forth apparently completely transformed; he devoted himself to religious study and teaching, and retired to the remote interior of Bahia, where he gathered about him a large band of followers, and set up a kind of theocratic government of which he was the absolute head, requiring his disciples to give up all property, himself to be the custodian of the commonwealth and the chief father confessor and provider of his people. The following personal description is given of him by a Roman Catholic missionary: "The fanatic, Antonio Conselheiro, whose family name is Antonio Vicente Mendes Maciel, of Ceará, has a white but sunburned skin, is of spare build, of little physical vigor, and evidently a victim of some chronic disease which causes frequent fits of violent coughing. He wears a long gown of cotton goods, goes bare-headed, carrying in his hand a stout staff. His unkempt hair, falling about his shoulders, is long and curly, streaked with white. His eyes, deeply set, he rarely raises from the ground to look at any one. His face is long and of almost cadaveric pallor. His grave and penitent aspect gives him an appearance that contributes not a little to attract the simple ignorant people of our remote interior."



DR. OLYNTHO DE MAGALHÃES, MINISTER OF FOREIGN AFFAIRS.

The immediate causes of the rebellion are variously stated. One authority says that the Conselheiro accused a merchant of embezzling some money left with him to pay for material for a church building in Canudos, and that when a demand was made for either the money or the material, the merchant complained to the State, declaring the fanatics were threatening him. Police officers were sent to protect the merchant, and in an attack on the Conselheiro they were defeated and some of them killed. Reinforcements sent to their aid were driven back with great loss, and the State was obliged to call for the assistance of the Federal troops. Meantime, the Conselheiro's supporters increased so rapidly that when the Federal army reached his stronghold it found an opposing force of about eight thousand well-trained men prepared to meet it in battle. On March 3, 1897, an engagement took place, resulting in a victory for the rebels, their superior numbers overcoming the small battalion of Federal troops commanded by Colonel Moreira Cesar and Major Francisco M. Beitto, who lost six hundred men and all their guns and ammunition. Sympathizers in other States followed the example of the Conselheiro, and insurrections appeared in Pernambuco, Minas Geraes, Sergipe, and Piauhy. The government found it necessary to increase the strength of its army, and after a bitter



DR. JOAQUIM DUARTE
MURTINHO,
MINISTER OF FINANCE.

engagement, in which General Moreira Cesar was killed, a fresh force of seven thousand men was sent from Rio to Pernambuco, a large force of artillery being dispatched to Bahia at the same time, in charge of General Cantuzia. General Arthur Oscar took command of the troops on their arrival at Bahia, and attempted to march against the rebels' stronghold, two hundred and fifty miles distant from the capital. It was two months before the army reached Canudos, progress having been delayed all along the line by hostile bands. In June, the Federal troops won a victory in which eight thousand of the rebels were defeated and about three hundred killed. Finally, after repeated engagements, resulting in alternate victory and defeat, the Conselheiro's position was captured in October, Admiral Barbosa directing the final operation, during which the Conselheiro was slain, with thousands of his followers.

The successful efforts of President Prudente Moraes to establish a peaceful constitutional government nearly cost him his life on November 5, 1897, at the hands of conspirators belonging to a band of political enemies, who planned to bring his administration to an abrupt end by assassination. The attempt was made while the victorious troops, just returned from the Canudos war, were being reviewed by the President. The dastardly deed was frustrated by the brave action of General Bittencourt, Minister of War, who threw himself in front of the President, receiving in his own breast the fatal wound. The assassin killed himself. Others found implicated in the plot were sentenced to imprisonment.

At the presidential election held March 1, 1898, Dr. Manoel Ferraz de Campos-Salles was chosen President, with Dr. Francisco Rosa e Silva as Vice-President. The administration of Dr. Prudente Moraes had been marked by a strict adherence to the Constitution, and an honest and faithful discharge of his duties as chief executive. He retired from office with the plaudits of the nation ringing in his ears. In straightforwardness and unaffected simplicity he has been compared to Abraham Lincoln, and in staunch loyalty and patriotism his character offers an example eminently worthy of the emulation of the Brazilian youth. A native of the State of São Paulo, Prudente José de Moraes Barros was born at Itú, one of the oldest towns of the State, on the 4th of October, 1841. He was educated at the city of São Paulo, and graduated with high honors in the law department of the University in 1863. In 1866, he was married to Dona Adelaide de Moraes e Barros, and seven children have blessed this union. From the earliest days of his career, Dr. Prudente Moraes was a fearless advocate of republican principles, and as Deputy to the Provincial Assembly of São Paulo, in 1869, made a famous speech against the vexatious measures of the imperial government. When the republicans of Rio published their manifesto in 1870, he was among the first to give his support to the movement, and his services were of the greatest importance in spreading the new political creed in his native State. Elected a Deputy to the national Congress, in 1885, on the republican ticket, through the defeat of the imperial candidate by a large majority, he made known his views before that august assembly with the

same unhesitating and uncompromising frankness that had distinguished his attitude in the provincial parliament, declaring, in one of his speeches, that the two great obstacles to the progress of Brazil were the monarchy and slavery. After the proclamation of the republic, he was elected a member of the provisional government of São Paulo, and on the 3d of December, 1889, became governor of the State. In October, 1890, he was elected to the Senate, and, when the first Congress met, enjoyed the honor of being called to preside over its deliberations, thus having an important share in the framing of the new Constitution. Although not a candidate for the presidency at that time, he received ninety-seven votes against the one hundred and twenty-two which elected Marshal Deodoro da Fonseca. As vice-president of the Senate, in 1891, his independence of spirit was shown in the manner in which he condemned the attitude of President Deodoro, not hesitating to sign a protest against "the dictatorship." In appreciation of his excellent statesmanship and the great value of his services at that trying time, his fellow-members of the Senate presented him with a handsome gold watch and chain, and a gold penholder incrustated with diamonds, which the great statesman preserves among his most valued treasures. In 1894, Dr. Prudente de Moraes was re-elected vice-president of the Senate, and in the same year was chosen by the people to fill the highest office of the nation. How honorably and efficiently he fulfilled the duties of this position is best shown in the popularity which he enjoys among all classes.

The inauguration of President Campos-Salles, the present chief executive of Brazil, was celebrated on the 15th of November, 1898. At his election, the choice of the people was almost unanimous, 400,000 votes being cast in his favor, against less than 20,000 for his opponent. The members appointed to form his cabinet at that time were: Minister of Foreign Affairs, Dr. Olyntho de Magalhães; Minister of Finance, Dr. Joaquim Murtinho; Minister of Public Works, Dr. Severino Vieira; Minister of the Interior, Dr. Epitacio Pessoa; Minister of Marine, Admiral Balthazar Silveira; Minister of War, General Mallet. In the inaugural address, the President stated that he would devote the energies of his government to the reconstruction of the finances of the country, the development of its resources, and the adoption of measures of the severest economy consistent with dignity and decorum. He accepted and endorsed the arrangement made by his predecessor with foreign creditors for a three years' *moratorium*, promising to use his best efforts to carry out the exact terms of the contract. In foreign relations, the President declared it his intention to pursue an independent policy, at the same time endeavoring to extend diplomatic and commercial relations with other nations, and advocating arbitration instead of war in the settlement of disputes. In his message to Congress, the President asked for a revision of the pension law, and the creation of a law dealing with the stamp duties, which the separate States had unconstitutionally appropriated. He proposed measures to improve the collection of customs



DR. SEVERINO VIEIRA,
MINISTER OF PUB-
LIC WORKS.

duties and other dues, and urged the co-operation of all loyal Brazilians in the government's efforts for the economic and financial reconstruction of the country. The commercial policy advocated was the exporting of everything that Brazil could produce better than other countries, and the importing of everything that other countries could produce better than Brazil. The leasing of government railroads was strongly approved, as it was shown that the small lines already leased were earning a surplus under private control, whereas under the former management of the government they had always shown deficits.

In that part of the message which refers to the finances of the country and the causes that produced the embarrassing complications, the President said :

“What adds to the anxiety of the authorities, in the present difficult moment, is the urgent character and intensity of the financial crisis. It is the result of the gravest errors, which have long been accumulating, and which must be repaired without delay, and as completely and rapidly as possible, by recognizing, first of all, its principal causes, which are as follows:



GENERAL MALLET,
MINISTER OF WAR.

“Inopportune and often absurd protection in favor of artificial industries at the cost of heavy sacrifices to the tax-payer and to the treasury; the emission of enormous masses of inconvertible paper, producing a profound depression in the value of the currency; deficits created by the enormous staff of functionaries, by expenditure of a purely local character, and by the continuous addition to the inactive classes; extraordinary expenditure not provided for by the estimates and derived from extraordinary credits opened by the Executive and by special laws enacted by Congress; indemnities decreed by judicial sentences that amount every year to enormous sums; expenditure

on account of internal commotions; obligations resulting from the State insurance and deposits, and which have come to be regarded as part of the ordinary revenue; continuous increase of the floating debt, the result of increasing deficits and the consequent increase of the consolidated debt; the bad collection of the public revenue; the moral effect of a bad financial policy, with its discredit; the withdrawal of confidence and, consequently, of foreign capital; speculation, that in such a medium develops like a parasite on a failing organism; finally, the fall of exchange, the synthesis and expression of all such errors.

* * * * *

“To act with promptness, energy, and perseverance with regard to all the elements that I have pointed out as agents of our economical and financial decadence, abandoning the policy of expedients and postponements, to adopt a policy of real solution, is, in its general lines, the programme of my government. I can see no other secure or honest course that can lead to the re-establishment of normal relations with the creditors of the republic, the supreme aspiration that the honor and dignity of the nation imposes.”

In the first decade of her history as a republic, Brazil served a severe apprenticeship. During the first years, revolution followed revolution, and enormous sums of money were spent with inadequate results. Blunders were committed in finances, in politics, and in the essentials of good government, with no apparent error of form. The staunchest republicans of the "old guard" invited criticism by the adoption of certain methods not consistent with the principles of republicanism; but, with all this, Brazil never quite reached the measure of folly and misgovernment that characterized the early days of American independence, when the United States were said to be "drifting toward anarchy," and the currency had lost its purchasing power. Brazil, under less favorable circumstances, did better than that; and now that the era is passed which was marked by revolution, discord, and conspiracy, culminating in the attempted assassination of ex-President Prudente Moraes and the resulting martyrdom of brave General Bittencourt, the inherent good sense and patriotism of the nation having been thoroughly aroused by the shock of that terrible event, a strong reaction has set in against revolutions and the demagogues who incite them, and, as a result, Brazil has since enjoyed an entirely different phase of life, as quiet and peaceful as it was before agitated and bellicose. The money question will settle itself, the resources of the country are abundant, and only require honest, prudent management. Brazil practically monopolizes two great staples of the world,—coffee and rubber,—and has many other sources of production, some of them not yet touched.

There is a natural bond between Brazil and the United States in their territorial greatness and the oneness of their destiny. That Brazil is in quick and sincere sympathy with the latter is shown by her standing alone among the nations of South America in open friendliness during the war between Spain and the United States, and by the promptness with which her government responded to that of her northern sister in the matter of war-ships.

The financial difficulties from which Brazil suffered during the first years of the republic and from which she is so courageously and successfully extricating herself in the face of the most trying obstacles do not date from the inauguration of the republic. As a matter of fact, the revenue and expenditure of the empire had not balanced in one single instance for thirty years previous to its fall; and the yearly deficit had been met by continual borrowing. The Paraguayan war was to blame for the permanent derangement of the country's finances, from which every effort is being made to free her by the present administration. In his message of 1900, President Campos-Salles dwelt chiefly upon the financial situation, pointing out the most important measures to be adopted in order to raise the credit of the country. He assured Congress that the treasury had sufficient funds to meet its payments punctually in the future, without heavy sacrifices or too burdensome taxation. The withdrawal of a large amount of paper money, the establishment of a metallic reserve to



ADMIRAL BALTHAZAR
SILVEIRA,
MINISTER OF MARINE.



DR. EPITACIO DA SILVA PESSOA,
MINISTER OF JUSTICE AND OF THE INTERIOR.

guarantee the paper in circulation, and the rise in the price of coffee, are main factors in the present improved situation.

With a population of twenty millions, the list of liabilities from which Brazil suffers is not alarming, the per capita debt is not two-thirds of that of Great Britain, about double that of the United States, and considerably less than that of any other South American country. The improved condition of the finances in 1899 enabled the government to purchase and destroy 40,000 contos of paper money [about ten million dollars], in accordance with a promise made to foreign creditors. Also 22,000 contos of treasury bills, given for military and naval purposes, were redeemed, and negotiations begun to redeem the internal gold loan of 1868. Expenses in all departments were cut down, and the total expenditures reduced by 17,000 contos. By abolishing the naval and military arsenals, 1200 contos were saved,

and by disbanding a fifth of the standing army, another saving of 7000 contos was effected. The present active army numbers 15,000, military service being obligatory on all Brazilians for three years in the active army and three years in the reserve. The naval force comprises 2 battleships, the *Riachuelo* and *24° de Maio*; 2 smaller armor-clads, the *Maréchal Deodoro* and *Maréchal Floriano*; the cruisers *Tamandaré* and *Barroço*; 2 smaller cruisers, 5 monitors and coast-defence vessels; 12 small cruisers and gun-boats; 3 torpedo cruisers and 8 first-class and 6 third-class torpedo-boats.

An estimate of the floating debt outstanding January 1, 1899, placed it at \$44,920,950. The annual expenditure of the Brazilian government since 1890, leaving out the year 1894, when the expenses of the revolt were included in the estimate, and not counting the service on foreign loans, averaged \$64,262,793 until 1898, when it was reduced to \$54,991,450, and in 1899 to about \$50,000,000. The income from government railroads already leased, the payment of indebtedness by the banks, and the sale of government securities, all go to make up the redemption fund; while the guarantee fund is derived from the gold customs and duties, increased by five per cent.

Important measures will be adopted looking to the development of the country's resources, the improvement of her trade relations, and the extension of her commerce. The question of education is receiving the attention and well-directed efforts of the best men in Brazil, men keen of intellect and quick to grasp the situation, who appreciate the necessity

for good schools, understand the value of modern methods, and have an earnest desire to advance the educational standard at whatever cost.

The historical events marking the close of the nineteenth century were few, but of great interest. The Acre boundary question caused some annoyance to the government toward the end of 1899. The contested territory supplied some of the most valuable rubber of the Amazon trade, and had been in dispute between Brazil and Bolivia for a considerable time, until an arrangement looking toward the amicable adjustment of the rival claims was made by accredited representatives of the two countries. This settlement of the difficulty was, however, unsatisfactory to some of the inhabitants of Acre, and, taking advantage of their discontent, a few leaders attempted to establish an independent republic, hoping in this way to control the production of rubber in this rich section without paying taxes either to Brazil or Bolivia. The two governments united to put down the insurgents, and succeeded in their efforts after a few unimportant engagements.

An event of more than ordinary importance was the official visit, in August, 1899, of the President of Argentina, General Don Julio A. Roca, to the President of Brazil. Aside from its political significance, as a guarantee of friendly relations between the two great South American republics, the occasion was a notable one socially, the Brazilians fully sustaining their world-wide reputation for hospitality in the princely character of the entertainment of their honored guest. A succession of military reviews, banquets, sight-seeing, excursions, receptions, and balls completely transformed the busy metropolis from a great commercial hive into a festive garden of gaiety and pleasure. Gold medals struck off in honor of the event and gold pieces coined especially for this purpose from the product of Brazilian mines were presented by President Campos-Salles to President Roca, who, in return, made many handsome gifts to the charities of Brazil.

The fourth centennial celebration of the discovery of Brazil by Cabral was observed in May, 1900, with appropriate festivities, in every city of the vast republic. In Rio de Janeiro the occasion was characterized by a display of great magnificence. The Portuguese government, in honor of the event, sent a special ambassador, General Cunha,



DR. THOMAZ WALLACE DA GAMA COCHRANE,
SECRETARY OF THE PRESIDENCY.

who arrived on the 3d of May in the cruiser *Don Carlos*, and was received with distinguished honors. The ceremonies lasted several days, one of the most important events being the unveiling and dedication of the monument to the great Cabral in the Praça Alvares Cabral. The illustrious Brazilian sculptor Bernardelli is the author of the monument, which is a fine work of art, representing the famous Portuguese navigator with his companions, Caminha, the chronicler of the discovery, and Henrique the monk, the three founders of the wonderful country which they named "The Land of the Holy Cross." The official reception on the second day in honor of the occasion was a grand function, attended by Ambassador Cunha, the guest of honor, by the President of Brazil and members of his cabinet, the army and navy officials, the foreign diplomatic corps, and the representative society of the capital. Eulogistic addresses were made by Dr. Olyntho de Magalhães, Brazilian Minister of Foreign Affairs, and by the Portuguese ambassador; two distinguished Brazilian poets, Senhor Luiz Guimarães, Jr., and Olavo Billac, contributed poems in honor of the event, and a grand ball gave the evening a brilliant termination. Before the close of the festivities, a numismatic exhibition took place, at which nearly ten thousand coins and medals were displayed, Brazil contributing a quarter of the number, among them nearly all the coins of the country used from the time of the discovery up to the present day. An exhibition of Arts and Industries, opened on the last day, was another feature that proved most interesting, and highly creditable to the advancement and progress of Brazil. Illuminations, parades, military and naval reviews, banquets, excursions, in fact, a continuous succession of entertainments, made the week a memorable one in the history of the capital.

President Campos-Salles paid a return visit to President Roca in October, 1900, receiving a most cordial welcome upon his arrival in the harbor of Buenos Aires, on board the iron-clad *Riachuelo*, accompanied by a large suite, including high officials of the Brazilian government and members of the foreign diplomatic corps in Brazil. The Argentine government had been preparing for months to accord the distinguished visitor a fitting reception, and the magnificent avenues and boulevards of the capital presented a beautiful appearance in decorative dress. The visit of Dr. Campos-Salles lasted about a week, during which he was entertained in the most sumptuous manner. Feasting and the usual sight-seeing that is a feature of such occasions filled the days to their extreme capacity. The whole country was *en fête*, and in the city of Buenos Aires the vehicles and cars were crowded to their utmost capacity day and night to accommodate the eager multitude. The tramways of the capital carried over three million passengers during the week, and the parks and avenues were continually lined with pedestrians. The departure of Dr. Campos-Salles and his friends was attended with much ceremony, addresses being interchanged with felicitous courtesy on both sides. The bond of friendship between the two countries is firmly established, and as their governments may be said to wield the balance of power in South America, the importance of their political unanimity may readily be understood.

The settlement, on December 8, 1900, of a boundary question that had existed for three centuries between Brazil and France constitutes an important event in the history of

the young republic, and especially in the life of the existing administration. The southern limits of French Guiana formed the subject of dispute, but the long-standing differences having failed to be adjusted after numerous conferences, it was agreed, in 1897, to submit the question to a court of arbitration, the members of which were to be named by the Swiss government. The French government having modified its earlier demands, which included territory bounded on the south by the Amazon River, on the east by the Atlantic Ocean, and on the west by the Rio Branco, the contestants defined the disputed territory as comprising an area of about one hundred and fifty thousand square miles, of which, under the award, Brazil secures one hundred and forty-seven thousand square miles, and France three thousand square miles. It is decreed that the boundaries shall be the Oyapok River throughout its course, and the water-shed line of the Tumuc-Humac Mountains from the source of the Oyapok to the Dutch frontier.

Dr. Manoel Ferraz de Campos-Salles, the President of the United States of Brazil, occupies a high place among the leading men of the day as a patriot of unblemished record, a statesman honored for his genius and admired for his courage, an orator unexcelled in the force of his argument and the grace of his eloquence; in character an honorable and upright man, in manner a courteous and distinguished gentleman; in all, a thorough Brazilian who loves his country and gladly gives the years of his life to its service. Born at Campinas, in the State of São Paulo, in 1841, he breathed the atmosphere of political progress and reform from his very infancy, and learned to be a patriot at his mother's knee. As he grew up, the splendid qualities of mind and heart which developed under the careful training of excellent parents were directed by an ambition of pure and lofty purpose toward the study of political conditions and the means for their amelioration. Good fortune gave him the best possible instructors in the principles of political liberty, some of whom had been pupils of the great Dom José Bonifacio de Andrada, the father of Brazilian independence, from his inspired lips first learning the lessons of "order and progress," the present watchword of the nation. Educated in the University of São Paulo, he was, even at an early age, noted for the power and eloquence of his speech in debates, as well as for his devotion to the study of political science. He was graduated with the degree of Bachelor of Laws, and, upon leaving the University, at once joined the Liberal party in politics, whose principles at that time were most nearly allied with republican hopes and aspirations. As one of the editors of *Razão*, he was an influential power from the beginning, and always on the side of advancement and progress. His election to the Provincial Assembly of São Paulo marked the beginning of his official career as a statesman, and was made an opportunity for the promotion of the liberal principles he so earnestly advocated. In 1865, Dr. Campos-Salles was married to his cousin, the amiable and accomplished Dona Anna Gabriella de Campos-Salles, whose excellent judgment, and firm decision of character, have proved a stimulating influence and a source of encouragement to her distinguished husband in every crisis of his important career. As an illustration, the story is told that upon one occasion, when Dr. Campos-Salles was leading a movement against the government of

São Paulo because of its refusal to resign, as was demanded, upon the resignation of Deodoro da Fonseca, its existence being solely a feature of the dictatorship, the brave lady, knowing that no power could daunt him save that most noble of all influences, the thought of loved ones to be protected from harm, though fully appreciating the dangers of his undertaking, said to him, with Spartan firmness, as he left their home to join his followers: "You must forget to-day that you have a wife and children, and remember only your duty to your country." Years before the establishment of the republic called his administrative and executive abilities into special requisition, Dr. Campos-Salles was regarded by his contemporaries as a rising statesman and orator.



AQUEDUCT ROAD TO CORCOVADO.

When, in 1884, he was elected a member of Congress by the Republican party, he carried the war against slavery into parliament and advocated immediate abolition, though he was a large landowner and would suffer from the results to follow the passage of such a law. He persistently and unflinchingly urged this reform until its final accomplishment, in 1888. As a member of the Provisional Government, he successfully introduced most important measures of reform. During his term of office as Minister of Justice, two memorable decrees were issued, of which he was the author; one of the 11th of October, and the other of the 14th of November, 1890, relating to the organization of the judiciary, and on the 7th of January, 1891, he delivered an address on his favorite theme, which has passed into history as one of the most learned discourses in the annals of modern legislation. Resigning from the cabinet of Deodoro da Fonseca when the methods of that President indi-

cated a dictatorship, Dr. Campos-Salles was soon afterward elected to the national Senate by the people of São Paulo, who further honored him, in 1896, by making him their State president. Since his election to the presidency of the republic in 1898, Dr. Campos-Salles has devoted his energies to the administration of national affairs with a determined purpose and willing hand, letting no department of the vast machinery of government escape his watchful attention; with clear judgment and ready wit, under no circumstances does his resolution waver or his will falter in the performance of duty, nor is there any occasion that finds him unprepared to meet its needs or demands. As the chief executive of a government based on principles of pure republicanism, prosperous, enterprising, and progressive

in aim and methods, Dr. Campos-Salles, in every feature of his administration, reflects credit upon the wisdom of the electors in their choice of a national representative.

The present members of President Campos-Salles's cabinet are men of great administrative ability, who have been identified with the progress of the republic from its first organization, and are conscientiously devoted to its highest interests. The Vice-President, Dr. Francisco de Assis Rosa e Silva, is a Pernambucan, who, in former years, served his State with the same singleness of purpose and steadiness of aim that he now brings to bear upon the solution of problems that confront him as a chosen representative of the nation. He is in every way worthy of the high trust reposed in him, and is esteemed by all who know him.

As Minister of Foreign Affairs, Dr. Olyntho de Magalhães is called to the performance of duties corresponding to those of the Secretary of State in the United States. An experienced diplomat and a gifted statesman, his career in public life has been marked by great success wherever circumstances have placed him. At Washington, in Mexico, as Minister to Switzerland, to Russia, whatever has been the nature of the trust reposed in him, he has invariably executed it with credit to himself and honor to his government. Dr. Olyntho de Magalhães speaks English without a foreign accent, and is a good friend of Americans, whether their home be north or south of the equator.

There are few men in Brazil so capable of dealing successfully with difficult financial problems as the present Minister of Finance, Dr. Joaquim Duarte Murtinho, who, in addition to his reputation as a successful statesman, enjoys an exalted place in the confidence of his countrymen as a doctor of medicine without a superior in Brazil. Dr. Murtinho is a gentleman of firm principles and strict fidelity to the obligations resting upon him in his administrative office; the genius he has exhibited in dealing with the involved problems of Brazilian finance, and in solving them satisfactorily, proves how invaluable his services are to the State, and has given him an international reputation.

The Minister of Industry and Public Works, Dr. Alfredo Maia, was appointed in 1899 to succeed Dr. Severino dos Santos Vieira, who resigned upon his election as governor of Bahia. Dr. Maia has been connected with public enterprises of the nature of his present duties for some years,—as Director-General of the Grand Central system of railways, and as an earnest advocate of immigration. He is gifted with rare intellectual qualities, possesses phenomenal energy and activity, and is a typical Brazilian gentleman in his conversational ability, tact, pleasing address, and polished manner.

Dr. Epitacio da Silva Pessoa, Minister of Justice and of the Interior, is one of the most brilliant legislators of Brazil. After a college career of unusual distinction in the Law University of Pernambuco, Dr. Pessoa at once entered the political arena, where he has won successive honors as Deputy to the Constitutional Assembly in 1890, member of the first legislature under the republic, and since 1898 Minister of Justice and of the Interior. An orator of exceptional power and eloquence, and indefatigable in promoting the interests of his department of the administration, Dr. Pessoa is still a young man, with a future promising the greatest success and honor.

The Minister of War, General João Nepomuceno de Medeiros Mallet, is distinguished for his splendid talent as a military commander and organizing chief, and brings to the discharge of his present responsibilities the advantage of wide experience, consummate tact, and special gifts as an administrator of military affairs.

Rear-Admiral José Pinto da Luz, who succeeded Rear-Admiral Carlos Balthazar da Silveira in August, 1899, as Minister of Marine, has, during his brilliant career, filled many posts of honor in the army and navy, having been given command of the corvette *Belmonte* in the Paraguayan war when he was only twenty-three years of age. The distinguished admiral possesses several medals bestowed in recognition of his important services to his country.

In the multitude of affairs that crowd upon the official life of the President, the office of Secretary of the Presidency requires the possession of superior mental gifts and an almost phenomenal capacity for dealing with a great variety of subjects. Dr. Thomaz Wallace da Gama Cochrane, who has charge of this department of the chief executive office, brings to his important duties the exercise of special talent and indomitable energy. Always courteous in attention to those who seek an interview, and willing to give any information possible, provided it does not conflict with official instructions, Dr. Cochrane is greatly esteemed as the President's "right hand," and has the confidence of the entire administration as well as the public.



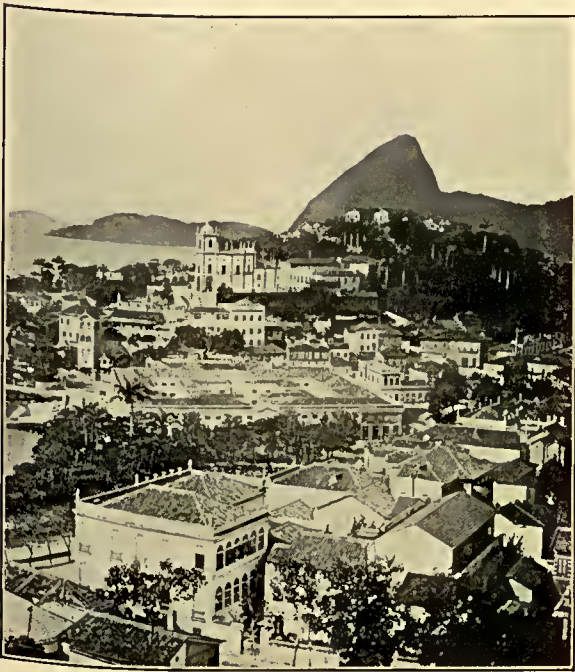
PALACETE ITAMARATY.



CORCOVADO, FROM SYLVESTRE.

CHAPTER VI

THE FEDERAL CAPITAL AND SUBURBS



VISTA OF RIO DE JANEIRO.

THE traditions that cling about the old city of Rio de Janeiro, the Federal capital of Brazil, give it a charm above the beauty of its scenery or the pride of its institutions. Like all great national capitals, Rio has its crowded thoroughfares, fashionable clubs, its fine public buildings, handsome churches, beautiful residences, parks, plazas, and picturesque suburbs; but it also possesses more distinctive characteristics, which give it an importance and an interest few capitals of the world can claim. The Brazilians have more than admiration for the old city, with its record of three centuries and a half of checkered experience: they reverence its associations and traditions. Strangers grow enthusiastic over the quaint, old-fashioned Moorish buildings and curious narrow streets, the public gardens, luxuriant

in tropical verdure, and monuments revealing masterpieces of the sculptor's art; but the patriot loves every foot of ground for the story it tells of hard-fought battles in the cause of freedom, and victories won often against fearful odds. He loves the parks and plazas because they commemorate glorious events in the annals of his country; he points with pride to the monuments that immortalize the bravery of the nation's heroes; every street and alley is dear to him, recalling by its name or associations some decisive struggle in the cause of liberty; even the majestic encircling hills and the sun-kissed islands of the bay appeal to him rather for the memory of heroic deeds wrought in their midst and of great

men they have sheltered than for their far-famed beauty; São Christovão, Santa Theresa, Tijuca, are names of deeper significance from the historical incidents that belong to them than from their picturesqueness; Paqueta claims more honor as the last residence of the "Father of Brazilian independence" than as the most beautiful island in the finest harbor of the world. Every feature of the old city bears the impress of epoch-making; in passing along its streets, visiting the places of interest, and listening to its history, one is reading the heart of the nation. For nearly two centuries, as the chief seat of government, it has been the central scene in all the great political struggles, pulsating with excitement in every crisis, gay and brilliant with the rejoicings of every victory, so vitally identified with the national life in all the changes through which the country has passed that its existence alone assures the preservation of the national archives. It shows many surviving features of the colonial days, when neither vast wealth nor great leisure permitted luxurious living, though much was accomplished of an important and lasting character; among other things the construction of the famous Carioca aqueduct, a monument of architectural grandeur, which is as solid to-day as when first built, one hundred and fifty years ago; the São Sebastião church, built in 1567, in honor of the city's patron saint, now the oldest church in Brazil, within whose walls rest the ashes of the city's founder, Estacio de Sá; and the church of Candelaria, built in 1600, rebuilt in 1775, and completely remodelled at the close of the last [nineteenth] century, a magnificent edifice to-day. Everywhere are recollections of the transformation that followed the arrival of the royal court, the elevation of an insignificant province to a powerful kingdom, and the change from a provincial capital to the chief seat of royalty with all the pomp, splendor, and gaiety attending the presence of a rich and extravagant court; many of the city's finest institutions, theatres, churches, schools, and parks, date from this period, to which belongs the origin of the National Museum, the National Library, the Military Academy, the celebrated Botanical Gardens; the Church of Sacramento, for which, as the story goes, part of the necessary funds were secured by King João's chief cook, who offered delicious stews in return for donations; the old theatre, which was burned as a judgment upon the builder, who stole the stones intended for the construction of a cathedral; also a number of hospitals, asylums, and other charities. The dramatic incidents connected with the establishment of the empire are perpetuated in the street names of "Ypiranga," "Sete de Setembro," and the "Praça d'Acclamação" [recently changed to Praça da Republica], respectively commemorating the place where the independence of Brazil had its birth, the date of that event, and the formal acclamation of Dom Pedro I. as Emperor; an equestrian statue of Dom Pedro in the Praça Constituição [now Praça Tiradentes] represents him in the act of shouting the watchword "Independencia ou Morte!" after having read the arbitrary message of the Cortes at Lisbon. The statue of the great liberator Dom José Bonifacio de Andrada also recalls that important period, as well as the title "muito leal e heroica cidade" [very loyal and heroic city], bestowed by the emperor on the capital city in recognition of services rendered in his cause.

Traces of the turbulent reign of Dom Pedro I. are still in existence, and gossips point out the favorite haunts of that pleasure-loving emperor, at the same time directing attention to the churches and charities blessed by the ministrations of his unhappy consort, the Austrian Archduchess Leopoldina, whose piety and devotion as a wife and mother form such a contrast to the characteristics of her sister, the selfish, frivolous, and unfaithful Marie Louise of France, wife of Napoleon Bonaparte. Many of the intellectual attractions of the capital, such as the Conservatory of Music, the Astronomical Observatory, Polytechnic School, Naval Academy, and the colleges of law and medicine, owe their original establishment to the period of the second emperor, though greatly improved since that time. The handsome monument to the Duque de Caxias, erected under the present government, in



THE MUNICIPAL CHAMBER, RIO DE JANEIRO.

the plaza named in his honor, commemorates his splendid generalship in the Paraguayan war during this régime; the "Rua Riachuelo" preserves the name of the most glorious battle of the war, as, also, does Brazil's most famous iron-clad; and the "Rua Voluntarios da Patria," one of the principal streets of the city, is a lasting reminder of the brave company of the "country's volunteers" who won the laurels of military glory for Brazil against the dictator Lopez. The city is written all over with reminiscences of the revolution of 1889; there is scarcely a corner without some share in its eventful occurrences. The chief fashionable thoroughfare, the "Rua do Ouvidor," counted among the most interesting streets of the world as a popular resort for idlers, fashionable shoppers, club-men, and

politicians, played a conspicuous part in the drama of that memorable occasion, when Dr. Ruy Barbosa rode along its narrow promenade proclaiming the fall of the empire, and the establishment of the republic; idlers forgot to ogle pretty women in their temporary excitement about the news, club-men grew animated with the fresh subject of gossip, politicians collected in little groups to discuss the probabilities, and even the busy shoppers turned to listen. It is a feature of the Rua do Ouvidor that its *habitués* include all classes and conditions of people, and its interests range from absorbing questions of national government to critical analyses of new importations in neckties. The importance of the final judgment of the Rua do Ouvidor upon all matters, whether the establishment of a new government, the appearance of a new face, or the cut of a new coat, is impressed upon every visitor. It is a composite of all the noted streets in the world in one little alley scarcely wide enough for a dozen men to walk abreast. The Rua do Ouvidor received its name from the judge of the Court of Appeals, called the "ouvidor" [one who hears], who had his residence on this street. The most important point of interest from its relation to the events of the last revolution is the Praça da Republica, the chief theatre of action on that memorable day which witnessed a few bold strokes so well directed that their aim accomplished the downfall of one government and the successful proclamation of another within twenty-four hours,—a record for which the world offers no parallel.

With all its changes, the Rio of to-day is in spirit thoroughly republican, and, but for those external evidences that prove it "a city with a past," might be supposed to have been an exponent of the best principles of republicanism during all the centuries of its varied career. Retaining in appearance, however, something belonging to each period of its history, the attractive old capital seems to possess the secret of growing more fascinating with advancing age. Like the "royal serpent of the Nile,"—

"Age cannot wither her, nor custom stale
Her infinite variety."

To the "Fluminense," his Rio possesses this rare charm of unfailing attraction in the superlative degree.

"Fluminense," the name applied to a native of Rio, is a survival of an error made by the early discoverers, who thought the bay of Rio was a river, and named it Rio de Janeiro, "River of January;" the word "Fluminense" signifies belonging to a river. "Diario Fluminense," "Collegio Fluminense," are instances of the popular use of the expression. A "Carioca" is a native of Rio born within a certain radius of Carioca Square and the fountain which supplies the famous water from the surrounding hills; and, as the origin of the London cockney's title from Bow Bells is woven about with interesting stories, so there are traditions many and varied relating to the Carioca, the Indians ascribing marvellous powers to this water, supposed to impart the gift of poetry and oratory, inspiring those who drank of it, just as the "Castalian fount" of the Greek supplied the divine gifts of the Muses. The peculiar beauty and charm of this tradition lies in its application to the Carioca of

to-day, the representative of "a nation of orators." The history of the city of Rio, or, to give its full name, São Sebastião do Rio de Janeiro, dates from 1566, when Estacio de Sá, nephew of the governor-general of Brazil at that time, effected a landing with a few colonists at a place near the Sugar-Loaf Mountain and fortified a small settlement which he called Villa Velha ["Old Town"]. The next year, the governor-general transferred the town to the present site, and gave it the name of São Sebastião, in honor of the King of Portugal. Repeated invasions by the French threatened the city for several years, until an arrangement was finally made which resulted in their abandoning the attack permanently. Rio represents nearly four centuries of civilization on the Western Continent, and has been the chief seat of the national government for two centuries, first as capital of



PAQUETA.

the Kingdom of Brazil, Portugal, and Algarves, then as the imperial capital, and since 1889 the Federal capital of the United States of Brazil. The influence of the Portuguese occupation is most apparent in the older parts of the city, where the streets are very narrow and houses are built according to Portuguese ideas of architecture; the streets have no curbing or raised sidewalk, and pedestrians must depend on their wits to secure the right of way, though, as a mitigation of this evil, vehicles are forbidden to pass on certain streets and are only permitted to go in one direction along others. The Rua do Ouvidor is reserved exclusively for foot-passengers, except on special occasions, and on the Rua do Rosario, Rua Quitanda, and others an index finger at the street corner points out in which direction vehicles may pass. In hiring a cab by the hour, it is sometimes economical to stop the driver and have him wait while one walks across the street to a store on the opposite corner, instead of having

him cover the distance by the prescribed rule which may take one around several blocks before reaching it. In the more modern sections of the city, the streets are wider and admit of a double line of street-cars, or "bonds," as they are called,—a name given them by the common people, who, having heard a great deal of talk about "bonds" in connection with the proposed enterprise, when the cars finally appeared, hailed them as "those American bonds," the name they are now called by all over Brazil. There are no driving parks or grand boulevards in Rio for the display of handsome turn-outs, though the season at Petropolis gives every opportunity for the enjoyment of delightful drives along broad avenues and among picturesque hills; there are, however, carriages and cabs for hire that meet all requirements, and "tilburies" that are apparently indispensable to the needs of the Fluminense, who hails one as he is leaving home for his place of business in the morning, and while the covered two-wheeler whisks along at a lively rate, comfortably devotes his attention to the morning paper or his mail-bag, or to the beauties of the bay along the shore of which he passes on his way to "the city." Only one passenger, who sits beside the driver, is permitted to ride in a tilbury at a time, and it is seldom that a lady makes use of this method of transit. An amusing episode which occurred in Rio during a recent sojourn there of two American ladies proves how jealously the tilbury fraternity guard their rights. The two ladies had arrived from Petropolis in a pouring rain, and found all the carriages at the Rio landing already engaged; only a solitary tilbury stood at the curb. The driver was signalled, and agreed to take them to their hotel; and they, ignorant of the law, crowded into the rather circumscribed space which the vehicle afforded, and were conveyed to their destination. Imagine their dismay, on arriving at the hotel, to see the horse's bridle seized by a policeman, the driver surrounded by angry and gesticulating jehus, and behind them an imposing line of tilburies that had been increasing in number all along the route from the landing, and soon filled the court of the hotel, their owners joining in the hubbub until peace was finally restored by the payment of two fares, or rather the hire of two tilburies.

Though not boasting of many broad and beautiful drives, there are several pleasing promenades in Rio along the shores of the bay. The "Praia Botafogo," one of the oldest residence quarters of Rio, has many beautiful homes looking out over the harbor, and attractive promenades that offer views of surpassing splendor. "Flamengo" is also a picturesque "praia," or beach, and Lorangeiras, while not having the advantage of the harbor prospect, is a favorite residence section, possessing many palatial houses, charming "chacararas," or small villas, and gardens bright with tropical coloring. Cattete has special claims as the location of the President's palace, a handsome white stone structure occupying a favorable site, with excellent views of the surrounding country, its spacious grounds extending from the Rua Cattete to the Flamengo, and presenting a variety of beautiful features, including an avenue of royal palms, charming promenades overlooking the bay, flower-beds rich with choice specimens, and attractive rustic seats embowered in green; a private bathing pavilion is one of the luxuries belonging to the palace, its appointments being elegant and

elaborate. The entrance to the palace is guarded by massive bronze doors, a sentry standing immovable as a statue on the marble steps; in the vestibule, marble columns divide the main passage from adjoining reception and audience rooms. The offices of State are all handsomely fitted up, and lose much of the severe style necessary to their purpose by a charming outlook on the palace grounds through venetian windows opening on a veranda by which the garden may be reached. In the upper rooms of the palace are the apartments of the President and his family; these are furnished in excellent taste, and contain many choice treasures in valuable statuary, costly hangings, rare old curios, plate,



SUMMIT OF CORCOVADO, RIO DE JANEIRO.

and interesting pictures of historical as well as artistic worth. During the presidency of Dr. Campos-Salles, the Cattete palace has been the scene of distinguished hospitality, and at the numerous functions honored by her presence the "first lady in the land" of Brazil has won all hearts by her rare personal qualities. Their beautiful and accomplished children add grace and spirit to the life of the executive mansion. The tropical luxuriance of the palace grounds is equalled and sometimes even surpassed in the public parks of the city, as in the Praça Tiradentes, with its beautiful garden, in the midst of which stands the equestrian statue of Dom Pedro I., the work of a French sculptor, Luiz Rochet, from the designs of a Brazilian professor of historical painting, Senhor João Maximiano Mafra. In the Largo

de São Francisco de Paula, at the head of the Rua do Ouvidor, is the statue, already mentioned, of José Bonifacio de Andrada e Silva, erected in 1872. The Praça da Republica, formerly "Campo da Acclamação," the central scene of most of the political demonstrations connected with the history of the city, has a splendid garden covering the greater part of it; overlooking it are the National Museum, the City Hall, the Mint, and the Grand Central Railway station. The "Praça Duque de Caxias" has a pretty little garden and a life-like statue of the general for whom it is named, the unveiling of which, by President Roca, of Argentina, during his visit to Brazil in 1899, was an occasion attended with great pomp and ceremony. Facing it, at the entrance to the Rua Lorangeiras, is the Church of La Gloria, modelled after the famous Madeleine of Paris. Most beautiful of all the city's gardens, and most ancient, is the "Passeio Publico," originally opened to the public in 1783, during the viceroyalty of Vasconcellos e Souza; on one side, the garden overlooks the bay from a high terrace, the view from this point making it a favorite resort.

The public institutions of the capital belong to every period of her history. The National Museum is probably the oldest, having been founded during the reign of King Dom João VI. It had been the original intention to make it a museum of natural history, but the present collection includes all kinds of rare objects of scientific or historical interest. Foreign naturalists have contributed largely to its stores, in addition to the valuable specimens furnished by Brazilian explorers. The museum is constantly increasing the number and value of its different departments, which afford an excellent opportunity for the student to become acquainted with the anthropological and archæological discoveries made within recent years in this part of the globe. In 1876, the National Museum began the publication of its archives, several volumes of which have already appeared. Among these papers are important contributions from the late Professor Hartt on the archæology and ethnology of the Amazons, from Drs. Lacerda and Peixoto on Indian crania, from Drs. Ladislau Netto and Ferreira Penna on Brazilian archæology, from Professor Orville A. Derby on geology, from Dr. Lacerda on the physiological action of snake-poisons, and from Professor Fritz Müller on insects and crustaceans. Dr. C. A. White, of the National Museum at Washington, has contributed a splendid monograph on the crustaceous invertebrate fossils, numbering over two hundred species, mostly new, collected by the geological commission, and Messrs. Derby and Rathbun have added monographs on the carboniferous and Devonian fauna. Dr. Barbosa Rodrigues, the present director of the Botanical Gardens at Rio, has written many important works on his discoveries of new varieties of palms and orchids, of which he has made a specialty, as well as on his studies in ethnology in the fertile field of the Amazons. Among the curiosities at the museum, the Brazilian meteorite "Bendigo" has a very important place. It weighs nearly five tons, and was discovered first, in 1781, by a farmer, near Canudos, in the interior of Bahia, while looking for his cattle. After many unsuccessful attempts to move the mass, it was finally transported to Rio, nearly a year being required for the work of conveying it to the port of Bahia for shipment. Professor Derby, an American, and a recognized authority on such matters, says it may be five or six centuries old.

Next to the National Museum, the greatest scientific interest attaches to the National Library, which contains a splendid collection of more than two hundred thousand books, manuscripts, and other important documents, and has been a valued possession of the capital for nearly a hundred years, having been founded by King João soon after his arrival in Brazil, the nucleus consisting of a valuable collection of books from the Ajuda palace, in Lisbon. On the establishment of the empire, an enormous indemnity was demanded by the Portuguese government for the Ajuda books, which was afterward paid. Additions from time to time have brought the library up to its present standard, prominent among the contributions being the library of Dom José Bonifacio de Andrada. The



VISTA AT SYLVESTRE, SUBURB OF RIO.

Conservatory of Music, where the world-renowned composer Carlos Gomes received his training, and the Academy of Fine Arts, which during its existence under the present government has had the famous sculptor Bernardelli as one of its presidents, are proofs of the encouragement that genius receives in this country and of the artistic predilections of its æsthetic people. In front of the Academy of Fine Arts is a statue of João Caetano, the greatest dramatic artist of Brazil in the interpretation of the French romantic writers. The "Casa da Moeda" [Mint] of Rio is an institution quite unique in character. In addition to coining money, it prints the revenue and postage stamps. Its numismatic collection is

very valuable. The designing and engraving departments are especially interesting, as well as the mechanical work in the stamp department, where hundreds of small boys are employed. This feature of the Mint's management deserves particular notice. Dr. Ennes de Souza, for ten years director of the Mint, organized a charity in connection with it that has proved perfectly satisfactory, resulting in the education of hundreds of poor orphans, not only in "reading, writing, and arithmetic," but in the practical use of this primary instruction. The working-hours of the small beneficiaries are so divided that there is always a certain number in the class-room at lessons while the others are working in the stamp-rooms, or, if sufficiently advanced, in the designing or engraving rooms. Connected with the Mint are all the accessories of a large charitable institution, such as a free dispensary, gymnasium, and similar advantages. The building of the handsome edifice in which "the coin of the realm" receives its guarantee required ten years, and cost about a million dollars in gold. The government printing-office, or "Typographia Nacional," occupies one of the handsomest buildings in the city. It was three years under construction, and cost half a million dollars in gold. The architecture is attractive and appropriate, and the ornamentation harmonizes with the purposes of the establishment, the façade having statues of Gutenberg, Faust, Schoeffer, and Coster. The offices, composing-rooms, press-rooms, and other departments are spacious and conveniently arranged, having all modern requirements, including machinery for type-setting, stereotyping, and lithographing. On the upper floor are large halls for exhibitions and lectures. The *Diario Official* is published here, also the *Brazilian Review*, a financial weekly printed in English. The "Alfandega," the national custom-house, is situated in the Rua Visconde de Itaborahy, with its main entrance in front of the Rua General Camara. It is open for business every day from 9 A.M. until 3 P.M., and presents a lively scene during these hours. The building is in a convenient locality for shippers and business men, and its offices are thoroughly equipped for the work that passes through them. The custom-house methods are not very different from those pursued in other countries, except that its business is dispatched with less promptness than in countries where the climate is more stimulating.

Of the government buildings in Rio, the Palacete Itamaraty, the official residence of the Minister of Foreign Affairs, is specially interesting as having been the scene of many important social affairs in the official history of the capital. The grand ball given in honor of the President of Argentina by the President of Brazil on the occasion of the former's visit to Rio in 1899 was one of the most brilliant of the many elaborate State functions that have been celebrated within its walls. It is a handsome building, the interior presenting a very attractive appearance, with its marble vestibule, broad staircases, and elegantly furnished salas. The "Palacio da Agricultura" and the "Thesouro" are well-built, solid structures, containing the reception-rooms and offices of the Ministers of Agriculture and of Finance, and presenting an air of great activity during the hours open to visitors. The war and marine arsenals occupy conspicuous locations on the water-front, their dependencies, such as hospitals, machine-shops, and store-houses, adjoining. The palace of the

Chamber of Deputies, in the Rua da Misericórdia, and that of the Senate, in the Rua do Areal, have historical interest as the scenes of stirring debates and oratorical triumphs in the cause of patriotism. The head-quarters of the National Guard is on the Praça Tiradentes, where meetings are held, and, when occasion requires, drills and manœuvres practised under the direction of the commanding officer, Colonel Fernando Mendes de Almeida, who, in addition to the prestige of military commander of the largest national guard in South America, has more than a national reputation through his great daily, the *Jornal do Brasil*.

Rio is pardonably proud of her splendid water-supply. The old Carioca aqueduct, completed in 1723, at a cost of a quarter of a million dollars, and rebuilt in 1750, was the first water-works system inaugurated in the Federal capital. The structure is four miles long, and brings the water-supply from Santa Theresa hill, across a gap spanned by two ranges of stone arches sixty feet above the street, down to the Largo da Carioca, where it terminates in a stone reservoir and fountain. The modern Rio de Ouro system



CHURCH OF THE CANDELARIA, RIO DE JANEIRO.

brings the supply from two mountain streams in the Tinguá Mountains, the main receiving-reservoir being the Pedregulho, near São Christovão, with a capacity of forty million litres. The Post-Office is one of the many modern structures that are gradually changing the face of Rio, and giving it an appearance more American than European. It is a handsome edifice, substantially built, facing on the Rua Primeiro de Março [First of March Street], and covering a whole square in the centre of the commercial portion of the city. The building was originally designed by the Commercial Association for an Exchange, but this idea was abandoned. The "Bolsa," or Exchange, occupies a handsome new building on the Rua Primeiro de Março, the plans for which were completed in 1880, though the construction was not finished until recently. The City Hall, situated on the Praça da Republica, between the Rua do General Camara and Rua de São Pedro, is regarded as one of the finest structures of the capital: it was built in 1882. The municipal buildings, schools, and charities reflect the greatest credit upon the city's enterprise, and show evidence of a progressive spirit in the controlling powers. The "Casa de Correção," the euphonious title given to the penitentiary, is an instance of the modern methods of prison authorities in Brazil, the prisoners being well cared for, and required to follow some trade during the term of their incarceration.

During the winter season, the opera-houses and theatres are in gala dress. The Lyrico and São Pedro de Alcantara are the largest and handsomest of these places of amusement, and in the interior arrangement resemble those of France. Many world-wide celebrities have delighted their appreciative audiences, among others the great Salvini, Ristori, Bernhardt, Gottschalk, and Thalberg. João Caetano and his wife Estella were Brazilian actors of remarkable talent who at one time attracted large audiences in Rio. The opera "O Guarany," by Carlos Gomes, is frequently presented here. The "Faculdade de Medicina," Polytechnic School, Advanced School of War, Military Academy, College of Marines, Naval Academy, free Law Schools, National Gymnasium, Normal School, Lyceum of Industrial and Mechanical Arts, and Benjamin Constant Institute are established in handsome buildings, also the charities of the Misericordia Hospital, Hospicio Nacional de Alienados, Hospital Paula Candido, Lazareto da Ilha Grande, the Hospital Beneficencia Portuguesa, Beggars' Asylum, Orphans' Asylum, Lepers' Hospital at São Christovão, Instituto Profissional at Engenho-Velho, Asylum for Deaf Mutes, Insane Asylum, and others. The churches of greatest historical and architectural interest are the Cathedral, Candelaria, Carmo, Gloria, São Sebastião, São Francisco de Paula, and Sacramento. In connection with the Department of Public Health, the city has an excellent Laboratory of Bacteriology.

The principal social club of the Brazilian capital is the "Cassino Fluminense," which numbers on its membership roll the most distinguished and influential men of Rio, as well as many throughout the whole of Brazil. Its entertainments are given on a scale of great magnificence, invitations being extended only to the most favored guests. The Cassino ball in honor of President Roca, of Argentina, during his visit to Rio in 1899, was as important a function socially as the Itamaraty ball was officially. There are a number of clubs among the foreign residents, English, German, French, and Italian.

Every year sees an improvement in the appearance of the city, in her parks and streets, as well as in the increased number of public buildings and the modern style of their architecture. With a population estimated at nearly a million, Rio can claim an important place among the large cities of the world.

In the pride of her beautiful suburbs, Rio de Janeiro eclipses every other city in the world. Rome and Byzantium boast of their "seven hills," but the Brazilian metropolis can claim not only twice that number supporting her graceful form, but seven times as many watchful summits forever on guard around her. But little imagination is evoked in picturing these lofty peaks as her "perpetual defenders," jealously overlooking from their heights the fairest picture in Nature's paradise. First in staunch loyalty is the faithful old hunchback, "Corcovado," not an ugly and ungainly Caliban, but as proud and noble in his rugged, unconventional shape as if Nature had made him an Apollo; and no one finds fault with the giant's deformity, which has the charm of strength and originality; every one loves to visit the splendid monster in whose presence all the world looks beautiful, and most beautiful the fair city that he watches over with such vigilance. Vying with each other in grenadier service are the two brothers, "Dois Irmãos," close to the sea. The weather-beaten front of the Gavea tells of centuries of facing the elements in



TIJUCA FOREST.

rough weather and fine; to this grim old veteran the city of three and a half centuries is merely a new toy that will be broken and lost some fine day, just as other playthings have gone to pieces in the centuries of the past, and left scarcely a trace of their mechanism. Santa Theresa, like a guardian angel, bends close to the beating heart of the city, whose children she takes in her sheltering arms when the plague threatens, fanning them with the breeze-laden branches of her beautiful trees and bathing them in her cool fountains when the torrid summer stifles with its hot breath, and blazing suns burn the brightness out of

their eyes; deliciously soothing and sweet and lovely is good Santa Theresa. And Tijuca! In strong contrast to the uncompromising outlines of the Gavea, sweeps the graceful contour of this suburban giant, with a saucy parrot's beak, "Bico do Papagaio," peeping over one shoulder, and a whole Brobdingnagian retinue in attendance. With head high among the clouds, the splendid colossus seems proudly indifferent to the fate of the capital city; but in the summer season there is no better friend of Rio than this haughty aristocrat, gorgeously arrayed in rich tropical foliage, sparkling with the jewels that flash from innumerable waterfalls; sometimes with darkened brow frowning in sullen gloom as if under a terrible threat of the storm-king's thunder, and again smiling frank and bold in the face of the sunshine as it lights up the blue dome of the eternal skies. The Sugar-Loaf, "Pão de Assucar," guarding one side of the narrow entrance to the bay, offers an æsthetic nibble to the imagination, and a splendid promise of the feast that lies within the harbor's portals.

With the charm of her beautiful environment, Rio possesses unrivalled attractions as a most delightful place of residence. An excellent street-car system makes the remote suburbs easily accessible, and even during the oppressive seasons of the year a half hour's ride will take the resident into an atmosphere of delicious coolness. From the Largo Carioca, the central starting-point for all the main lines, an inclined railway connects with Santa Theresa, the route offering one of the most picturesque views imaginable; the summit presents a succession of terraces, with villas looking invitingly out among the trees. The old Carioca aqueduct runs along the side of the road, a connecting-link between modern and mediæval industry. In the distance may be seen Tijuca, and the Tinguá Mountains, from which the city gets its chief water-supply. The old Santa Theresa convent, which occupies the eastern side of Santa Theresa Mountain and belonged to an order of Carmelite nuns, was founded in 1742, though it was not until 1781 that the recluses were permitted to take the veil of Santa Theresa, and only twenty-one were admitted. During the early days, it was quite customary for husbands to place their wives in this convent for safe-keeping before leaving the city on a military expedition.

There are two routes to the summit of Corcovado; one is by way of Santa Theresa, taking the tram-car from Paineiras, and the other direct from the city, by a railway of the Riggerbach system, which goes almost to the top of the peak. The direct road from the Cosme Velho station, in Lorangeiras, to the summit of Corcovado, is about two miles and a half long, and the actual ascent is two thousand and eighty feet, or about one in six. Corcovado is the great show-place of Brazil, and it is doubtful if anywhere in the world Nature offers a grander treat. From the point where the train leaves the station at its base until the eager passenger is put down near the top of the mountain, there is a constant feast of the beautiful; and when the enraptured traveller has been surfeited with the delights before him, a short climb brings him to the little pavilion that crowns the mountain's summit, where, looking out over the prospect, all the previous sights seem empty by comparison, and he is speechless before the lavish splendor of this garden of the gods. No language is adequate to describe the view. The hills are grouped around in solemn grandeur; the picturesque

islands appear like pretty naiads decked for a holiday; the blue skies, with their floating white clouds, are mirrored in the clear depths of the bay; the city lolls gracefully in the sunshine as if all the world existed to do her homage! It is not always possible to translate into the speech of the tongue the language of the soul, whose expressions are best read in quivering lips, tear-dimmed eyes, quickened pulses, stifling heart-beats, and the glow of a tell-tale cheek.

The suburb of Tijuca lies about six or seven miles from the business part of the city, with which it is connected by a street railway. Many Rio people make it their summer



MISERICORDIA HOSPITAL, RIO DE JANEIRO.

residence, and others have homes there all the year round; several of the cabinet ministers of Brazil live in this suburb, and the Italian legation occupies an admirable position on one of the hills, from which the view is unsurpassed. The suburb is built in a basin-shaped valley, twelve hundred feet above the sea, with mountains rising on each side, and the valley itself gradually sloping to the sea. The finest view is obtained from the point on the Tijuca road called "Alto da Boa Vista," from which the broad Atlantic may be seen to the west, with the Gavea and other attractive points filling in the picture. The peak of Tijuca rises three thousand three hundred and sixty-two feet above the sea, the highest point in the immediate suburbs of Rio. A very beautiful feature of the scenery is the

waterfall leaping and tumbling over the rocks; there are two, the larger being the "Cascata Grande," as the name indicates, and another, the "Cascatinha," or small waterfall. There are also grottoes, rocks, and gullies of every conceivable form and character.

The Gavea and Copacobana are reached by street-cars on what is known as the Botanical Garden line, the oldest system of street railways in South America, constructed and opened to traffic, in 1868, by an American company. "Gavea" signifies a sail, and from its sail-like shape the huge mass takes its name, which is also applied to the suburb at its foot, one of the most popular of the capital, and a favorite resort on holidays. A few bold climbers have scaled the heights of the mountain to its summit, but it is a task not often attempted. In the vicinity of the Gavea, at the summit of the pass that separates it from Corcovado, is the famous "Chinese view" (so called because the road from that point down to the Botanical Garden was built by Chinese labor), from which a superb picture of the ocean is seen, also the "praia," or beach, of Botafogo; the road runs through a bit of virgin forest, and gives charming glimpses of scenery along its course. The Botanical Garden is situated on the road that leads to the Gavea. Copacobana has a special attraction for excursionists, its flat rocks which stretch out into the sea offering fine facilities for fishing, while the excellent beach is a paradise for bathers. A picturesque little chapel is built on a small knoll looking out over the sea. The suburb of São Christovão was one of the most important points of interest under the empire, as the residence of the sovereign for nearly a century. The Imperial Palace occupied a commanding site, with beautiful gardens, fountains, parks, and other attractive features. "Villa Isabel" lies at the base of the Tijuca Mountains, and has attractive public gardens and broad modern streets. Caju and Engenho Novo are reached by street-car lines from all parts of the city. From the Gavea an excellent view is offered of the Lake "Rodrigo de Freitas," which lies quite close to the harbor entrance, separated from the ocean by a narrow strip of land, a mere sand-bank over which the water sometimes cuts a passage. Along the street which follows the shore of the lake are some interesting old country-houses and many handsome modern villas. The view from this point is very attractive, the Gavea, Tijuca, Dois Irmãos, and the famous Avenue of Palms in the Botanical Garden being in plain view.

In the suburban districts of Rio are many flourishing towns, within easy distance by railway or street-car lines. Of these, Campinho contains the laboratory of pyrotechnics, which supplies one of the most important accessories to the fiestas of the capital; Cascadura has a street-car line, and a well-equipped hospital under the direction of the Misericórdia. Besides the attractions of her neighboring hills, Rio has, in the beautiful islands that dot the harbor, possessions of the greatest charm and interest. Not only are many of them desirable places of residence from the beauty of their scenery, but their salubrious climate gives them even a higher value. The most famous of these, both for its picturesqueness and the delicious purity of its atmosphere, is the island of Paqueta, the chosen health-resort of many invalids from the capital, and for several years, from 1832 to 1838, the home of the great Brazilian statesman, Dom José Bonifácio de Andrada.

A handsome service of porcelain, made from the kaolin of this island, was presented to King Dom João VI., in 1815, during the residence of the Portuguese court in Brazil. Paqueta is the second largest of all the islands in the bay, Governador having first place in this respect. "Ilha do Governador," or Governor's Island, is about fifty miles in circumference, and derives special importance as the site of large brick and tile factories, and because of the location here of the Sailors' Hospital. The island was named in honor of one of the early governors of Rio de Janeiro, who owned it at the beginning of the seventeenth century, having purchased it for less than a thousand dollars. Its history is quite interesting, even from the



GRAND CASCADE, TIJUCA.

time of the discovery of Rio de Janeiro, when that city's founder, Estacio de Sá, was mortally wounded by an arrow during a combat with the Indians in Paranaquã, their chief settlement on the island, and a large and thriving village. During the residence of the Portuguese court in Brazil, a large portion of the island was reserved for the royal hunting-grounds. Ilha das Cobras, also called Madeira in the early days when it supplied the wood for building the city of Rio de Janeiro, lies at that point of the bay close to the commercial centre of the city. It was fortified in colonial days, and in its prison have been incarcerated many of the notable men of Brazilian history, among others, the leaders of the republican revolt in 1789, including "Tiradentes," who suffered execution for his crime,

the poet Gonzaga, Maciel, Alvarenga Peixoto, Freire de Andrade, and Rozendo Costa. "Enchadas" is the name of the rocky island upon which is located the Naval Academy. From its quarries the stone was taken for the churches and residences of the Rua Primeiro de Março, "Praia Dom Manoel," and other structures.

Boa Viagem, signifying Good Voyage, is chiefly interesting as the site of the celebrated church of Nossa Senhora da Boa Viagem, the patron saint of sailors. The church is very old, and, though partially rebuilt in 1860, is falling into ruins. The native Jack Tars still worship at its shrine, however, and burn candles in supplication for the good offices of the gentle mediator for toilers on the deep. Between the islands Governador and Cobras lies the Bom Jesus, where King Dom João VI. delighted to spend a part of each year during his stay in Brazil, and where the fiesta of São Francisco de Assis was annually celebrated at his expense. The magnificent ceremony attending the occasion of the birth of the king's first granddaughter, Dona Maria da Gloria, afterward Queen Maria II. of Portugal, which was performed on this island, was one of the important events of his reign. In the chapel of a military museum on the island rest the remains of General Osorio, the great leader of the Brazilian army in the Paraguayan war. The total number of islands in the bay is estimated at nearly a hundred, some of them picturesque and fertile, useful for agricultural or manufacturing purposes, and desirable for residence, while others are merely bare brown rocks without so much as a wisp of green relieving the sombre hue of their fantastic shapes.



STATUE OF GENERAL OSORIO, RIO DE JANEIRO.



THE BAMBOOS, BOTANICAL GARDEN, RIO DE JANEIRO.

CHAPTER VII

THE BOTANICAL GARDEN



LILY-POND IN BOTANICAL GARDEN.

THE tropical luxuriance of Brazilian forests and their infinite changes of form and color are epitomized in the famous Jardim Botânico, in many respects the most remarkable horticultural garden in the world. Rare treasures from foreign lands have been culled to embellish it, and the choicest specimens of native flora are preserved in its artistic settings. Situated picturesquely on the border of the Lagoa de Rodrigo Freitas, a large suburban lake of the capital, separated from the sea by only a strip of sand, the spacious grounds stretch out over an area of nearly two thousand acres extending to the base of the frowning Gavea, and looking up to the near peaks of Corcovado and Dois Irmãos. The main entrance, erected in 1893, is a handsome gateway ornamented on each side with splendid specimens of the *litchia* and the

carrapeteira, and looking down the Garden through a vista of surpassing loveliness. The ancient portico, surmounted by the royal arms of Portugal, which belonged to the grounds when used for a powder-factory in colonial days, is still in an excellent state of preservation, and presents one of the very attractive features of the Garden. The magnificent avenue of royal palms that extends from the main entrance for a distance of nearly half a mile across the grounds, numbering one hundred and fifty trees of uniform height, and presenting the appearance of a grand colonnade supporting a delicate arch of green nearly a hundred feet from the ground, is among the botanical wonders of the world; it is

unique in its tall stateliness, and, with the alley of palms which crosses it at right angles, extending nearly two thousand feet and numbering one hundred and forty-two trees of the height of seventy-five feet, more or less, offers a sight unequalled on the face of the globe. Half-way down this superb *passaio*, where the alley of palms crosses it, the sparkling play of a fountain lends additional charm and effectiveness to the scene. The whole park is laid out on a plan which leaves nothing to be desired in point of general attractiveness. It is crossed by five streets, thirteen *alamedas*, four foot-paths, and a number of pretty by-ways leading into quiet little nooks and arbors of green that are

delightful resting-places for the overtaxed sight-seer.



AVENUE OF PALMS, BOTANICAL GARDEN.

On the northern side of the Garden, a shady avenue of the gnarled and knotted mango-trees, with their heavily-laden boughs, invites the eye by the very contrast which they present to the severely correct and stately lines of the royal palms. They are plebeian in appearance, but far more useful, with their umbrageous foliage and the delicious fruit they give to mankind, than their arrogant neighbors, who can only claim homage because of their faultless beauty. At the rear, on the left from the entrance, is the wonderful grove of bamboos, or, as the delightful retreat is most appropriately named, the "Salão dos Bambus," presenting the appearance of a reception-room as it gradually fills up with sight-seers, this being a favorite resort for all visitors and the particular admiration, next to the avenue of palms, of the foreign visitor. This locality is devoted principally

to the cultivation of rare exotic plants, and here are found many choice specimens from every tropical country. The "traveller's-tree," a native of Madagascar, is a curious example of the kind provision that Nature makes for her helpless children when Necessity directs an appeal to her. This tree, which resembles the banana in some respects, though much larger, secretes a quantity of pure water which may be extracted by plunging a knife into it, a stream pouring forth that is most refreshing to the thirsty, and amply sufficient to satisfy the most greedy. It is easy to imagine the blessing of such a source of supply to the weary traveller in the forest. Cinnamon, clove, nutmeg, and other trees

bearing products of the East Indian archipelago, and grown from tiny seeds planted nearly a century ago, waft their heavy incense through the air, reminding one of the Orient, where

“the spicy breezes
Blow soft o'er Ceylon's isle.”



BOTANICAL GARDEN, RIO DE JANEIRO.

But though the specimens of foreign origin are of great interest, and often present rare individual types that attract attention and sometimes awaken the greatest enthusiasm, it is the trees and plants native to the country that offer most in the way of novelty or extravagance of size, form, and color. There is nothing in the whole foreign collection to compare in beauty and marvellous dimensions with the *Victoria Regia*, described elsewhere, named by Lindley in honor of the English queen, though the natives of Matto Grosso, where it is found in greatest abundance, call it the “Uapé Japona.” Nor is there any imported curiosity of the vegetable world more remarkable than many



IN THE BOTANICAL GARDEN.

specimens brought from the region of the Amazon. The rubber-tree, yielding a white, milk-like sap that coagulates almost immediately into a mass of elastic rubber, is a native of Para and Amazonas, where the Indians for centuries have known how to make use of its water-tight properties. The Bahia palm, though not "a thing of beauty," is most useful for the service it renders humanity in providing the brushes and brooms of commerce, so necessary to the economy of every household. The Candelabra-tree is chiefly interesting for its appearance, which resembles perfectly an immense candelabra ready for illumination. The mighty pirijão is a pitiful example of the good friend betrayed, strangling slowly in the embrace of the cruel liana, which, coaxingly clinging about the tall giant and receiving his protection and sustenance until grown vigorous

from his imparted strength, a veritable ingrate, feeds on the friend that saved its useless life, squeezing his last drop of blood into greedy veins;—"parasite" well named is this vegetable vampire of the forest. The patrician orchid, independent of all sustenance that is of the earth earthy, blends its delicate velvet bloom with the dark hues of clambering vines and the gay colors of forest birds; the orchid is found nowhere else in the world in such profusion and variety as in Brazil, and on many of the trees growing in the Botanical Garden it is permitted to revel in its forest freedom undisturbed by hunters. Little glimpses of the virgin forest are seen, too, where in some dense thicket the trees are twined and wreathed with garlands of vines, looped among the branches in great festoons that sweep the ground in a graceful curtain of green. The flaming crimson of the poncetta, the dark, glossy green of the orange-tree, the beautiful tree-fern, and the wonderful papaw-tree with such valuable properties for medicinal purposes, all charm the eye and appeal to the imagination. Taller than the royal palms are some of the great trees from the Amazon country, that reach a height of from one hundred and fifty to two hundred feet,—one hundred feet from the ground to the lowest branches,—and sometimes measuring fifty feet in circumference.

One species of these trees is particularly noticeable for the buttress-like projection at its base, as if the "muscles" were stretched and strained by holding so heavy and tall a body in an erect position; and this is really the case: they are the roots of the sapling that have gradually raised themselves out of the ground as the increasing height of the tree

needed their support. Sometimes the spaces between these "buttresses" are large enough to hold six people, giving the base of the tree a deeply fluted, pyramidal shape.

The "cow-tree," so called because it produces a kind of milk, too strong for drinking purposes, which is very quickly converted into glue after being exposed to the air, making a useful cement, is also a native of the Amazon region, where it is considered a valuable commercial factor, the bark being treated by a certain process which extracts from it an excellent red dye for cloth. A cow-tree making red rags does seem like an insult to bovine traditions!

Aside from the miscellaneous collection of trees and plants gathered from all sources, the Botanical Garden at Rio contains nearly three thousand specimens regularly classified. The visitor can be provided with a catalogue, if desired, and by this means may learn everything required with regard to any particular species or variety that appears on the published list. There is a library in connection with the institution, which is useful to botanists, and students of horticulture. Besides its scientific interest, the Jardim Botânico has an artistic value that is beyond computation. Its artificial knolls and grottoes, lakes and cascades, are a miniature reproduction of the noble scenery all around, for the environs of the Garden are beautiful beyond description, and a more appropriate location for this art-gallery of nature, if the paradox may be permitted, could not have been chosen anywhere. Close to the enchanting little lake that occupies a central position in the Garden, a beautiful pavilion attracts general attention. It is of octagonal form, and has two entrances reached by steps leading from one of the garden-walks up a terraced knoll of green; a bust of the first scientific director of the Garden, and an inscription in letters of gold: "To the memory of Friar Leandro do Sacramento, of the order of Carmelites, a graduate in the natural sciences at the University of Coimbra, first professor of botany in the School of Medicine in Rio, and first technical director of the Jardim Botânico," indicate its *raison d'être*. It was erected by the present director of the Garden, Dr. J. Barbosa Rodrigues, a scientist of international fame, a writer on scientific subjects, whose works are regarded as a standard authority by all the great naturalists and ethnologists, and who is a member of the principal scientific societies of the world, including the royal botanical societies of Edinburgh, Vienna, and Marseilles, the Royal Anthropological and Ethnological



GLIMPSE OF CORCOVADO FROM BOTANICAL GARDEN.

Society of Florence, the Royal Academy of Science in Lisbon, the Society of Naturalists in Freiburg, the Geographical Society in Paris, and every prominent scientific society in Brazil. Dr. Barbosa was for many years an explorer in the wilds of the Amazon country, where he became thoroughly acquainted with the Indians, and succeeded in accomplishing a great deal toward their civilization, notably in the case of the fierce *Crichanas*, who had previously cost the government nearly a quarter of a million dollars, without apparent advantage. Some of the learned doctor's success may be attributed to his noble wife, who accompanied him on his long and perilous expedition, one instance of which it will be sufficient to cite in evidence of her keen judgment, no less than of her maternal tenderness. The savages had prepared to sacrifice the "pale faces," and everything was ready for the horrible ceremony, when the little baby of one of the Indian women began to cry and could not be quieted; Senhora Barbosa Rodrigues took the little one in her arms, and fed it at her own breast, putting it gently to sleep. At this sight, the Indian mother was overcome with gratitude, and the whole tribe relented, not only sparing the lives of their victims, but offering gifts and hospitality.

Dr. Barbosa has discovered and classified one hundred and thirty-four different species of palms, and his researches in the anthropology of the Amazon have brought results to the scientific world of the very highest value. Shortly after he assumed the management of the Botanical Garden, in 1890, the institution was completely reorganized, and under his directing genius it has been rearranged according to a regular system of classification, while the area under cultivation has been very much extended and the number of rare specimens increased to an extraordinary degree. All the avenues and alleys have been named in honor of past directors. A museum, a national herbarium, an aquarium, a hot-house, an arboretum, and other recent acquisitions have added greatly to its scientific importance.

It is now nearly a century since the establishment of this beautiful Garden, which is at present among the most attractive features of the Federal capital, visited daily by sight-seers from every land. Soon after his arrival in Brazil, King Dom João VI., at that time regent, issued a decree, June 13, 1808, in which he commanded that the necessary land be prepared for a Jardim de Acclimação, designed to introduce into Brazil the culture of East Indian species. A director was appointed to take charge of the new enterprise, by a decree of October 11th in the same year, and it was named the *Real Horto*. An interesting story is related in connection with the first contribution made to the Real Horto. The frigate *Princesa do Brazil* having been wrecked just at this time off the coast of Goa, her officers, of whom the chief was Luiz de Abreu Vieira e Silva, embarked on a small brig, the *Conceição*, intending to make the Cape of Good Hope, with the ultimate object of reaching Brazil. Before arriving at their destination, they were taken prisoners by the French and sent to the Isle de France. Here, in the garden *Gabrielle*, was a valuable botanical collection, introduced by Poivre and Menouvilles; Luiz de Abreu, who had successfully arranged a plan of escape, managed, with the aid of friends, to secure a number of fine specimens, which, after many dangers and sacrifices, he transported to Rio, offering them

as a gift to the Regent Dom João, who ordered them to be planted in the Real Horto, where they marked the beginning of the splendid collection now belonging to the Jardim Botânico. Among the plants in this collection were the nutmeg, agüacate, cinnamon, lemon, bread-fruit, and, most important of all, the seed of the royal palm. With elaborate ceremony, the king regent planted the first royal palm-tree in Brazil, from the seed of which all the trees of this species that now grow in Brazilian parks and avenues originated. This tree is still a prominent feature of the Garden, a tall, slender shaft, one hundred and twenty-five feet in height, with a graceful tuft of green capping its summit.



RUA LEADING TO THE BOTANICAL GARDEN, RIO DE JANEIRO.

In 1812, the first experiment was made in raising tea, the seeds having been brought into the country by Captain Joaquim Epiphanyo de Vasconcellos, of the ship *Vulcano*. A tea plantation was started on a large scale, Dom João introducing a Chinese colony to teach the proper cultivation of this product. When Brazil was made a kingdom, the Real Horto was renamed the *Real Jardim Botânico*, and annexed to the National Museum, under the administration of which it remained until 1822, when it was transferred to the Department of the Interior and afterward to the "Ministerio do Imperio." In 1860, it passed into the hands of the "Instituto Fluminense de Agricultura." The decree instituting the Real Jardim Botânico announced its administration to be a charge upon the royal treasury. At the same time, in

order to extend the work of acclimatization, affiliated gardens were established in Pernambuco, Bahia, Minas Geraes, and São Paulo, the direction of the garden in São Paulo being given to Dr. João Baptista Badaró, a celebrated botanist of Geneva, who had made scientific studies and excursions in Lombardy, Sardinia, and Mont Cenis. The Emperor Dom Pedro I. continued the work so admirably begun by his father, and appointed as the first botanical director of the Garden Friar Leandro do Sacramento, a learned botanist of international repute, who made a complete catalogue of the plants, and in other ways systematized and improved the methods of the institution. Such careful attention was given to the cultivation of tea, that for a time the Jardim Botânico furnished all the tea that was used in the city of Rio de Janeiro. He extended the area of the Garden under cultivation, filled up the hollow places of the ground, fashioned the beautiful lake so enchanting to visitors to-day, also the cascades; laid out the broad avenues and embowered alleys, constructed artificial mounds and grottoes, distributed plants and seeds to the gardens of Para, Pernambuco, and Bahia, and exchanged with the Botanical Garden of Cambridge, England, several important specimens. When the Garden was placed in charge of the Agricultural Society, in 1860, efforts were immediately directed toward enlarging the scope of the institution, and Dr. Karl Glasl, professor of agriculture in Vienna, Austria, was invited to direct a school of agriculture and a normal *fazenda* to be founded in connection with it, the Fazenda do Macaco in the vicinity being appropriated for the latter purpose. A chemical laboratory was also established, and a magazine, the *Revista Agricola*, was published by the Agricultural Society. The last quarter of the nineteenth century marked an era of constant improvement in every department, and under the efficient care of Dr. Barbosa Rodrigues it is safe to predict that the progress in the future will be steadily marked by even more rapid and satisfactory advancement.



THE BAMBOOS, BOTANICAL GARDEN.



GREAT FALLS IN MINAS GERAES.

CHAPTER VIII

PICTURESQUE SCENES



MOUNTAIN SCENE IN MINAS GERAES.

THERE is a magnificence in Brazilian scenery that is at once impressive and captivating. The majestic rivers, gigantic forests, spacious plains, the gorgeous coloring of the landscapes, the prodigal adornment, are unrivalled. From the Guianas to La Plata and from the Andes to the sea, Nature here revels in the joy of perfect abandon. Her beauty is bewitchingly revealed in the graceful curves of sunlit hills, her smile allures in the favoring mirror of matchless rivers, her brow is decked with the rich garland of prismatic forests, on her breast glows the iridescent lustre of countless birds and butterflies. She is a reigning queen in this summer land, and her court is perennially gay and brilliant. Her manifold attractions

vary with the equatorial luxuriance of the Amazon plain and the rugged severity of the southern *serras*, presenting unlimited aspects.

Pre-eminent in picturesque grandeur, the island-gemmed and summit-crowned bay of Rio appeals to the worshipper of Nature with an irresistible fascination. Surpassing Naples and rivalling the claims of Sydney, it ranks among the most famous harbors. The painter's inspiration and the poet's ecstasy have found in its enchanting beauty a subject worthy of the most exalted genius, though neither pen nor brush suffices to give a faithful portrait. Whether viewed in the broad light of garish day, or while

"The silvery moon with quivering glance
Plays on the water's still expanse,"

the scene is one to be treasured forever in the memory, ineffaceable. It is, however, when the brief twilight of the tropics softens the effect of its general outlines, and a "dim religious light" hallows it, giving a cathedral-like aspect to the picture, that its sublimity is most impressive. In solemn stateliness the gigantic Pão de Assucar guards the vestibule of this sanctuary of the gods; the surrounding hills support on their lofty peaks its celestial dome; under the shadow of their mighty columns, the great city, with its myriad tapers, lights up a magnificent altar; far back in the darker recesses the huge organ-pipes of the Serra dos Orgãos suggest the sublime harmonies that Pythagoras might have fancied in "the music of the spheres;" above all, pointing heavenward, as if to indicate the infinite Source of so noble a creation, the Dedo de Deus [Finger of God] seems to call upon all the world to bow in reverence before the majesty and power of the divine Author.

Upon the first approach to the harbor of Rio, the attention is attracted to "the sleeping giant," a colossal figure outlined by the mountain summits against the sky, and recalling in its clear-cut profile the lineaments of the great father of American liberty. It is formed partly by the suburban hills of Rio and partly by the peaks of the Serra dos Orgãos, in the midst of which the charming city of Theresopolis is situated in a picturesque little valley three thousand feet above the sea. No railroads climb the rugged cliffs or bridge the yawning chasms that mark the ascent of the mountains leading to this sequestered spot, but the difficulties of the journey by *diligence* find more than compensation in the delight of the prospect constantly unfolding to the view. The city is reached through a great gap in the range, from which a panorama presents itself that in picturesque variety beggars description. The traveller who has enjoyed the scene can never forget the thrill of emotion excited by a first glimpse of the Brazilian Trosachs from this "airy point," when, stretched out below, the splendid harbor

"In all her length far-winding lay
With promontory, creek, and bay,
And islands that empurpled bright
Floated amid the livelier light,
And mountains that like giants stand
To sentinel enchanted land."

Nearer, the wild, rugged beauty of lichen-covered rocks and leaping cascades, huge granite masses of fantastic shape hanging over narrow cliffs, and fossil débris blocking fathomless abysses, further recalls Scott's famous description of the Trosachs, with

"Crag, knolls, and mounds confusedly hurled,
The fragments of an earlier world."

Tradition lends the charm of romance to the unexplored summits of these mountains, in the wonderful story of the Lagoa Dourada, the Lake of Gold. That the legend is not altogether fanciful is proved by the fact that a lake has been found by exploring parties in

the region named, and sand glistening with the precious metal has been brought back as a trophy by adventurous discoverers. The tradition relates that in the early days a murderer, condemned to death, made his escape through the woods near his native village of São Paulo to the Indian settlement where Father Anchieta was living, and told his story to the priest, who advised him to flee to the mountains. The criminal took this advice, and, following the directions given him, came suddenly upon this lake, to which he gave the name "Lagoa Dourada," on account of the great quantity of gold in the sand of its



YAPÓ RIVER, NEAR CASTRO, PARANÁ.

shores. He remained two years, during which he amassed a great fortune, sufficient to purchase his pardon and permit him to return to his family, providing handsomely for them during the remainder of their days. He afterward wrote out the itinerary of his trip, but it is said to be attended by so many dangers that few explorers can be induced to undertake it. The Indians call the peak under which this lake of gold is supposed to be located the "Botucarahú," from two words meaning, in Guarany, "horse" and "fly," because at its great height it has the appearance of a gigantic fly on the arched neck of a horse. Father



ROCKS AT VILLA VELHA, PONTA GROSSA, PARANA.

Anchieta, who was closely associated with the Indians in these early times and knew all their secrets, used to say to the people: "Between mother and son there lies a great treasure," a statement which was interpreted to mean that between the two places, Our Lady of Conception, and Good Jesus of Iguape, the lake of gold existed. This celebrated peak, which may be distinctly seen from the harbor of Rio, is also called the Finger of God.

Less fatiguing than the road to Theresopolis, and in many respects quite as interesting, is the picturesque ascent of the Serra da Estrella, in the valley of which, at a height nearly equal to that of Theresopolis, is situated the beautiful summer capital of Brazil, Petropolis. The journey from Rio to this place includes a trip across the bay to the Mauá landing, from which a railway train conveys passengers to the summit of the *serra*. The changing spectacle presented by innumerable turns and curves of the bay and the constantly varying aspect of the islands that are passed is a source of æsthetic delight to all nature-worshippers, and the view that spreads out in ever-increasing charm and splendor as the railway train plods its way up the steep slope of the mountain-side has an exhilarating effect upon the imagination, filling the whole soul with its beauty. At times, the entire bay is seen, glistening in the sunlight, or covered with foamy mist, the islands and rocks that mottle its

surface possessing each a separate claim to favor. Along the route, glimpses of the most gorgeous tropical vegetation appear; trailing vines, feathery ferns, and damp clinging mosses making an effective setting for the delicate coloring of the orchid and the rich glow of more brilliant blossoms. Great blocks of granite poised precariously on the verge of towering cliffs, and swift mountain streams which in rainy weather swell to roaring torrents, give that element of recklessness which is characteristic of Nature in her wildest moods. The Serra da Estrella is a part of the chain of Orgãos, which includes also the Serra Tinguá, where the Federal capital secures its main water-supply, connecting with an important range that extends under different names throughout the whole coast country of Brazil. In the State of São Paulo, the road over the *serra*, from the capital to the harbor of Santos, has many picturesque features, the splendid railway system between the two cities affording the means of enjoying the scenery from the most advantageous points of view. The railway trip from the sea-port of Paranagua to the capital of Parana, Curytiba, is a continual feast of beauty and grandeur. The wildering forest of the mountain-sides is ablaze with color, trees, vines, and shrubs vying with one another in luxuriant bloom. The flamboyant tones of the acacia, the exquisitely blended tints of the orchid, the blues and purples of flowering vines, all intertwined with silver ribbons of water that glide in, and out of the



NATURAL MONOLITH AT VILLA VELHA, PARANA.

thicket in graceful streamlets or tumble over the rocks in extravagant cascades, mingle in a general effect that is superb. The railway train clinging to the steep side of the precipice, now crossing a trestle apparently suspended in mid air, and again plunging through a tunnel that seems cut into the very heart of the mountain, is of itself one of the absorbing features of the landscape; as there are seventeen tunnels and an astonishing number of trestles along the line, some idea of the genius of this masterpiece of engineering may be imagined. The Tyrolean effects of the same chain of hills, extending, under the name of Serra da Mantiqueira, into the State of Minas Geraes, are particularly charming around about the former State capital of Ouro Preto, which is essentially a mountain village with all the supposed primitive accessories, no carriages or horses being used in its narrow, sloping streets, where the sure-footed little donkey is an indispensable public servant.

It is in the Serra da Canastra, near Ouro Preto, that the great river São Francisco takes



PINES OF PARANA.

its rise, plunging down to the sea in a series of cataracts and cascades which for scenic variety eclipse some of the most famous waterfalls of the world. The first leap is made by the Casca d'Auta over a precipice of one hundred feet into a narrow channel between high perpendicular walls, through which the current rushes madly, plunging into the cascade Pirapora, and receiving immediately afterward its proud confluent, the Rio das Velhas, as it pours out a turbulent flood

into the great stream, the Rio Grande joining them farther down at a picturesque meeting-place that widens the river-bed more than a mile. From the Pirapora no sharp descent disturbs the smooth serenity of the tide, which for nearly a hundred miles serves the useful purposes of navigation, until the Sobradinha begins a succession of foaming rapids that tumble the impetuous torrent into a deep gorge walled by enormous perpendicular rocks, from which it is crowded over the mighty Cachoeira de Paulo Affonso. This grand waterfall is superior in height and volume to Niagara itself, having nearly twice the descent, though presenting a totally different aspect, permitting a closer view without lessening the effect of the ensemble.

The rapids that lead from the Sobradinha to the great fall are numerous, and enclosed between towering walls of granite, more than a dozen being named, of which six are counted within a distance of fifty miles. Before making the great fall, the river glides along in the midst of a labyrinth of islands, rocks, and pebbles, which at low tide may be used

as stepping-stones from one bank to the other, although the volume of water passing this point is more than a thousand cubic metres per second, while at high tide it is five times as great. At the verge of the cataract three islands separate the current, which is, however, united in the final plunge down to the abyss nearly three hundred feet below. In times of great flood this majestic volume of water is carried in one grand sweep clear to the bottom, but under ordinary conditions there are three cascades, the first with a fall of about fifty feet, the second seventy-five, and the third reaching the river-bed below. While the stupendous grandeur of the scene is magnified by the single fall, the picturesque beauty is enhanced by the graduated cataract, with its columns of spray rising like incense as it hesitates on each of the jutting ledges of the cliff. There is no other waterfall in the world presenting such a marvellous variety of aspects as the Paulo Affonso. It has been named the "King of Rapids," and when one takes into account the extended retinue in the way of cascades that accompany it, the title seems not inappropriate. Even after leaving the famous gorge of the grand cataract, a succession of cascades and rapids hurries the turbulent monarch to the sea, not slackening in reckless speed until within less than a hundred feet of the broad estuary of the river.

Following the coast-line a few miles south of the São Francisco River, another of Nature's masterpieces greets the eye in the far-famed harbor of Bahia, the Bay of All Saints. It is about the size of Rio harbor, and, like that beautiful sheet of water, has many bright emerald "pompons" here and there, decorating its broad surface. The favorite resort, Itaparica, is the principal island in the bay, and its clear outlines are among the first features of the landscape presented within the harbor enclosure, which is protected on all sides by fortifications. Like a luxurious Oriental, the city is stretched out on her feathery couch of green, apparently enjoying her reflection in the waters below. All along the shore a high bluff extends, dividing the city into two distinct parts connected by inclined railways, which, seen from a distance, give a peculiarly strange effect. Many beautiful suburbs increase the attractiveness of the picture of which the pretty little village of Rio Vermelho, looking directly out upon the sea, is especially popular among the Bahians as a place of summer residence. Romantic nooks and verdure-clad ravines ornament the hillocks that extend along the northern margin, and from the peninsula of Bomfin, on a pretty knoll of which is situated the historic church of Bomfin, a perfect



CURIOUS NATURAL PILLARS, PONTA GROSSA, PARANA.

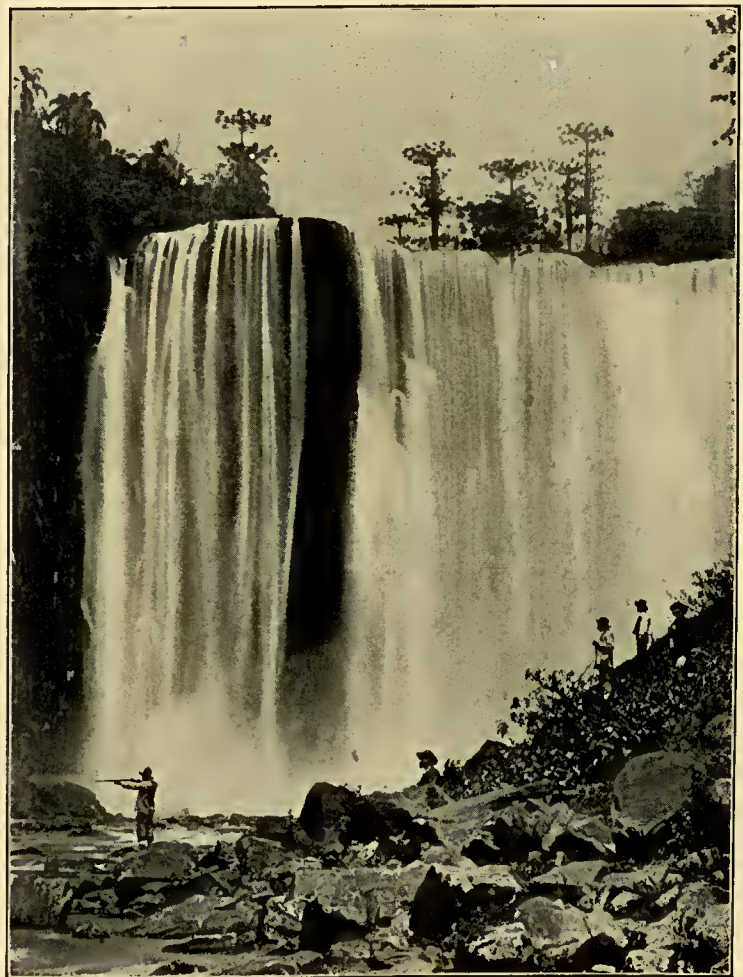


SCENE ON THE AMAZON RIVER

view of the city and bay is obtainable. The Paraguassú River, named for the Indian princess whose romance closely resembles that of Pocahontas, is one of the many beautiful rivers of this section, the landscape along its course presenting a diversity of attractions, with huge rocks, yawning caverns, and fertile plains combining to make it altogether charming.

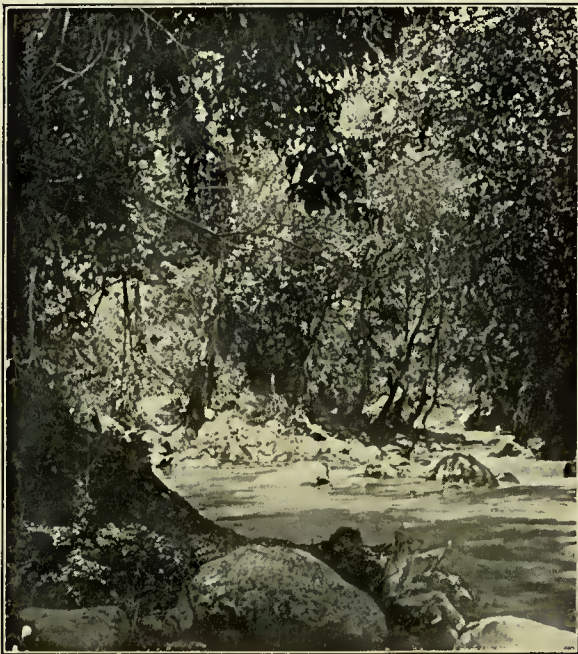
The approach to the "Brazilian Venice," as Pernambuco is sometimes styled because of its dividing canals, is guarded by a magnificent natural reef of coralline origin; the busy little builders having abandoned their labor when the surface of the water was reached, the interstices of the beautiful fabric became choked with sand and broken shells, which, in time, growing incorporated with the reef itself, have given the structure its present appearance of rough sandstone. The reef, from which the city takes its name, "Recife," extends, at a distance of about five hundred feet from the shore, along the whole front of the city and for several miles beyond, making it a safe anchorage even for ships of the heaviest burden. The great ocean waves dashing against the obstinate barrier send up clouds of fleecy foam, receding with measured movement, like a trained phalanx intending to snatch victory from defeat by a renewed attack. But in this instance the siege is hopeless, the defence invulnerable. At all times, the harbor is a busy scene, and its picturesque features are enhanced by the peculiar appearance of some of the small craft plying in and out among the more important vessels; the curious little "jangadas," which look like tiny rafts with huge sails, are particularly interesting, the astonishing size and nature of the cargoes intrusted to their seeming frailty giving a shock to the uninitiated, though their experienced managers find no cause for alarm even when the surf drenches the raft and the wind violently lashes the sails, seeming to threaten instant destruction. The jangada is a feature of the maritime delivery system of the coast trade in these parts.

In striking contrast to the barred entrance to Pernambuco is the broad, open bay, or estuary, at the city of Pará; the jangada is here replaced by sailing craft of entirely different appearance, though very curious and attractive. Some of the small boats are called "vampires," from the shape and size of their sails, which look extremely pretty in varying colors of red, blue, yellow, green, or brown, the general preference being for gay colors, which give a fantastic effect to the busy scene



SALTO GRANDE DO RIO DOS PATOS, IN SOUTHERN BRAZIL.

in the harbor of this great commercial emporium. The many tropical groves and gardens along the shore are very attractive in their rich luxuriance, and appeal to the eye quite as effectively in their indolent grace as do the crags and peaks surrounding the bays of other localities. Tall palms and castanha [brazil-nut] trees mirror their length in the clear water and great lilies float in their shadow, while brilliant-plumaged birds brighten the dark green of the bordering groves. The japim chatters its magpie nonsense as it builds its pocket-like nest that is to swing from the branches like a small bag with the opening from the side instead of the top; araras of immense size and glowing colors, and their little cousins, the parrots and paroquets, keep up a lively visiting acquaintance, no doubt comparing notes about the most wonderful forests and plains in existence; the beautiful egrets



FOREST BROOK IN SERGIPE.

and spoonbills of the Amazon are often seen here, and the great toucan, with its enormous beak more than half a foot in length and two inches in width, chews the cud with complacency, thanks to the happy provision of Nature which gives it the advantage over other denizens of the forest of being able to remasticate its food.

The whole country round about Pará is typical of the Amazon region in its flowers and birds, its giant trees and clambering vines, and the marvellous satin of its foliage. Indeed, this port of entrance to the mighty Amazon offers many charming views that are repeated farther along the great river's course. The majesty of this inland sea, called the "Mediterranean of the West" by some writers, is beyond description; it is only

possible to give high figures and superlatives in plenty when attempting a picture of its wonders. The element of the picturesque pertains rather to the aspect of its surroundings than to the turbid stream itself, which is majestic rather than beautiful, and impresses by its immensity more than by its grandeur. At the height of the flood-tide, when only the lines of forest and the grass of submerged islands mark the limits of lakes and channels, the view comprises a broad expanse of water and sky, a silent scene, relieved only by the swarming life of the locusts, katydids, frogs, crickets, beetles, and dragon-flies that brighten the floating grass, the beautiful herons and egrets that inhabit the islands at low tide leaving for the main-land when the flood is high. Farther up the river, where the flood seasons are neither so long nor so frequent, the virgin forest presents a study for the naturalist and the botanist that is as fascinating as it is instructive. From the picturesque standpoint, neither of these scientific purposes counts for so much as the

simple enjoyment of Nature's treasure-store of rare and wonderful sights. The giant trees here stretch their tall trunks up to the very skies, while innumerable creepers twine about them, decorating their branchless forms with brilliant colors; orchids abound in all their exquisite variety, and over the ground, where tangled creepers and fallen leaves prevent the growth of grass, ferns and mosses vie in luxuriance with the equally beautiful but more useful plants which furnish our vanilla, sarsaparilla, and other important drugs. The birds and butterflies of this region are of transcendent brilliancy. The gem-like humming-bird is scarcely larger than the smallest butterflies. A curious sight appeals to the passenger on a steamer making the trip up the Amazon, when, instead of the customary flocks of birds in its wake, the vessel is followed by thousands of butterflies whose gaudy wings flash in the sunlight as they circle round and round, settling upon the awnings or flitting across the decks and then sailing away again, a bright bevy of epitomized beauty. Song-birds are few in Brazil,—the little brown wren that sings like the English robin and is happiest when Nature is in her saddest moods, and the *sabiá*, immortalized by the national poet, Gonçalves Dias, are the best known of these birds.

Travelling through the country in some parts of Brazil, the attention is constantly directed to great mounds here and there dotting the fields. They look like small bungalows, and the stranger wonders what curious people have habitation there. They are really nothing more than ant-hills. The *saüba* ants of Brazil are the miniature mound-builders of modern times. They pile up earthworks sometimes over one hundred feet in circumference and three feet in height, as "outworks" to protect their vast subterranean dwellings. They are known as the "leaf-carrying" ants, and when at work resemble a procession of animated leaves. These leaves are used to thatch the roofs of their houses and keep out the rain, etc. Their immense underground system of galleries is of almost inconceivable extent in some places; one authority, writing on the subject of the little pests, says that the *saüba* has been known to excavate a tunnel under the bed of a river as broad as the Thames at London bridge, and that, at a place near Pará, these industrious little vandals pierced the embankment of a large reservoir, doing much damage.



INDIAN OF THE RIO BRANCO, AMAZONAS.



APPIACAZ INDIAN CHIEF, AMAZONAS.

The picturesque scenery of the coast country and the Amazon region of Brazil is equalled in many respects by the varying features of the landscape presented to view on the high plateaus of Goyaz and along the fertile riverbanks of Matto Grosso. The same extravagance that is shown in Nature's gifts elsewhere throughout this favored land, appears in the exaggerated types of foliage and floral beauty found in the lowlands of Matto Grosso. Of these, the *Victoria Regia*, a giant water-lily, is the most remarkable; its leaves measure from ten to twenty feet in circumference, the upper surface being a dark, glossy green, while the under side is a dark red in color; the flowers often grow as high as half a foot above the water, measuring about four feet around when full blown. A singular characteristic of this marvellous plant is in the unfolding of its petals, which, from a delicate rose tint at first opening, pass gradually, in the course of twenty-four hours, to a bright red hue. During the first day's blooming, they are very fragrant, but after two or three days they wither and fall to pieces.

In Goyaz, the Brazilian Pyrenées, or, as they are written, "Pyreneos," possess not only the charm of the picturesque, but also the great interest which a promising future gives; for

in the heart of this western rival of the Franco-Iberian range a territory of about fifteen thousand kilometres square has been surveyed for the coming Federal district; since the republican Constitution declares that the national capital shall be located in the interior whenever such a change from its present position can be effected. A scientific commission has already passed favorably upon this district as most desirable, Pyrenopolis being the chosen site. The highest peak of this range has an elevation of five thousand feet, and the serra averages about four thousand in height, offering a landscape diversified by forest and stream, sharp cliffs and sloping hill-sides, a sky-line of varying curves and angles, wild ruggedness predominating in every aspect of the ensemble.

In the State of Parana, the mammoth rocks and boulders from which Ponta Grossa [Great Peak] takes its name, are unique in curious formation, and appear more like man-made

columns than the capricious creations of Nature. No less wonderful are the great falls of numerous rivers that belong to the system of the Parana, among others the Ivahy, which, for some distance from its source, is called the Rio dos Patos [Duck River]; and the famous Iguassú, with the Salto das Sede Quedas, an immense cataract, which gathers in volume and force similarly to the Cachoeira de Paulo Affonso, by the crowding of the current into a narrow channel of about two hundred feet in width, through which the waters rush with indescrivable fury. The spray produced by the dashing of the torrent against the granite walls on each side and over the rocks in mid-stream forms great columns that may be seen miles away, and on which the sun designs innumerable rainbows. A perpetual shower is the result of this fog, which keeps the neighboring forests constantly in a condition of moisture. The noise of the cataract may be heard nearly twenty miles distant, and in the immediate vicinity the earth seems to tremble under its terrific vibrations. Although the march of civilization is rapidly destroying the picturesque features of primitive existence even in the remote wilds of the forest, yet there are occasional glimpses of aboriginal life that charm by their barbaric grace and abandon. In full costume the Indian chief is a gorgeous spectacle even though his adornment offers at times rather too suggestive a symbol of the glory of battle in the shape of anatomical souvenirs of victory. The element of the picturesque is not lacking, either, in the more domestic features of Indian life, where custom has remained much the same for centuries, though the changing conditions of civilization have made of the outside world, during the same time, a perfect metamorphosis.

It is surprising that the great tide of travel has never yet found its way to the land of the Southern Cross, that has scenic attractions to offer beside which some of the most famous views in Switzerland and Italy lose by comparison. It is true that tourists visit Brazil in increasing numbers every year, but the travel is limited compared with what it should be if sight-seeing be really the serious object of these globe-trotters. The harbor of Rio alone is worth a voyage to the southern hemisphere, and it is only one of many picturesque scenes.

The Southern Cross is the bright, particular star, or rather constellation, of Brazil. On her flag and her coins this emblem of lofty principles and of



CHIEF OF THE JÄUPIRY INDIANS.

aspirations that seek a goal as high as heaven appears with significant fitness; and in history and poetry the name of the Southern Cross has been so closely interwoven with that of Brazil as to form a part of her accepted title. A more appropriate emblem could scarcely have been chosen by this favored land than the beautiful Crux, the celestial neighbor of Centaurus and keen Argus watching forever overhead. Among all the myriads of stars that make brilliant the night of the tropics, the Southern Cross stands out in clear distinction, though, to the general observer, having more the appearance of a kite than a cross. Its southernmost star is of the first magnitude, the northern and eastern about the second magnitude, and the western very faint. Its four points are almost identical with the cardinal points of the compass, and it is to this fact that the constellation owes its striking effect; it has a fifth star, very faint, and of a vivid red.

The inspired patriot and poet exile who pined in foreign countries for a glimpse of his own beautiful blue skies gives the fairest picture of her charms in the following stanza, comparing them with the attractions of other lands:

“ Nosso ceo tem mais estrelas,
Nossas varseas tem mais flores,
Nossos bosques tem mais vida,
Nossa vida mais amores.”

[Our sky has more stars,
Our fields have more flowers,
Our forests more life,
And our life more love.]



WOODLAND SCENE IN SANTA CATHARINA.





NORMAL SCHOOL, SÃO PAULO.

CHAPTER IX

SCHOOLS AND CHARITABLE INSTITUTIONS



PROGRESS in a nation may be measured in a great degree by the character and development of its schools. As the home is the chief bulwark of the State, the school is the great elevating and improving influence upon the home. Without the refining power of education, the family degenerates, and through the family the nation. But where schools flourish and children grow up in an atmosphere of mental culture the national vigor is stimulated and increasing strength assured. It is always an encouraging sign when the government of a country is seriously occupied with the question of educational advancement. Scarcely less important than its schools as an index to the real spirit and genuine worth of a people is the attitude of the State toward its poor and helpless wards. Institutions of charity, hospitals, asylums for the aged and infirm, indicate the humanitarian principles that guide the noble and great of all times and conditions. Without schools and charities, civilization would remain a weak and ill-nourished infant, incapable of sturdy growth or development.

Since the inauguration of the republic, the government of Brazil has devoted unremitting attention to the interests of education and the improvement of charitable institutions under State protection. Recognizing the necessity for increasing the opportunities offered to the poorer classes for a useful and practical training during childhood, before they are forced to take a place among wage-earners, and to begin the struggle for self-support, it has been the constant aim of the successive administrations to build up and thoroughly equip the primary and secondary public schools of the country. So far as the higher instruction is concerned, while important features have been added, and in most cases complete reorganization under modern methods has been effected within the past ten years, yet for nearly a century this branch of the educational system has received special consideration, and there are institutions of learning in several of the larger cities that have been in existence since colonial days. Of these higher institutions, the most important is the Military Academy of Rio de Janeiro, now the *Escola Militar do Brazil*, which, from its earliest



POLYTECHNIC SCHOOL, SÃO PAULO.

history, has counted not only as an educational, but also as a political factor in national affairs, its professors and students taking an active part in every crisis and some of the graduates filling the very highest positions in the State as well as in the army. The academy was founded during the reign of King Dom João VI., the chief honor of its creation belonging to the Conde de Linhares, whose name is associated with many efforts for the development of the country at that time. From its establishment until the year 1874, the Military Academy occupied the unfinished cathedral in the Largo São Francisco, but the separation of the military courses of study from those of the natural and physical sciences led to the removal of the former branch of instruction to the Praia Vermelha, where the *Escola de Aplicação* had been established years before. The Military Academy was then reorganized, its buildings enlarged, and the curriculum extended. The present buildings are large and well-equipped with gymnasium, infirmaries, and all necessary conveniences; the instruction is thorough, and the discipline as strict as required.

When the Military Academy was detached from the institution in the Largo São Francisco, the original institution was reorganized under the name of *Escola Polytechnica*, and devoted to the higher instruction in natural, physical, and mathematical science, the Visconde do Rio Branco taking charge as its first director. A general course, special courses in physical and natural science, civil engineering, mines, and arts and manufactures, cover the subjects now treated in this college. The course in civil engineering receives special attention, and its graduates are prepared to take their place among leaders of the profession anywhere in the world. A great loss to the school and the country at large was sustained in the death, on March 15, 1899, of the distinguished scholar, Dr. Ernesto Gomes Moreira Maia, who was associated with the institution for forty years, both during the time when it was a part of the Military Academy and afterward through the quarter of a century that has marked its existence as a separate school.

One of the first medical schools in Brazil was established in 1815, in Bahia, as the *Collegio Médico-Cirurgico*, in accordance with the royal charter of King Dom João VI. The course of lectures at first extended over six years; anatomy and pharmaceutical chemistry

were the subjects for the first year; physiology for the second; hygiene, pathology, and therapeutics for the third; surgery for the fourth; and medicinal properties and practical medicine for the fifth and sixth. After this course, students were required to spend three more years in a university before being entitled to a degree. The institution is now known as the *Faculdade de Medicina* of Bahia, having been completely reorganized and modernized.

Another institution of long standing, the School of Fine Arts in Rio, was first founded soon after the arrival of King Dom João VI. Following the advice of his ministers, the king invited to Rio several celebrated artists, among them Joachim Lebreton, a member of the Institute of France, who became the first director of the Rio School of Fine Arts; Nicolas-Antoine Taunay, also a member of the French Institute; Debret, the famous French painter of that time; Auguste Taunay and Marc Ferrez, the great sculptors; and a talented engraver and an architect of ability. These artists established, under the royal decree, the *Escola Real de Sciencias, Artes, and Officios* in 1816. A few years later, the school was reorganized as the *Academia das Artes*, and provided instruction in painting, drawing, sculpture, and engraving. The present *Escola Nacional de Bellas Artes* occupies the building erected in 1831 from the design of the French architect, Grandjean de Montigny, who had come to Rio as one of the founders of the institution; but the architectural style has been changed by the erection of additional wings and other alterations of the original



A BRAZILIAN CHAUTAUQUA.



AMERICAN COLLEGE, PETROPOLIS.

structure. The school was completely reorganized in 1890, and is now conducted on a broad, liberal, and progressive plan. Classes are taught painting, sculpture, architecture, and designing, and the lectures include all subjects bearing upon these arts; as, anatomy and physiology; the history of art; mythology; natural, physical, and chemical science; geometry, archæology, and ethnology. Bahia also has an excellent School of Fine Arts. The Conservatory of Music in Rio, now the *Instituto Nacional de Musica*, was for many years a section of the Academy of Fine Arts. It was created an independent school in 1841 for the purpose of giving free musical instruction, and a building was constructed for its special use some years later. It has, besides the class-rooms, a large concert-hall. The celebrated composer, Carlos Gomes, received part of his musical education in this institution.

The Universities of Law in São Paulo and Pernambuco have long enjoyed an international reputation through some of their famous graduates. The greatest statesmen in the history of Brazil have taken degrees in these schools. The President of the republic, Dr. Campos-Salles, is a graduate of the São Paulo college, and the Minister of the Interior, Dr. Epitacio Pessoa, was educated and took his degree in Pernambuco. Half a century ago, the schools of industrial and mechanical art which now flourish in all the chief cities

were first organized under the name of the *Lyceu de Artes e Officios*. They are free schools, providing instruction especially designed to meet the needs of those who cannot afford the expense of a classical education. The training includes practical lessons in mechanical and industrial art, arithmetic, architectural drawing, penmanship, physics, chemistry, and other subjects. These schools were of great value before the present excellent system of primary and secondary education was so generally established, and they are still very important as supplementary courses.

The whole educational system in Brazil has, however, undergone a change since the establishment of the republican form of government. Methods belonging to the monarchical régime have been discarded in favor of plans more consistent with republican ideas and principles, and, as a result, the schools and colleges are giving more substantial evidence than ever before of their usefulness and the great influence they exert upon the life and progress of the nation. The present school system of Brazil provides for primary, secondary, superior, and special courses of education; a Directory of Public Instruction being appointed in each municipality to take charge of this branch of administrative affairs.

The primary schools are increasing in number and importance every year, the census returns showing a steady and constant improvement in the annual average attendance. Girls' schools are taught exclusively by women, or *professóras*, though no distinction is made in this respect in the boys' schools. In the first grade of the primary classes the studies include, besides the universal subjects for young children, lessons in moral and civic instruction, gymnastics, manual training, and the singing of Brazilian national songs. Every



COLLEGE OF LAW, SÃO PAULO.

child is taught the national hymn—a patriotic feature of school training that is not always given full significance in the education of children of some other countries. In the second primary grade, the study of French and music, first lessons in political economy and national law, elementary chemistry and natural history as applied to the industries, agriculture and



GYMNASIO, MANAOS.

hygiene, are the subjects added to those begun in the previous grade; in all junior classes the girls are taught needle-work, and the boys mechanics.

The kindergarten is an important feature of the primary work. The first kindergarten schools were established in São Paulo, during the presidency of Dr. Prudente Moraes, their management being placed in the hands of two capable and energetic ladies, Miss Marcie P. Browne, of Boston, Massachusetts, an American specialist in primary school organization, and Senhorita Mariquinhas de Andrade, a talented Brazilian teacher and a graduate of the Normal School of New York. To these two accomplished educators are due not only the successful adoption of kindergarten training in Brazil, but also the organization of the modern system of normal schools now existing there, whose influence has been most important in raising the standard of teaching, and generally improving the methods of educational training. Some of the most successful teachers in the public schools of Brazil to-day are graduates of the first training school organized by Miss Browne and Senhorita Andrade in the city of São Paulo.

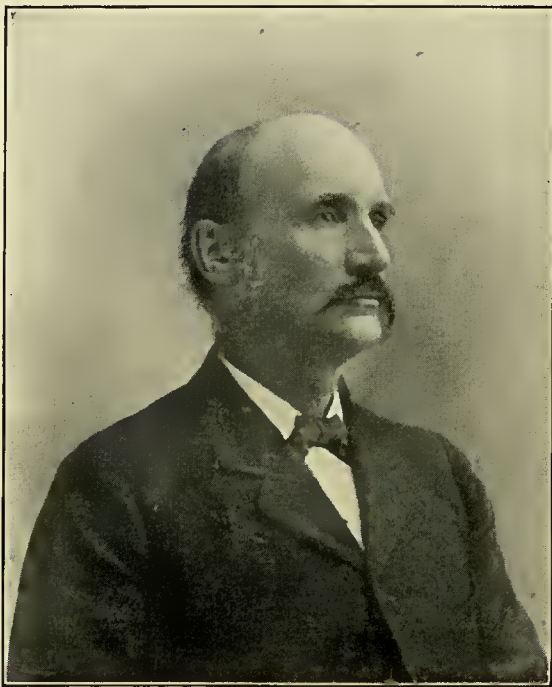
The history of the normal training school in São Paulo is interesting as an indication of the progressive spirit of its people, and of their advanced ideas. During the first year of the republic, Dr. Prudente Moraes, at that time president of the State, recognizing the

immediate necessity for improvement in the public school system, devoted his attention to securing funds for this purpose. He appropriated about seventy-five thousand dollars, which, under the imperial régime, had been granted to the Church, and applied it to the cost of establishing a normal school for the training of teachers. He enlisted the services of Dr. Caetano de Campos, an enthusiastic educator, in the plan of organization, and, as a result, American methods were adopted, and the two ladies previously mentioned were engaged to conduct the school. On the death of Dr. Campos, the work was taken up by Dr. Cesario Motta, Jr., Secretary of the Interior in the State cabinet of Bernardino de Campos, who succeeded Dr. Prudente Moraes as president of São Paulo. A fine normal school building, whose foundations were laid by Dr. Prudente Moraes, was completed, training schools were added to it, and the present cluster of handsome school buildings on the Praça da República of the city of São Paulo was completed, and filled with pupils. Dr. Motta found an able successor to Dr. Caetano de Campos in Dr. Gabriel Prestes, a graduate of the American school at Campinas, under whose intelligent and energetic direction Dr. Motta's plans were put into execution. The new training schools became very popular and attracted attention throughout Brazil. A complete system of public schools was established on the American plan, including gymnasio, polytechnic, model kindergarten, four model and one manual training, and six graded schools. There are now in the State of São Paulo 1290 graded, 400 intermediate, and 550 ungraded [country] schools, with an enrolment of about 40,000 pupils, and an average attendance of 35,000. There is also a gymnasio at Campinas, and two schools of agriculture are established at the county-seats. The normal and model schools have been for several years under the direction of Dr. João Alberto Salles, a brother of the President of Brazil, a graduate of Columbia College, New York, and a noted educator of great ability. The appropriation last year for all educational purposes in the State amounted to a million dollars in gold. Schools conducted on the same system as those of São Paulo are established in Rio, Bahia, Minas Geraes, Maranhão, Amazonas, Pará, and Rio Grande do Sul.

Besides the primary and secondary courses in the public schools, preparatory instruction is also given in the naval and the military schools, although these institutions are classified under the head of superior instruction and are devoted chiefly to the higher courses of study. The curriculum of the college called the *Gymnasio Nacional*, founded in 1857, and reorganized in 1899, covers seven years, the alumni being graduated with the degree of Bachelor of Science and Letters. Not only is the new system of primary and secondary instruction showing excellent results in every State where it has been adopted, but the methods of education in all branches are undergoing improvement. The advanced schools and colleges are receiving more careful attention than ever before: the Department of Superior Instruction, embracing the military and the naval academies, the schools of law, medicine, pharmacy, polytechnics, and mines; and the Department of Special Instruction, to which belong the National School of Fine Arts, the National Conservatory of Music, the Lyceums of Mechanical and Industrial Art, the Benjamin Constant Institutes, the Pedagogium,

and the charity schools for children, are in a prosperous and flourishing condition, having made long strides forward within the past few years.

The Federal capital has two free schools of law, giving full courses in this branch of learning, and the cities of Bahia and Minas Geraes are similarly equipped, so that the opportunities for ambitious students desiring to enter this profession are excellent. São Paulo has preparatory schools annexed to the Law University, and located in the towns of Campinas and Itú. The Naval Academy, or *Escola de Marinha*, as it was named when originally established, but changed by subsequent decrees to the *Escola Naval*, is located in Rio, and is still the chief school of training for naval cadets. Many of the highest officers of the marine service have been graduated from the ranks of its students, and the adminis-



DR. HORACE M. LANE,
PRESIDENT OF MACKENZIE COLLEGE.

tration of its affairs has at times been placed in the hands of the best commanders of the Brazilian navy. By a decree of December 13, 1893, in consequence of the naval revolt, the privileges of the school were suspended, but they were restored in 1894. The *Collegio Militar* of Rio de Janeiro is of recent origin, having been created by government decree on the 9th of March, 1889, and reorganized on the 18th of April, 1898. Its object is the gratuitous education and military instruction of the sons and eldest grandsons of army and navy officers who have rendered valuable service to the State, and also those of the professors of military schools who are not in the army. Other students are admitted by paying for their tuition.

The Faculty of Medicine in Rio takes rank among the best in the world. The new building erected for the school on the Praia da Saudade, near the Military College, is a handsome structure, thoroughly equipped with a fine laboratory, a complete medical library, and other necessities of such an institution. The students receive professional practice in the charity hospital of Misericordia, where, owing to its particular purpose,—the care of sick sailors of all nationalities, as well as the sick poor of Rio,—the opportunities for valuable experience are almost unlimited. According to a law passed by the National Congress, in 1896, the municipality of Rio assumed the maintenance of an important institution formerly under Federal control, the Pedagogium, or school of professional instruction. In this school night courses are given in pedagogy, physics, chemistry, history, agriculture, moral and civic instruction, etc.; a pedagogical library is maintained, with a circulating branch, and there is also an excellent museum in connection

with it. A pedagogical review, *Educação e Ensino*, is published monthly. The school statistics of the Federal district are also furnished by this institution.

The advent of a new century marks the successful establishment of a number of excellent new schools in different cities of Brazil. In Pará, the Lauro Sodré Institute, named for one of the leading men of that State, has just been completed and opened for the free instruction of poor boys by the government. The course of study includes, in addition to the usual elementary branches, superior classes in the arts and sciences, music, gymnastics, and fencing. At Ouro Preto, in the State of Minas Geraes, Brazil has a school of mines that is said to rank second in the world. It was organized by a decree of



HOSPITAL MISERICORDIA, BAHIA.

President Floriano Peixoto on the 18th of September, 1893, and is devoted to the free instruction of mining engineers and experts, assayers, and other students of mineralogy. The school is established in the old colonial governors' palace built early in the eighteenth century. The library and museum contain rare collections; some specimens of the amethyst, topaz, and diamond deposits in the State being especially interesting and valuable. Manãos, the capital of the State of Amazonas, has an excellent and notable institution known as the "Benjamin Constant," where the free education of young girls is provided for by the government. Not only are the girls educated and instructed in all womanly arts, and even accomplishments, learning how to manage a household, sing, play the piano, and do fine needle-work, but they are graduated with a *dot* from the State, which is furnished for the purpose of buying their wedding trousseau, and suitably setting them up in housekeeping. The choice of a husband depends on circumstances, as the young men are presented to a class of graduating girls and asked to make their choice. If the suitor is not acceptable, the girl remains in the Institute another year.

Besides the Brazilian schools in every city, there are several excellent English, German, and American schools. One of the most important of these is the Mackenzie College of

São Paulo, under the direction of an American, Dr. Horace M. Lane, who has been a resident in Brazil for forty years, and during all that time has been identified with its educational affairs, especially in the State of São Paulo. He is highly esteemed as an educator and a gentleman of advanced ideas and theories. Mackenzie College was incorporated by the Board of Regents of the University of the State of New York in July, 1890. It is an undenominational college. In 1891, John T. Mackenzie, of New York City, offered to the college fifty thousand dollars for the erection of a three-story building to be known as Mackenzie College, and to be occupied in connection with the college work. This building, which is a handsome structure, modelled after the general style of the Mark Hopkins Memorial Hall at Williams College, New York, is now the main college building, occupied for recitations, lectures, and laboratory. In 1894, an additional house was built for the younger pupils of the lower school, with funds given by Dr. Gunning, of Edinburgh, Scotland. The college was opened in 1892. The total enrolment is nearly a thousand pupils. Branches at Bahia, Rio de Janeiro, and Curityba educate about five hundred students. Mackenzie College prepares its graduates to enter the University of the State of New York. At Petropolis, in the State of Rio, in addition to other educational institutions, there is an excellent German college for boys and an American college for girls.

Careful attention is paid by the government to the needs of the unfortunate sick or poor of Brazil, for whom schools and asylums are provided at the expense of the State. The charity known as the National Institute for Deaf Mutes is administered by the Department of the Interior. This institution is established in Rio, in the Rua Lorangeiras, and provides not only all necessary conveniences for its inmates, but also a regularly organized system of training, by means of which their lives may be useful and blessed; every inmate learns an art or trade; in the agricultural department all kinds of plants are cultivated; the museum contains more than three thousand valuable specimens; and the library has two thousand volumes adapted to the needs of the institution. The National Asylum for the Insane, which occupies a picturesque site on the Praia de Saudade, Botafogo, is one of the important charitable institutions of the capital. It was established by government decree of December 30, 1897, and has proved a great blessing to the many unfortunate wards of the State who are cared for within its protecting walls. The memory of one of the foremost leaders in the successful establishment of the present government in Brazil is associated with a noble charity,—“The Benjamin Constant Institute for the Blind,”—which preserves the name of the distinguished educator and is a lasting monument to him who was the chief director of the school under the old régime, and in this capacity was chiefly instrumental in bringing about the prosperous conditions that now attend it, in the form of a handsome building, and all the comforts possible to such an institution, such as libraries, gardens, music-rooms, and other elevating advantages.

The Hospital da Misericórdia has attracted more attention than any other charity in the Federal capital, because of its far-reaching benefits and the magnificence of the establishment. Its original organization was due to the celebrated Jesuit priest, Father Anchieta, in

the sixteenth century, though the modern arrangement of the hospital and the construction of the building as it stands to-day date only from 1840, thirty years having been required to complete the splendid edifice. It is a fine specimen of classic architecture, and has accommodating capacity for twelve hundred patients. From ten to fifteen thousand are treated annually within its walls. It is especially intended for the free accommodation of sick sailors of all nations and the poor of the city, though there are private rooms reserved for paying patients. The service of the Misericórdia is divided into four branches, each having its own work as a separate organization. The general hospital sustains, through the rent of its patrimony and other aids, the Asylum of the Misericórdia for the refuge of abandoned girls; the Asylum of São Maria for old and decrepit women; the Hospital of Nossa



HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE, RIO DE JANEIRO.

Senhora dos Dolores at Cascadura for tuberculosis; and the Pasteur Institute in Laranjeiras for treatment of hydrophobia.

The *Pompes Funèbres*, or Funeral Directorate, attends to the arrangement of public funerals; has charge of the public cemeteries, and controls the administration of affairs in the hospitals of Nossa Senhora da Saude, Gambôa, São João Baptisto, and Seguro; the services rendered to the city by this enterprise are most valuable, being afforded alike to the poor who cannot pay and to the rich and luxurious to whom money is no object, thus honoring the memory of the great founders of the enterprise,—Dr. José Clement Pereira and the Marquis de Monte Alegre. The Asylum for Foundlings takes charge of abandoned infants, nurses and cares for them during their childhood, and gives them instruction as

they grow old enough to learn, making no distinction in their treatment as members of the great human family, but offering them the best opportunity to become useful citizens when they grow up. The Retreat for Orphans receives only legitimate children of poor and honest parents, giving them the comforts of a good home, and an education; this branch of the work is also in affiliation with the orphanage of Santa Theresa.

Among other hospitals and charitable institutions, the most important are the orphans' asylums in all the principal cities; the *Casa de São José* inaugurated in August, 1888, in Rio de Janeiro; the marine hospital on the Ilha das Cobras, and the infirmary for *beriberi* at Copacobana, established for the benefit of the navy, in 1890; the hospital *São Sebastião*, *Asylo São Francisco de Assis*, and several foundling asylums. The hospitals established in the large cities by the Portuguese benevolent societies are models of equipment, neatness, and general comfort. The hospital *Beneficiencia Portuguesa* of Pará is one of the best in Brazil. The Strangers' Hospital in Rio, and the English Hospital at Mangabeira de Cima in Pernambuco, are two of the best foreign hospitals. Under the administration of the war department are a number of military hospitals and chemical laboratories necessary for army purposes. The Military Hospital of Andarahy, in the city of Rio de Janeiro, is thoroughly equipped for medico-surgical treatment with all modern conveniences. The Military Chemical Laboratory, also in Rio, furnishes medicines and utensils to all the military pharmacies of the republic, to the ambulances, and to all the subordinate establishments of the Department of the Interior and Justice.

Thus, in all the public benefactions that modern science places at the disposal of governments, Brazil, progressive and compact, stands prominently forth among the nations. Poverty and sickness, the two most terrible foes of the human family when they combine forces, lose much of the bitterness of their sting, for blessed charity, liberally administered, throws a protecting mantle over helpless victims. Brazil has fewer beggars blocking her thoroughfares than most countries of the warm southern zone, where Nature is so prodigal of her gifts that man ceases to appreciate them, or to observe the laws of economy and industry which she exacts from the natives of less favored climes.



MACKENZIE COLLEGE, SÃO PAULO.



PEDRO AMERICO. HONOR AND COUNTRY.

CHAPTER X

MUSIC, ART, AND LITERATURE



SO evident is the influence of mental culture upon the life and manners of a people, and so important is its relation to human progress and development, that no adequate idea of the real advancement of a nation can be gained without a knowledge of its achievements in this direction. The musical schools, art-galleries, and great libraries of Europe bear witness to the steady march of civilization in those countries, covering centuries; and, in proportion to the high character of similar institutions in the New World, it is possible to trace the growth of national improvement on this side of the Atlantic. America has made wonderful progress in the production of good literature, and some of her writers rank with the best in the history of the world; in music and art her record has not been so remarkable, though there are musical composers and painters of America worthy to be named with the great masters of Germany and Italy.

Brazil may, with just reason, be proud of her contribution to the grace and beauty of intellectual accomplishment in the western hemisphere, which has produced no greater composer than Carlos Gomes, no greater sculptor than Rodolpho Bernardelli, no greater dramatist than José Alencar. None of her poets have sung sweeter songs to softer music than the gifted but unfortunate Gonçalves Dias. Whether in the realm of music, art, or literature, Brazil is equally prepared to establish her right to an honorable position. Music is a passion with the Brazilians, many of whom are endowed with magnificent voices carefully trained, and gifted with exceptional talent in musical composition or its interpretation. They are particularly devoted to the Italian masters. The librettos of the operas of Carlos Gomes, the great Brazilian composer, are in Italian, and Italian opera furnishes the favorite subjects in all the theatres throughout the country. Rio de Janeiro, São Paulo, Bahia, Pernambuco, Pará, and Manãos have grand-opera houses visited every season by noted European artists. The first great musical composer on the American continent, Carlos Gomes, the creator of the Brazilian opera, achieved a distinction among the living masters of musical

composition sufficient to place his name in the same rank as Rossini, Verdi, Meyerbeer, Bellini, and Donizetti. The story of his life is similar to the record of many men of genius who have earned the laurels of fame at the cost of much privation and sacrifice. A Brazilian *de pur sang*, as were his ancestors for several generations, the distinguished composer was a Paulista by birth, his native city being Campinas, the birthplace also of President Campos-Salles. He was born in 1839, and at a very early age gave evidence of wonderful genius, which was fostered and encouraged by his father, a musician and composer. Before reaching fifteen years of age, he was a favorite in all the musical



PEDRO WEINGÄRTNER. COUNTRY BALL.

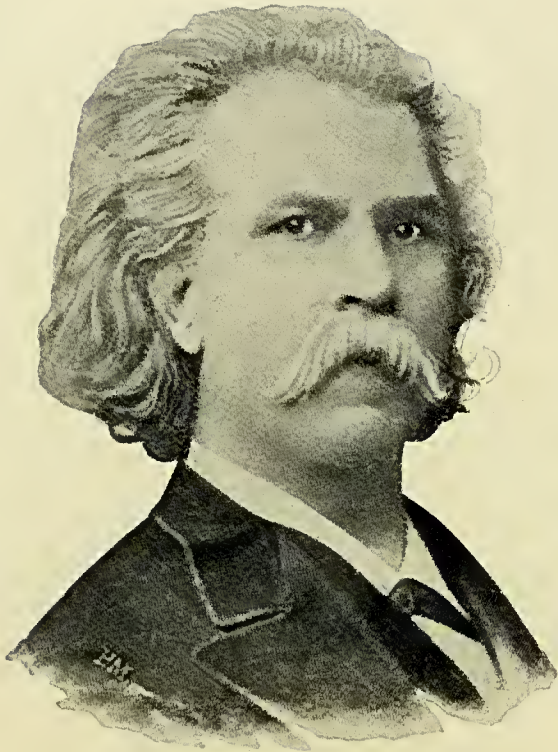
entertainments of his native town, where his excellent interpretation of the best composers, and his splendid soprano voice, won enthusiastic praises. It is said that the inspiration to compose music came to him upon seeing, for the first time, the opera *Il Trovatore*. As soon as an opportunity presented itself, he entered the Musical Conservatory at Rio, where he became an indefatigable student. At the age of twenty, he composed the music for a college song written by one of the students of the University of São Paulo, Senhor Bittencourt Sampão, which has been popular ever since; he also wrote several *modinhas* that are still sung everywhere in Brazil. In 1867, at La Scala of Milan, he gave to the world his masterpiece, the grand opera *O Guarany*, taken from Alencar's celebrated romance of the same

name, and presenting a story of the Indians of Brazil, which, for thrilling interest, compares favorably with Verdi's *Aida*. So great was the fame of the young composer in the years that followed the appearance of his chef-d'œuvre, that some of his operas took precedence in popular favor for a time over those of the greatest living masters in Europe. His *Fosca* was performed fifteen times during the grand-opera season of 1872 at Milan, whereas Verdi's *Aida* was presented on but six occasions; his *Salvator Rosa* and *Maria Tudor* have been counted among the greatest successes in Italian opera. He was the composer of the triumphal hymn for the United States Centennial Exposition. Though he may be said to follow the Italian school, there is a certain flavor of western freshness and novelty in his treatment that does not belong to the European masters. Returning to his native land, after triumphs that had made him famous throughout two continents, Carlos Gomes took charge of the Musical Conservatory of Pará, where he died in 1898, his funeral being attended with all the pomp and ceremony befitting the occasion.

Brazil, however, had produced a musical genius nearly a century before the birth of Carlos Gomes, in the person of José Mauricio Nunes Garcia. He was first brought into prominence after the arrival of King Dom João VI. in Brazil. In the royal retinue was the great musician and composer, Marcos Portugal, author of the composition known in all lands as the *Portuguese Hymn*. This distinguished celebrity came as royal chapel-master to the king, who was very fond of music, and much given to the celebration of pompous religious ceremonies, and it was through the maestro's influence that the young Brazilian was first presented to the king, who immediately recognized his wonderful gift. From the accounts of his biographers, José Mauricio was a self-educated musician and composer, having enjoyed few, if any, of the advantages of instruction. He was too poor to provide himself with a harpsichord, and it is said that when giving lessons, by which he earned a livelihood, he was at first obliged to accompany the solfeggios with a banjo arranged with metallic chords. His financial affairs were, however, improved considerably by an appointment which was given him as musical director of the cathedral in Rio, though he continued his classes, giving lessons at home to a class of free pupils for thirty-eight years. His students used to wear a red and blue cockade in their hats, and were exempt from military service. When the king returned to Lisbon, he invited José Mauricio to accompany him, but the musician would not leave his native land. He composed some notable pieces of sacred music, among them the *Funeral Symphony*,—which was executed at his own burial,—*Requiem*,



THE BERNARDELLI BROTHERS.



CARLOS GOMES.

Te Deum, and other works. He was born in the State of Minas Geraes about 1742, and died in Rio in 1831. A pupil of José Mauricio, the celebrated musician Francisco Manoel da Silva, was the founder of the Conservatory of Music at Rio. His compositions were very popular, and he had the good fortune to number among his pupils the great musician and composer Carlos Gomes. The National Conservatory of Music in Rio has been an important factor in the education of Brazilian musicians. It is to-day in a flourishing condition, some of its professors enjoying national fame. The director is Dr. Leopoldo Miguez, and among the members are the well-known musicians Carlos de Mesquita, Francisco Alfredo Bevilaqua, Frederico do Nascimento, Alberto Nepomuceno, D. Luigia Guido, and others. The Pará Conservatory has also produced many excellent musicians, Senhor

Villacy, one of its students, having won exceptional honors in Paris and other foreign cities.

The history of art in Brazil embraces a record of nearly three centuries, though its greater development began with the establishment there of the Portuguese court and the immediate organization of a school of fine arts under the direction of some of the most celebrated teachers in Europe. Prior to that time, several works of art had been produced to which Brazil could point with pride. Among the earliest of these were the landscapes of two Dutch painters who flourished during the seventeenth century while the northern part of Brazil was in possession of Holland. In the eighteenth century, José Leandro de Carvalho, born at Rio, was the first Brazilian artist of note, succeeded by José de Oliveira, João de Sousa, Raymundo da Costa; Manoel Dias de Oliveira Braziliense, and others. The founding of the school of fine arts at Rio de Janeiro early in the nineteenth century contributed greatly to the development of artistic talent. Among the distinguished pupils of this school were Simplicio de Sá, painting-master to the Emperor Dom Pedro II., and Corrêa de Lima, whose pupils numbered some of the greatest painters of Brazil, including the celebrated historical painter De Mello Corte-Real, Victor Meirelles, who painted *The First Mass in Brazil*, *The First Battle of Guararapes*, *The Naval Battle of Riachuelo*, *Passage of Humayta*, and other famous canvases, and Pedro Americo de Figueiredo, to whose genius Brazil owes several of her best creations on canvas. This institution, now known under the name of the *Escola Nacional de Bellas Artes*, has among its present members the famous sculptor, Rodolpho Bernardelli, its president; his brother, Henrique Bernardelli, author of the celebrated painting, *Mother*, which represents a Brazilian mother of the poorer classes,

draped like a Madonna, nursing her babe on a bench by the wayside; Pedro Americo, who ranks among the best painters of the century, his *Ypiranga*, *Battle of Avay*, and *Honor and Country* bringing him international fame; Pedro Weingärtner, unsurpassed in *genre*, his *Oblique Lines* having a touch of humor which gives additional effectiveness to the study of character, while his *Country Ball* is charming in its natural expression; Modesto Brocos, one of the most versatile of artists, producing portraits, landscapes, and figures, as well as *genre*, whose painting *Manioc*, an excellent composition, demonstrates both artistic judgment and sound academical training; Rodolpho Amoedo, famous as the painter of *The Departure of Jacob*; D'Almeida, author of *During the Rest*, which is a delightful study in pose and expression, the model enjoying a little coquetry during the relaxation, which seems thoroughly appreciated by the artist; Arsenio da Silva, Aurelio de Figueiredo, Agostinho da Motta, Abigail de Andrade, Bertha Worms, are prominent artists. The academy has a rich collection of celebrated paintings, more than five hundred, both ancient and modern; the most valuable of these include canvases by Velasquez, Van Dyck, Michael Angelo, Correggio, and Paul Veronese.

Sculpture has an inspired interpreter in the famous Rodolpho Bernardelli, author of *Christ and the Sinning Woman*, *The Coquette*, the bronze statues of *Pedro Alvares Cabral*,



MODESTO BROCOS. MANIOC.



PEDRO WEINGÄRTNER.

Duque de Caxias, General Osorio, and José de Alencar, in the city of Rio, and some further masterpieces. As early as the eighteenth century, Minas Geraes had a sculptor of talent, Antonio José da Silva, whose works were greatly praised by Saint-Hilaire.

In architecture, Brazil shows some traces of the Dutch occupation, though nothing worthy of admiration. The aqueduct of Carioca, built at Rio, in 1750, by the Portuguese, is a fine example of the architectural work of that period, but the effect is almost entirely lost by its partial disappearance and the changes made in that locality since it was built. The churches and convents of Brazil afford a good idea of the architectural methods of the times in which they were built. Two of the most distinguished architects of the colonial period were Silva Lisboa, who came to Bahia from Portugal in 1761, and Lande, of the same period, who took up his residence in Pará. The magnificent carvings to be found in the interior of most of the old churches were done by artists especially trained for this work, including Simão da Cunha and José da Conceição, sculptors of the monastery of São Bento, and Valentim da Fonseca, author of the carvings in the interior of the churches of Carmo and São Francisco in Rio.

Rio de Janeiro has some attractive specimens of architecture, such as the Hospital of the Misericórdia, the Post-office, Bolsa, Treasury building, Palace of Agriculture, and many handsome private residences. São Paulo has a monument of architectural as well as historical interest in the Museum of Ypiranga. The government buildings in Bahia; the Lauro Sodré Institute in Pará; the magnificent theatre, costing two million dollars in gold, which stands on a commanding site in the city of Manãos; the Palace of Justice in Manãos; the Lyceum of Arts and the church of Boa Vista in Pernambuco; and the palace of the governor of Minas Geraes at Bella Horizonte,—are among the finest examples of the architecture of Brazil.

Brazilian literature is especially rich in poetry and romance. The transforming touch of fancy is so gracefully and lightly applied by these gifted people, even to the most commonplace events, that beauty grows out of apparently plain and insignificant material, and the rhythm of sweet sound renders enchanting the harshest truths. Sentiments of patriotism, friendship, love, or sorrow are made to thrill with divine feeling by the precious power of their impassioned verse. The following stanza is taken from the "Song of the Exile," written by the best-known and best-loved of Brazilian poets, Gonçalves Dias. It is the "Home, Sweet Home" of the Brazilian people, and is, perhaps, quoted oftener than any other patriotic ballad in the language:

"Minha terra tem palmeiras
Onde canta o sabiá,
E as aves que aqui gorgearão
Não gorgearão como lá,—"

[Mine is the country where the palm-trees rear
 Their stately heads toward the azure sky,
 And where, in accents ever soft and clear,
 The sabiá sings her hymn of melody;
 Here, in my exile, say what warblers rare
 Can with the sabiá's notes their own compare?]

The English adaptation of which William G. Abbott, formerly British consul-general at Rio de Janeiro, is the author, expresses the sentiment of the poem, but does not in any sense reveal the exquisite delicacy of touch in the original, nor its plaintive rhythmic melody. The following lines are given to convey an idea of the poet's beautiful conception, the stanza above quoted being the opening one of the poem :



PEDRO AMERICO.

“ Our skies are strewn with stars, our fields with flowers,
 Our woods resound with bird and insect life,
 Our life's a dream of love in fairy bowers,
 Where Nature's lavish gifts are ever rife :
 Bright land of palms ! where the sweet sabiá sings,
 The exile's heart to thee still fondly clings. ”

“ Friendless, alone, at night, I dream of thee ;
 My slumbering senses wrapped in peace and bliss,
 I see the palms ; the sabiá's melody
 Falls on my ears ; once more I feel the kiss
 Of lips I love ; I wake, the vision's gone,
 The sabiá to his native woods has flown. ”

“ O radiant vision ! fatal were thy charms !
 My heart, till death, to thee is closely bound.
 Last night I dreamt I held thee in my arms ;
 This morn I woke : despair was all I found.
 The sabiá's voice was mute, the palms were dead,
 A tangled wilderness remained instead. ”

“ 'Twas surely some magician's potent hand
 Which shed this mystic glamour all around,
 Scattered bright flowers broadcast o'er the land,
 Built up the palms, and, filled with tuneful sound,
 The sabiá singing as if mad with joy,—
 Passionate longing, without alloy. ”

“ Spare me, O God, until in peace I lie
 Asleep forever in the land I love.
 Then may the sabiá carol joyfully,
 Perched in the palms, my resting-place above.
 So gathering in the first-fruits of my love,
 No longer homesick, every heart-ache past,
 Bearing the sheaves for which in grief I strove,
 A plenteous harvest may I reap at last. ”

Gonçalves Dias was born in the town of Caxias, State of Maranhão, on the 2d of August, 1824; he was educated at Coimbra University, and graduated with the degree of Bachelor of Laws. At the time of the appearance of his first collection of poems, he occupied the chair of Brazilian history in the Imperial College of Pedro II. at Rio de Janeiro. In these poems many incidents in the history of Brazil were used as material, and most of them have a distinctively American character. They were received by the Brazilian and the European public with immediate appreciation, the celebrated Portuguese author, Herculano, especially praising one of them, entitled *Her Eyes*, as "the most delicious lyrical composition which I have read in my life." Recognizing his literary ability, the Brazilian government sent the poet to Europe, commissioned to collect manuscripts and documents relative to the history of Brazil. During his stay abroad, he wrote *Os Tymbiras*, published in Leipzig, and sixteen new poems, afterward collected and published in a second volume of verse. He also wrote a *Dictionary of the Tupy Language*. On his return to Brazil, he joined a scientific commission of exploration, and made a voyage up the Amazon, gathering much valuable material, but at the expense of his health, which was completely broken down when he returned to Rio the following year. He never recovered strength from that time, though he lived for three years longer, a constant sufferer, but an indefatigable worker as long as it was possible for him to hold a pen. As a last hope, a second voyage to Europe was decided upon by his friends and medical advisers, and in 1862 he sailed from Pernambuco for Lisbon. While in Lisbon, he translated Schiller's *Bride of Messina* and added ten cantos to his poem *Os Tymbiras*. But his strength rapidly failing, he begged to be taken home to his native land, that he might die among her "palmeiras," within the sound of the "sabiá's song," under the blue skies of his beloved Brazil. The inspired poet seems to have had a prophetic vision of the fate that awaited him, for in one of his poems he wrote: "Adieu to my friends of Maranhão! so departs the exile; some day the waves will toss his remains

up on the sands of the beloved shore whence so lately he has taken his departure, and where the cold ashes seek a resting-place." And the mournful prediction was verified. The vessel in which he took passage was wrecked, and when the captain went to the cabin to rescue the poet, if possible, he found that he had expired. The ship sank on November 3, 1864,



STUDIO OF A BRAZILIAN ARTIST.

carrying to the mysterious depths of the sea the mortal remains of one of the most gifted poets of his day—Antonio Gonçalves Dias.

Of poets contemporary with Gonçalves Dias, several names stand out prominently among the many graceful writers of this period: Domingos José Gonçalves de Magalhães wrote verses distinguished for their lofty patriotic sentiment; Araujo Porto-



FERRAZ D'ALMEIDA. DURING THE REST.

Alegre, Baron of San Angelo, is best known by his epic on Columbus; Castro Alves, a Bahian, has been compared to Hugo in the vigor and fire of his style when portraying the misfortunes of the slaves and the evils of serfdom; Casimiro de Abreu is counted among the best lyric poets of the Portuguese language; Odorico Mendes made excellent translations of Homer and Virgil.

Next to poetry, the Brazilian writer is at his best in fiction. In this field, the distinguished names are José de Alencar and Joaquim de Macedo. The *Guarany* of Alencar has passed through several editions, has been translated into many languages, and was, as has been said previously, the subject of Carlos Gomes's famous opera *O Guarany*. Both his *Guarany* and his celebrated prose poem *Iracema* are based upon Indian lore. Alencar made a great reputation as a romancist, dramatist, journalist, and political orator, and a statue to his memory stands in one of the prominent squares of Rio. He was born in 1829, and died in 1877. Macedo's *The Brunette* is said to have had the largest sale of any book ever published in Brazil; besides numerous romances, he also wrote some dramatic pieces, and a poem, *A Nebulosa*. Bernardo Guimarães, in the romances *O Garimpeiro* [the diamond-seeker], *O Seminarista*, and *A Escrava Içaura*, has portrayed in clear coloring the life and manners of the State of Minas Geraes. In the novel *As Memórias de um Sargento de Milícias*, Almeida has given an interesting national romance of the colonial period. Martim Penna is entitled to the honor of having created the national comedy. The poets Magalhães, Alencar, Gonçalves Dias, Agrario de Menezes, and Pinheiro Guimarães all contributed to the drama, but did not meet with much encouragement in their efforts owing to the preference shown for the works of foreign dramatists.

Of historical writers, there are the well-known authorities, Varnhagen, Visconde de Porto-Seguro, author of *A História Geral do Brasil*, and other important works; and José

Maria da Silva Paranhos, Barão do Rio-Branco, who is regarded generally as the greatest modern authority on the history of Brazil. Macedo has written the most popular history of Brazil. Caetano da Silva, Homem de Mello Ignatius Accioli, and Moreira Pinto are also among her best historical writers. On scientific subjects, valuable contributions have been made by Dr. Couto de Magalhães, author of many learned treatises on ethnology and archæology, who has few superiors in scientific knowledge in any country; Dr. Barbosa Rodrigues, director of the Botanical Garden at Rio, and the writer of important works on anthropology, ethnology, and botany; Dr. João Baptista de Lacerda, director of the National Museum; and Ferreira Penna, Ladislão Netto, and Peixoto.

A passing glance at the history of Brazilian literature in the early colonial days reveals its distinctively Portuguese character, with scarcely a touch of Brazilian coloring. Bento Teixeira Pinto was the first Brazilian writer of note; he flourished in the latter part of the sixteenth century, and published many works in both poetry and prose. In the seventeenth century, the brothers Euzebio and Gregorio de Mattos, of Bahia, wrote a number of important works, the latter being known as the "Brazilian Rabelais." Among their contemporaries



PEDRO WEINGÄRTNER. BY OBLIQUE LINES.

were Botelho de Oliveira, Diogo Gomes Carneiro, who enjoyed a royal pension as the chronicler-general of Brazil, Rocha Pitta, the first historian of note, and the dramatist José Borges de Barros. The eighteenth century produced the famous dramatist Antonio José da Silva, born at Rio de Janeiro, in 1705, but early removing to Lisbon, where he became the principal humorous writer for the Portuguese theatre during his day. He fell a victim to the Inquisition in 1739.

The first writers to develop a distinctively Brazilian character in their productions were the poets of the "Arcadia Ultramarina," a literary society founded during the last quarter of the eighteenth century, at Rio de Janeiro, by José Basilio da Gama and Silva Alvarenga, the latter a protégé of the viceroy Dom Luiz de Vasconcellos e Souza, whose kindness, aided by the efforts of Bishop Castello Branco, had made it possible to establish such an institution. Modelled after similar societies in Europe, it was an influential organization in the early history of Brazilian literature, numbering among its members all the writers of talent in Rio during that period, including Antonio Cordovil, Domingos Vidal Barbosa, João Pereira da Silva, Balthasar da Silva Lisboa, Ignacio de Andrade Souto Maior Rendon, Manoel de Arruda Camara, José Ferreira Cardoso, José Marianno da Conceição Velloso, and Domingos Caldas Barbosa; and leading poets of Minas Geraes, such as José de Santa Rita Durão, Claudio Manoel da Costa, Alvarenga Peixoto, Thomaz Antonio Gonzaga, and others—the Minas poets forming also a celebrated literary society known as the *Escola de Minas*, or the Minas school of poets.

The little group of Minas poets includes many names famous in Brazilian history, not alone for their contributions to its poetry, but also for their share in its first strike for independence. One of them, Alvarenga Peixoto, at a gathering in Gonzaga's house, where Tiradentes had offered a toast to the independence of Minas and of Brazil, responded by an appeal to arms and improvised a national flag, on which the emblem was a genius breaking the chains which bound him, with the device "Libertas quae sera tamen." Alvarenga Peixoto, Thomaz Antonio Gonzaga, and Domingos Vidal Barbosa were banished; Claudio Manoel committed suicide in prison. In the Minas school of poets was born the first purely national and patriotic poetry in Brazil. Thomaz Antonio Gonzaga, best known



HENRIQUE BERNARDELLI. MOTHER.

under the poetic name of Dirceu, the Brazilian Petrarch, was the chief of the Minas poets. His impassioned verses *A Marilia* are known by heart to every lover of poetry in Brazil. It was on the eve of his marriage to his beloved Marilia that the Tiradentes plot was discovered, and, being deeply involved therein, he was doomed to perpetual exile. This terrible fate unbalanced his reason, and he died under the cloud of hopeless delusion. In the charm of their imagery, their loving tone, the harmony of diction, and the beauty of versification revealed in them, these poems of Dirceu to Marilia rank with the most charming in the Portuguese language.

Two very important works appeared toward the close of the eighteenth century, which gave additional lustre to the literary activity of this period: the celebrated botanist, Friar Velloso, published his *Flora Fluminense*, universally quoted by botanists in treating of South American plants, and Moraes e Silva gave to the people his *Dictionary of the Portuguese Language*. The opening of the twentieth century finds a prominent group of celebrities contributing to the literary treasure store of Brazil. Of these, a number of names are also associated with the history of the empire, as Joaquim Nabuco, Affonso Celso, Doria Taunay, Silva Costa, Moreira Pinto, Machado de Assis, Teixeira Mendes, Pereira Barreto, Silvio Romero, and Santa Anna Nery. Of the younger generation, the best known are: José Verissimo, Olavo Bilac, Aluisio de Azevedo, Alberto de Oliveira, Luiz Guimarães, Rodrigo Octavo, João Ribeiro, Valentim Magalhães, Luiz Delphin, Coelho Netto, Raymundo Corrêa, Luiz Murat, Julia Lopez de Almeida, Zalina Rolim, and Mariquinhas de Andrade.



RODOLPHO AMOEDO. THE DEPARTURE OF JACOB.



OLD IMPERIAL PALACE, PETROPOLIS.

CHAPTER XI

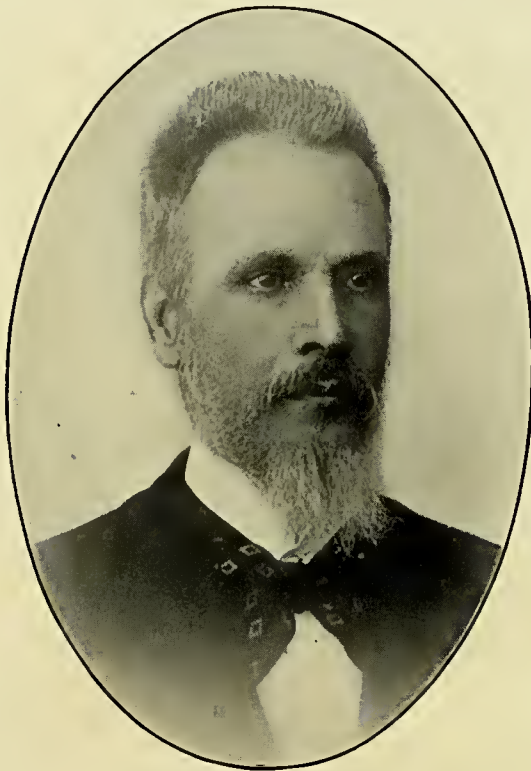
ORATORY AND THE PRESS



MANKIND has always been swayed by the power of oratory, and among all nations and in every age this gift has been held in the highest esteem. The greatest statesmen and philosophers of the world owe much of their fame as leaders of the multitude to its important influence in making cold reason palatable and uncompromising truth acceptable. The convincing power of an argument is enhanced by the sublime art of eloquent speech, even bad logic being often effectively concealed by the embellishing graces of pure diction, elegant phrasing, the charm of pleasing metaphor, the rhythm of mellifluous sound, the concord of well-balanced periods. The finished orator knows every vibration of the human heart as the musician knows his instrument, and touches its chords at will, bringing forth the beauty and sweetness of exquisite harmony or the crash and din of irritating discord. In every great climax of history, the orator has played an important part, often precipitating events by the irresistible force of impassioned appeal and the goading power of bitter satire.

The Brazilian people have been called "a nation of orators," and in the various crises through which the country has passed they have admirably sustained their right to the title, numbering among their leaders men who have known every secret in the art of commanding the attention of the masses and arousing them to activity of thought and deed. Inheriting from their Portuguese ancestors a vocabulary of inexhaustible richness, they have learned something, too, from those grand "amateurs of speech," who, centuries before the foot of civilized man invaded their forests, drew inspiration from its highest sources, and dignified their phrases with the pure imagery that nature supplies. A ready command of language, and a certain grace in the use of it, is the possession of every Brazilian, from the statesman and scholar to the poorest beggar in the street. The political leader addressing his party is not more careful in the choice of words than the lottery-vendor appealing to his public; the protest of an indignant "cabby" will express the finest sarcasm without any display of that vulgarity of speech so common to the same class in other countries;

the most illiterate persons exchange remarks, complimentary or otherwise, with punctilious politeness. In the forum of public debate, there is no delicate turn of phrase, no exquisite flower of fancy in the illimitable garden of poetry, that the Brazilian orator does not know how to appropriate for the adornment of his argument. He is skilled in the thrust and parry of fine points and in the dexterous use of phrases that cut deep without leaving ugly surface wounds as a protest against their brutality. Even the little street gamin's slang is as soft as silk in comparison with the harsh boisterousness of the young ragamuffin in the metropolitan centres of Europe and North America. A street beggar will implore "the sweet lady with the beautiful eyes" to give a penny "for the love of God." Oratory in Brazil



DR. BERNARDINO DE CAMPOS.

found its earliest expression in the Church, Fathers Nobrega and Anchieta bearing the palm in this accomplishment in the seventeenth century, though among their immediate successors were many celebrated rhetoricians. When King Dom João VI. founded the Royal Chapel in Rio, at the beginning of the nineteenth century, new lustre was shed on the art, and many aspirants came forward; the most remarkable being Friar Francisco do Monte Alverne, who became court-preacher, the king also appointing him professor of rhetoric in the Royal College.

The stirring events of 1822 brought into prominence many gifted orators, chief among them the illustrious Dom José Bonifacio de Andrada, the eldest of three famous brothers, distinguished for their patriotism and the superiority of their intellectual qualities. Born at Santos, in the State of São Paulo, June 13, 1763, the "Father of Brazilian independence," as some of his biographers have called the eldest and most ambitious

of the three Andradas, was educated at the University of Coimbra, in Portugal, the celebrated school which has given Brazil some of her greatest leaders in oratory and statesmanship. A tour of Europe followed, during which he wrote several important works on scientific and political subjects. His patriotic efforts in behalf of Brazilian independence are historic, and deserve the admiration of all lovers of liberty. He assisted in the preparation of the petition to Dom Pedro to remain in Brazil, headed the deputation from São Paulo which waited upon the regent to urge his acceptance of the invitation, and, later, when appointed Minister of the Interior and of Foreign Affairs by Emperor Dom Pedro, bent all his energies to bring about the freedom of Brazil from the yoke of Portugal. After the establishment of the empire, his ministry was dismissed, presumably because of

its strong anti-Portuguese policy; but the emperor lost many friends by this action, and many more when a sentence of banishment was pronounced against the great leader. At Bordeaux, France, where his exile was spent, Dom José Bonifacio published a volume of poetry entitled *Poems of Americo Elysio*, which contains many choice literary gems. In 1829, he was permitted to return to Brazil, and was well received by the emperor, who, upon his abdication, appointed Dom José Bonifacio de Andrada guardian of his son Dom Pedro, and of the imperial princesses. Under the regency, this office was taken from him and bestowed upon the Marquis of Itanhaem, the aged patriot retiring to the island of Paqueta, where he resided until a short time before his death, which occurred at Nitheroy, April 6, 1838. During the last years of his life, he enjoyed, unsolicited, a liberal pension from the government in recognition of his great services to his country, pensions being granted also to his daughters after his death. He is described by those who knew him best as a man of lofty ambition and unflinching integrity, a patriot and a scholar of the highest rank, a brilliant statesman and leader, though less distinguished as a parliamentary orator than his brothers; withal, a philosopher, able to face any fortune with dignity and fortitude. On the fiftieth anniversary of Brazilian independence, September 7, 1872, his statue was unveiled in the Largo de São Francisco, Rio de Janeiro, Emperor Dom Pedro II. presiding at the ceremony.

Martim Francisco and Antonio Carlos de Andrada were associated with their brother in the events following the declaration of Brazilian independence, and were banished with him. Martim Francisco was afterward prominent in political affairs as a deputy to the second legislature from the province of Minas Geraes; and both brothers, as deputies to the fourth legislature from the province of São Paulo, in 1840, put themselves at the head of the party in favor of granting Dom Pedro II. his majority and handing over to him the reins of government. When the emperor formed his first cabinet, Martim Francisco de Andrada was appointed Minister of Finance, but this cabinet lasted only eight months. Although devoting much time to politics, the Andradas wrote several important works on science, particularly mineralogy.

Among Brazilian orators, Bernardo Pereira de Vasconcellos holds a high rank; his convincing eloquence, together with his statesman-like ability, made him a leader in political affairs for many years under the empire. He was one of the directing powers in the framing of the criminal code of Brazil, as well as of some of the most important civil laws



DR. JOAQUIM FRANCISCO DE ASSIS BRASIL,
MINISTER TO THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

placed on the statute books during that period. For several years after the abdication of Dom Pedro I. he was the popular idol of the Liberal party, and there was not an important law or a political institution that did not owe something to his counsels and labors. His star of success declined from the hour when, separating from the Liberals, he joined the Marquis of Olinda in forming the new Conservative party; and when, as Prime Minister, he sent to the Chambers a decree of adjournment during the exciting crisis attending the declaration of the second emperor's majority, so bitter was the feeling against him, that his house was stoned. He died in 1850, of yellow fever.

One of the most famous diplomats of his day, a finished courtier and a statesman of recognized ability, Filisberto Caldeira Brant Pontes, Marquis de Barbacena, occupied a position of the highest trust under the first emperor, having been chosen to conduct diplomatic affairs of an extremely delicate and complex nature, requiring the possession of extraordinary mental gifts, as well as the graces of a pleasing address. These advantages the marquis could claim in an eminent degree. A direct descendant of John III., Duke of Brabant, this young scion of nobility was equipped with rare advantages. He had a brilliant intellect and a princely share of those personal attractions which are a ruling power everywhere. Living in a style of great magnificence all his life, he especially enjoyed entertaining eminent personages who visited Brazil. On one occasion, Prince Jerome Bonaparte was his guest, and at another time he received the English Admiral Popham, relieving the

financial embarrassment of that gallant officer, after a shipwreck necessitating repairs and additional supplies, by a loan of £10,000. He was an enthusiastic advocate of independence, and, after the accession of Dom Pedro I., was elected a representative from Bahia to the Brazilian Parliament. During his diplomatic career, he was successful in negotiating an important loan in London, in finding a suitable spouse for his emperor, and in managing very difficult situations arising out of the efforts to place the young Queen Maria II. on the throne of Portugal. He was a military officer of high rank, though his generalship has been criticised in consequence of his failure in the Cisplatine war. He was for a time Minister of Finance, but his ability as a financier has been questioned, and some blame attached to him because of the heavy expenses attending his foreign negotiations; in diplomacy,



DR. FERNANDO MENDES DE ALMEIDA, JR.,
EDITOR "JORNAL DO BRAZIL," RIO DE JANEIRO.

however, he had few superiors, and his harshest critics have been forced to acknowledge his genius as an eloquent and convincing orator. Fond of costly apparel, and possessing a handsome personality, he was an adornment to the Senate, of which he was long a member.

The present Visconde de Barbacena, son of the marquis, is the oldest living diplomatist. He was born at Bahia, on July 3, 1802, and has nearly reached the age of ninety-nine, not only in possession of all his faculties, but physically more active than an average man thirty years his junior. When his father was the Brazilian financial agent in London, he acted as interpreter between him and Nathaniel Rothschild during the negotiations for the first Brazilian loan of £30,000,000. Fond of chemistry, he was a favorite pupil of Faraday, and as soon as nominated, joined the Royal Institution of Great Britain, of which he is the oldest living member. He was present at the coronation of George IV. and a guest at the great banquet following it. In 1825, he was appointed secretary of legation in London, and in 1840, *chargé d'affaires* in Holland. In 1848, he was appointed president of the province of Rio de Janeiro, and in that capacity was the first authority in Brazil forcibly to stop traffic in slaves, having seized and liberated a cargo of them while being landed in the bay of Rio. He was personally engaged in the organization of some of the earlier Brazilian railways, and he still devotes himself with all the zeal and activity of a young man to the various enterprises in which he is interested.

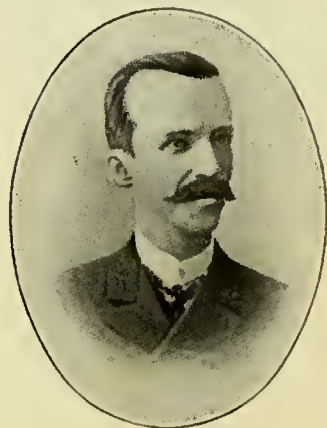
Antonio Francisco de Paula e Hollanda Cavalcanti de Albuquerque was one of the most fearless political leaders that the troublous times of the first empire produced. It is said that he never hesitated to express his opinions, "sometimes with unsophisticated frankness," as one writer says. In both the Conservative and the Liberal parties he had enemies, whom he attacked with impartial freedom. He was Prime Minister and Minister of Finance in the Forty Days' cabinet, formed after the first Dom Pedro's abdication, and was one of the prime movers in the agitation to declare the majority of the young emperor, in 1840. His influence as a politician was great, and the expression of his convictions was never restrained by the fear of consequences. In the Senate, on one occasion, he said of the two parties most



DR. JOSÉ CARLOS RODRIGUES,
EDITOR "JORNAL DO COMMERCIO," RIO DE JANEIRO.

bitterly opposed to each other: "There are not in Brazil two things more alike than a Liberal and a Conservative." When a certain important financial question was under discussion at another time, he exclaimed impatiently: "Of money we have enough and to spare. What we want is *sense!*" which was no less trying to the delicate susceptibilities of his colleagues than his abrupt declaration: "Mr. President, the country is in a bad state, and will not mend till some minister is hanged!" As a warm advocate of the liberty of the press and the staunch defender of its rights and privileges on all occasions, this eccentric statesman won many friends among the journalists.

The regent of the empire during the minority of Dom Pedro II., Diogo Antonio Feijó, more popularly known by his ecclesiastical title, Father Feijó, was a successful public leader, and began his career as a priest and a teacher in the towns of Campinas and Itú, in the State of São Paulo, where he was born. His first entrance into the arena of politics was made when he was elected Deputy from São Paulo to the Cortes at Lisbon, in 1821, where



DR. RUY BARBOSA.

he attracted attention by a powerful and fearless speech in defence of Brazilian rights. He was afterward elected to the national legislature of Brazil, taking his seat among the members of the Liberal opposition. At the first session, he created a sensation by proposing the abolition of clerical celibacy, and the next year published his reasons in a pamphlet on the subject. He was appointed regent of the empire in 1835, the highest office in the government at that time, refusing, on the day before this appointment, the bishopric of Marianna. When Vasconcellos deserted the Liberals, and formed the new Conservative party opposed to the regency, he attacked Father Feijó with the most powerful weapons of the parliament and the press, and the regent resigned, rather than compromise in any particular under the pressure put

upon him, and retired to São Paulo, where he died in 1843. He is remembered as a great statesman, and an orator of ability.

Honorio Hermeto Carneiro Leão, Marquis de Parana, a native of Minas Geraes, first entered parliament in 1830, as a Liberal; by his activity and energy, he acquired great influence with his party. After the abdication of the first emperor, he was an important leader in the deliberations of the Moderate Liberals, who controlled the political situation at that time. When the death of Dom Pedro I. disrupted the party that had clamored for his return, and the remnants were gathered together to help to form a new party in opposition to the regent, Father Feijó, the Marquis de Parana was influential in directing its policy; and, several years later, when called upon to form a ministry, he succeeded in uniting the Liberal and Conservative parties. Seeing the tendency of political affairs, and believing that a policy of conciliation would bring about the best results, he requested "the loyal co-operation of every Brazilian, irrespective of party," and, after a determined struggle, carried out his new political programme as he desired. He was a statesman who appeared to the best

advantage in the hour of a crisis. The unexpected always called out his reserve power with telling effect. He possessed unbounded energy and activity.

As Prime Minister at the outbreak of the Paraguayan war, Francisco José Furtado was distinguished for his prompt and efficient methods in dealing with the problems that faced the country at that time, as well as for his qualities as an earnest and able orator. His cabinet was Liberal, he himself being one of the staunchest adherents of that party. His great speech in the Senate in defence of the appeal to the crown from ecclesiastical condemnation *ex informata conscientia* is still remembered as a masterpiece of force, logic, and eloquence. He was a native of Piahy, though his early life was spent in Maranhão. He died in Rio, in 1870.



GROUP OF DISTINGUISHED EDITORS OF AMAZONAS.

Alves Branco, the Visconde de Caravellas, one of the Liberal leaders in parliament during the time of the first emperor, no doubt owed much of his power and influence to his oratorical gifts. He possessed a deep, sonorous voice, great facility of expression, an eloquence that charmed all, and a magnetic force that was irresistible. Francisco de Paula Souza e Mello, or, as he was known in parliament, Paula e Souza, and the Visconde de Caravellas, have been called by a Brazilian historian "the invincible fortresses of the Liberal party." Calmon, the Marquis d'Abrantes, was known as the "canary," from the suavity of his speech, which is said to have been more pleasing than convincing, however. Lino Coutinho's oratory abounded in brilliant epigrams, and was a model of graceful style. His severe satire was an effective weapon against his enemies in parliament, and his popularity with the visiting spectators is said to have earned for him the title of "the Deputy of the galleries." Ledo was also one of the favorite speakers, possessing an elegant, somewhat



SENHOR ANTONIO FONTOURA XAVIER,
CONSUL-GENERAL TO THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

florid style. The Marquis de Paranaguá was one of the foremost orators in the first emperor's time.

Rodrigues dos Santos, a graduate of the Law School of São Paulo, was an able and eloquent orator and a clever journalist. He published the *Ypiranga*, in the interests of the Liberals, and was, in 1854, appointed professor of the São Paulo Law College. Souza Franco, a native of Pará, was a gifted orator and a successful editor, being associated with the *Diário de Pernambuco*, and editor of the *Voz do Biberibe*. He left the Conservative for the Liberal party early in his career. It is related that some one remarked to Bernardo Pereira de Vasconcellos: "Of what impor-

tance is Souza Franco? He is only one in the Chamber." To which the statesman replied: "Yes, only one; but the first." That was surely a reputation worth having. Another orator of distinction was the Barão de Itamaracá, of Pernambuco, a man of remarkable genius, gifted with a magnetic voice, fluent speech, great purity of style, and moderate and agreeable gesture. Among other notable names recorded in the annals of Brazilian politics in former years are Visconde de Rio-Branco, celebrated as one of the greatest statesmen and scholars of Brazil; Alvares Machado, Nabuco de Araujo, and Ferreira Vianna. The leading orators of the present day are Joaquim Nabuco, Andrade Figueira, Fernandes da Cunha, Gusmão Lobo, Dr. Assis Brasil, Ruy Barbosa, Quintino Bocayuva, Bernardino de Campos, and Serzedello Correia. The name of Dr. Joaquim Nabuco is especially prominent among anti-slavery orators. Dr. Bernardino de Campos, one of the foremost statesmen of Brazil, belonged to the group of Liberals who formed the first Republican party, of which he was the chosen representative in the Provincial Assembly of São Paulo in 1888. A native of Minas Geraes, he removed with his parents to São Paulo when quite a child, and was educated in the law school of that city. At the first Republican Congress, he was elected Speaker of the House, and in 1892 was made president of the State of São Paulo, his administration of this office being marked especially by improvements in the methods of education, sanitation, agriculture, rapid transit, and other progressive measures. When Dr. Prudente Moraes became President of the republic, the services of Dr. Bernardino de Campos were invaluable in solving the difficult financial problems that faced the administration.

Recently, the gratitude of the Brazilian nation has been won by the distinguished diplomat, Dom José Maria da Silva Paranhos, Barão de Rio-Branco, whose services have been of inestimable value and importance in the settlement of the Guiana boundary dispute.

In recognition of his great work, the Brazilian government has bestowed high honors upon him, granting a liberal gift and an annuity, and advancing his diplomatic rank to that of envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary to Germany. In an oration pronounced in his honor, Senhor Serzedello Correia said of the illustrious minister: "Yes, the right of Brazil [to the contested territory] was indisputable, and its basis indestructible, thanks to the efforts of our forefathers, to the labors of Caetano da Silva, to the splendid vindication of the Visconde d'Uruguay, to the zeal of our chancellerie, and to the persistent endeavors of the governors of Pará; but it needed some one who could combine all this into one powerful whole. This work has been accomplished by the Barão de Rio-Branco, doubly immortalized: in the memory of his father, and by the grandeur of the services rendered by him in defending the integrity of the national territory."



DR. JOAQUIM NABUCO, MINISTER TO ENGLAND.

The influence of journalism has been most important in the educational and literary development of Brazil, as well as in its political advancement. When the freedom of the press was established, early in the nineteenth century, an impetus was given to literary activity, productive of widespread results. The first newspaper established was the *Gazeta do Rio*, in 1808, followed by the review, *O Patriota*, under the editorship of Ferreira Guimarães, in 1813. At Bahia, the *Idade de Ouro* was established in 1811. Pernambuco had a newspaper in 1817, but it was confiscated after the revolution there. During the first days of independence, newspapers appeared with remarkable rapidity. Rio had *O Conciliador*, edited by Silva Lisboa; *O Reverbero*, by Cunha Barbosa and Ledo; *O Espelho*, *O Regulador*, *O Correio do Rio*, *Tamoyo*, and the *Sentinella*. At Maranhão, the *Conciliador* was founded during this period; at Recife, the *Aurora Pernambucana*, and two new journals were added to the first one at Bahia. A few years after the first emperor's accession, Rio had 9 newspapers; Bahia, 4; Recife, 5; Minas, 5; Maranhão, 3; and Nictheroy, Ceará, Pará, São Paulo, and Rio Grande do Sul, one each.

In 1824, the *Spectador* was founded at Rio, and changed, in 1827, to the *Jornal do Commercio*, the principal newspaper in Brazil to-day. It owes much of its earlier success to the judicious direction of Junius Villeneuve. This gentleman, as well as his successors, Senhores Picot and Manoel Moreira de Castro, was careful to secure the services of competent editors and reporters; among the contributors to the paper in its early days being such leading political writers as Justiniano Rocha, Francisco Octaviano, and Visconde de Rio-Branco. The present management of the *Jornal do Commercio* is under the direction of Senhor Dom José Carlos Rodrigues, a prominent leader in national affairs and a scholar of

wide reputation. Other successful and prominent newspapers in the capital are the *Jornal do Brasil*, owned and edited by Colonel Fernando Mendes de Almeida; *O Paiz*, *Imprensa*, *Gazeta da Noticias*, *A Noticia*, *A Republica*, *Gazeta da Tarde*; the French paper, *L'Etoile du Sud*, and the English weekly papers, *Rio News* and *Brazilian Review*, are among the most popular foreign publications. Several prominent journalists have contributed to give the press of Brazil importance and interest. Of these, the best known or remembered are the famous Andrada brothers, who published the *Tamoyo*; Justiniano Rocha, Cunha Barbosa, Joaquim Serra, Ledo, Octaviano, Guimarães, Soares Lisboa, Ferreira de Menezes, Medrado, Ferreira de Araujo, Maciel Pinheiro, Patrocinio, Quintino Bocayuva, José Carlos Rodrigues, and Ruy Barbosa. The *Revista Brasileira*, edited by José Verissimo and published by Laemmert, is the best literary magazine in Brazil, and the official organ of the Brazilian Academy, an organization founded somewhat upon the methods of the French Academy.

In giving the history of the press in Brazil, it is necessary, also, to speak of the papers edited by women. The first that claims attention was established in Rio de Janeiro by Dona Violante Atabalipa Ximenes de Bivar. Her first venture was the *Jornal das Senhoras*, the first "woman's journal" in Brazil. Later, she published the *Domingo*, a weekly literary paper. There is a bright, clever little magazine published to-day in São Paulo, in the interests of women and the *feministe* cause, the *Mensageira*, owned and edited by Senhora Presciliana Duarte de Almeida. The history of this paper is a high tribute to the enterprise of this Brazilian woman. Convinced of the necessity for a woman's paper in Brazil, and having no money with which to equip a publishing house, she pluckily set to work to prepare the first issue in manuscript, making fifty or more copies. The idea proved a good one, money came in for subscriptions, and, to-day, it is a most creditable monthly periodical, receiving contributions from prominent women writers in Brazil and France; a branch office is established at Paris. *O Familia* is the name of a first-class journal, edited and published by Senhora Josephine Alvares de Azevedo. There are several others in different parts of the country. The daily newspapers of Brazil have not adopted the "woman's page," though they very often publish fashion items or social news in addition to the *folhetim*, or *feuilleton*, which is a feature of all Latin newspapers.





IN THE HEART OF THE TROPICS.

CHAPTER XII

NATURAL RESOURCES, CLIMATE AND MANUFACTURES



BRAZILIAN WATER-CARRIER.

COMPRISING a territory that covers one-fifth of the western continent, and is larger in extent than the United States of America, Brazil possesses almost unlimited natural resources, and enjoys a monopoly of trade in several important products. The Amazon forests supply the world with rubber; from central and southern Brazil comes the greater part of the world's coffee; while in the vast interior many of the best dyewoods and medicinal herbs known to science are exclusively found.

The country is divided into five natural regions, of which the least known—though since the recent settlement of the Guiana boundary-line the most generally discussed—is that which lies between the basins of the Amazon and the Orinoco where the latter takes its rise, an extensive territory composed of plateaus covered with virgin forests, and having here and there vast plains, almost unknown to civilization. This region possesses immense stores of mineral wealth. The Amazon plain, the great central table-lands, the tropical coast country, and the temperate zone of southern

Brazil contribute a great variety of products to foreign markets. From her equatorial forests come the famous mahogany, rose-wood, and satin-wood; the valuable wood of the *samaumira*, or silk-cotton tree, whose enormous branches spread over a vast area; the white gutta-percha from the sap of the *massarandúba*; the fibre for mats, brushes, and brooms, obtained from the leaves of the *carnahuba*, and the yellow wax and potash extracted from it, as well as the excellent substitute for cork made from the spongy heart of its trunk.

The castanha-tree, which abounds in the State of Pará, growing to a height of a hundred feet and upward, yields the brazil-nut of commerce; these nuts grow at the top of the tree in hard shells about the size of cocoanuts, and each shell contains from fifteen to twenty-five nuts, and falls, when ripe, with great danger to the gatherers, who are obliged to remain in their cabins during the "windfalls." A nut similar in flavor and manner of



NATIVE PALMS.

growth to the brazil-nut is the sapucáia, which grows in a shell as big as a man's head, but differs from the castanha in that the shell of the sapucáia opens when ripe, letting the nuts fall to the ground; they seldom, however, appear in the market, as the monkeys and birds devour them as they fall. Valuable gums, resins, oils, and essences are found in this section, which is also rich in botanical treasures of a purely ornamental character, such as the orchid, for new specimens of which hunters are constantly searching the forests. Of

food products, the Amazon region supplies in abundance the cocoanut, chocolate, cocoa, tapioca, rice, beans, and mandioca. The cacao plantations flourish in a wild state, the largest crops being found along the borders of the Amazon and the Tocantins. The tree yields two crops annually, and will continue to produce for three-quarters of a century.

The cacao industry is growing constantly. The great inducement to its cultivation is that it requires few hands, and those at a time when the usual forest occupation is in abeyance. The process of culture is very simple. The planter keeps his young orchard free from undergrowth until the trees can protect the ground by their own shade, usually



A PEASANT GROUP.

three or four years. By this time, they begin to bear, the fruit growing directly from the trunk and main branches, attached by a short stem. In July and August the ripe fruit is gathered in baskets, the oval-shaped outer shell is cut open, and the pulp washed off the seeds, which are spread on mats to dry in the sun, being turned from time to time. Most of the seed is exported in this form, though some is made into chocolate.

Mandioca is the product of a straggling shrub about five feet high, with knotted branches and thinly set, palm-shaped leaves. The roots of this plant furnish the *farinha*, or staple flour of Brazil, used in many different ways upon every table in the land. When these



COCOANUT PALM.

roots, which in shape are somewhat like those of the dahlia, but much larger, are first taken from the ground, they contain a poisonous juice which it is necessary to extract before they can be used as food. This is done by soaking them for a couple of days and allowing them to ferment; then they are cleaned, the tough outer skin is removed, and the remaining mass is piled in a wooden trough, where the roots are grated on a board; the grated mandioca is rubbed through a basket-work sieve to remove the larger fragments of woody fibre, after which a straining process follows, aided by a long bag woven diagonally from strips of palm-fibre so as to stretch it till the contents are crushed by the heavy pressure of a lever passed through a loop in the lower end of the bag and having a

weight attached to it; the juice is squeezed out into a pan underneath, and the starch that settles from it is the tapioca of commerce; the last drop of remaining juice is removed by a roasting process, after which the dried mandioca becomes the *farinha* of the market.

In the coast tropical region, which extends from the mouth of the Amazon to the Tropic of Capricorn, the natural resources are even more abundant than in the Amazon country. At the extreme north, in Maranhão, flat, low plains predominate, really constituting an extension of the Amazon basin. From Ceará this plain is narrower, and behind it the land slopes upward to the region of the plateaus. In the lowlands are cultivated sugar, mandioca, cocoa, rice, fruits, etc.; on the sloping hills are coffee plantations; on the plateaus, cotton and tobacco thrive, and there are particularly good pasture-lands for sheep, the climate being similar to that of Australia. An advantage which the coast region enjoys in the exportation of its products is the accessibility of its numerous ports, which attract the trading ships of all countries.

The staple product of the middle coast region is sugar. Ever since the sixteenth century, it has been cultivated in Pernambuco, Bahia, and the State of São Paulo; from the seventeenth to the middle of the eighteenth century, Brazil produced more sugar than any other country. Competition with the West Indies reduced the exports during the latter half

of the eighteenth century, but the culture has been revived within the past fifty years, and, in order to compete with foreign markets, refineries have been put into operation. Pernambuco alone produces about two hundred and twenty million pounds of sugar annually. *Aguardente*, an alcohol largely consumed in Brazil, is made from sugar-cane.

Cotton is cultivated more extensively every year in the coast region, where it grows at little expense of labor; it requires less capital than coffee, and for this reason offers a more attractive opportunity for the investment of the small proprietor. The cotton export from Brazil just after the war of the Confederacy in the United States was over a hundred million pounds, though it fell again to about twenty millions in 1880, and has not exceeded fifty millions in any year since. Pernambuco, Parahyba, and Alagoas are the chief producers of cotton, though its culture extends as far south as Rio Grande do Sul.

Tobacco is grown on all the plateaus, the home market consuming almost half the crop, which is very large. Almost every Brazilian smokes his cigar or cigarette, and so universal and constant is the habit that it is noticed and commented upon by every traveller who visits the country. It is related that one of the most distinguished commanders in the Paraguayan war went into the thickest of the fight with a cigarette between his lips.

The temperate region of the south, which includes southern São Paulo, Parana, Santa Catharina, and Rio Grande do Sul, is especially adapted for the cultivation of coffee, yerba maté, and cereals, and for cattle-raising, which is one of the chief industries in this section; beef is exported in large quantities, and hides constitute an important source of revenue. Over half a million head of cattle are slaughtered yearly in Rio Grande do Sul for the export trade. Agriculture and wine-growing are receiving constantly increasing attention in the southern States, where European immigration has settled, and there is a large farming community. The abundance of fruit produced in the coast country is sufficient to supply a large market. Pineapples, bananas, mangoes, oranges, figs,—the list could be carried on almost indefinitely, so great is the variety.

Inexhaustible riches are contained in the mines of Minas Geraes, Bahia, Goyaz, and Matto Grosso, as yet comparatively little developed in proportion to the vast field they offer for



NEGRO CARREGADOR.

investment. The region of the great interior plateaus has such a mixed climate that the products are widely diversified; there are vast forests in the low valleys and along the river-courses, where vegetation is often luxuriant; desert places and mountainous districts where scarcely anything grows; and immense *campos*, or plains, furnishing excellent pasturage for



A CONTENTED SON OF THE FOREST.

cattle and sheep. Hogs are raised in considerable numbers in Minas Geraes, which is also the great centre of the dairy industry in Brazil. The green hill-sides of Minas have pasturage for almost numberless cattle, and there is no apparent reason why the supply of these should not be sufficient to meet the demands of the largest markets.

The climatic conditions of Brazil correspond to the altitude and general character of the different regions, thus controlling the nature of the resources and the character of their development. In the basin of the Amazon the climate differs from that of the great table-land, which is unlike that of the coast country, whether in the tropical or the temperate zone. Owing to its very slight elevation above sea-level, and the free access which it offers to trade-winds, the Amazon valley possesses a particular climate, very hot, though less oppressive than the Caribbean coast, the mean temperature being about twenty-five degrees centigrade. The rainy season lasts from December to July in Pará, the rain-fall being very heavy in February and March, and coming in daily showers that clear up after an hour or so. During the dry season in the interior of the Amazon region, there are whole months without rain, except near the Andes, where the effects of the trade-winds are not felt. The climate of the great central table-land is similar in some respects to that of the Amazon plain, though the trade-winds are less regular, and blow from the northeast; the difference between the rainy and dry seasons is very marked, and the humidity of the atmosphere is not constant, as in the basin of the Amazon. The temperature is not very variable,

averaging 25° centigrade during the hottest months, and 23° during the coldest; but because of the altitude, the nights are very cool, the thermometer sometimes registering 5° at midnight. The climate is temperate on the high plateaus, which constitute the greater part of the table-land, where one finds it similar to the climate of southern Europe. The cold is sometimes quite keen in winter in the States of Rio de Janeiro, Minas Geraes, and São Paulo. On the plateaus of the two last-named States snow sometimes falls.

The tropical coast of Brazil has a similar climate to that of the Amazon region, but with a particular influence. The winds vary according to the latitude; the rainy season extends from December to June in Maranhão, from March to August in Pernambuco, and from October to April in Rio de Janeiro. The heat is tempered by the sea-breezes. In the temperate zone, that is to say in the southern parts of São Paulo, in Parana, Santa Catharina, and Rio Grande do Sul, the climate is similar to that of southern Europe. In the basins of the Upper Paraguay and the Guaporé, in Matto Grosso, the climate is hot the year round. Even in the hottest regions, though, there are usually cool breezes at night that clear the atmosphere, which would otherwise be unupportable.

Notwithstanding the obstacles offered to the development of extensive manufacturing industries on account of the powerful foreign competition, there are numerous important enterprises in a prosperous condition. Factories have been established for the preparation of tapioca, sugar, vegetable oils, cheese, comfitures, dried meats, cigars and cigarettes, candles and soap, leather, boots and shoes, gloves, felt and straw hats, umbrellas and parasols, hammocks, and all kinds of furniture. Large amounts of capital are invested in cotton-mills, of which there are more than two hundred in a thriving condition, and in woollen-mills, wine manufactories, breweries, yerba-maté mills, brick-kilns, etc.; there are more than fifty match factories, of which the largest are established at Rio de Janeiro, Nictheroy, Curytiba, and Bahia. Ship-building employs a considerable amount of capital in Rio de Janeiro, which has also extensive powder-works, iron foundries, and smelting-works. São Paulo, Minas Geraes, and Rio Grande do Sul also have large iron foundries and smelteries, and in Porto Alegre, the capital of the State of Rio Grande do Sul, is one of the finest establishments in America for the manufacture of safes and vaults.

An important consideration in the development of the manufacturing interests of Brazil is the cost of coal, and the competition of foreign bidders for the privilege of supplying this article is sufficiently keen and animated to prove the significance of her manufacturing industries.

With a variety of climate to suit every kind of production and industry, and a soil of such wonderful fertility that abundant harvests respond to the slightest effort of cultivation, there is no limit to the possibilities of the commercial future of Brazil. The people of this vast and wealthy country are keenly alive to the advantages of modern development, and are using every means in their power to promote its highest benefits.

Within the past century, the population of Brazil has increased from three millions to twenty millions; the value of her exports has risen, within the same time, to one hundred

and fifty million dollars; her rate of immigration has grown from less than ten thousand annually, under the empire, to more than a hundred thousand annually under the present government, some years showing an increase of two hundred thousand settlers in her foreign colonies. Every species of animal, vegetable, and mineral product is found within her territory, under conditions that favor the fullest development. A lack of sufficient capital has been largely responsible for the failure to realize more extensive profits from resources that represent unlimited and inexhaustible wealth, but wherever an investment of large sums has made it possible to develop certain resources to their full capacity, the results have astonished the world. From the chapters devoted separately to coffee culture, the mineral wealth, the rubber trade, and the yerba-maté of Brazil, it will be seen that the returns for money invested in these industries justify the supposition that like results would attend the exploitation of other products, such as, for instance, the export of Brazilian hardwoods, of which there are many even more beautiful and much cheaper than rose-wood; or the development, on a grand scale, of the sugar industry; the production of cotton, which grows with little cultivation in the whole of northern and eastern Brazil; cattle-raising, fruit-growing, and more particularly wine culture, offering every inducement that natural advantages can supply.

It is worthy of comment that every writer on Brazil has admitted the great possibilities of its future. A conservative estimate, based upon recent immigration figures and the fact that the rate of birth is not lower than that of any other country, places the probable population of Brazil for the end of the twentieth century at one hundred millions; and, when a corresponding development of its natural resources and the inevitable growth of agricultural, mining, and manufacturing industries, which must naturally attend it, are also taken into consideration, the pinnacle of prosperity toward which prediction points reaches a height that is almost beyond the limits of imagination.



LAVANDEIRAS.



PONTE BOA VISTA, ON THE CENTRAL RAILWAY.

CHAPTER XIII

COMMERCE AND TRANSPORTATION



USINESS relations between Brazil and foreign countries were first established less than a century ago, when King João VI., upon the arrival of the Portuguese court at Rio de Janeiro, opened her ports to the world's commerce for the first time, the trade previously having been exclusively with Portugal, the mother-country. . At that date, the value of Brazilian exports was about twenty million dollars in gold, her imports amounting to ten million dollars. According to the latest statistics, Brazil now exports goods to the value of about one hundred and fifty million dollars, while her imports are worth more than one hundred millions, gold value. Under the improved conditions that the country now enjoys, it is possible to predict a much more remarkable advance in trade during the present century, upon which she enters with such excellent promise. The best market for Brazilian products is the United States, to which are exported annually cargoes amounting in value to nearly a hundred million dollars gold; the Brazilian imports from the United States amount to about fifteen million dollars gold, though the growing friendly relations between these two countries, and, in consequence, the better understanding of each other's requirements, will, no doubt, result in an important addition to their trade, especially as regards the Brazilian share of purchases. In the choice of diplomatic representatives, both countries have been particularly fortunate, the Brazilian minister to Washington, Dr. Assis Brasil, being one of the most popular foreigners at the American capital, while the American minister to Brazil, Hon. Charles Page Bryan, is held in very high esteem in Brazilian political and social circles. An important commercial treaty has just been arranged between the two countries, materially improving their trade relations. Besides the immense quantities of coffee and rubber exported from Brazil, and her precious minerals, the chief products that contribute to her revenue are yerba maté, grown mainly in the southern States, and exported to Argentina, Europe, and North America; sugar, which is cultivated in all the coast countries from Bahia to Maranhão, though principally in the State of Pernambuco, and is supplied to Argentina and the United States;

cotton from Alagoas and Pernambuco; tobacco, of which Bahia is the great exporting centre; cocoa from all the coast country, shipped to Europe and North America; hides from the south and the interior States, the inland plateaus furnishing excellent pasturage for cattle; dyewoods and medicinal and cabinet woods from the Amazon, and also from the coast country, especially Bahia; and fruits in abundance. Brazil imports manufactured goods in cotton, silk, woollen, and linen, chiefly from Europe, though the various Brazilian cotton-mills are constantly reducing the amount of imported cotton goods; arms and ammunition from the United States, Belgium, and England; material for railway construction, including locomotives, rails, cars, etc., chiefly from the United States, though there is one large national factory that builds railway carriages; coal, which formerly came from England almost exclusively, amounting to millions of tons, though the United States is now proving an important competitor for this trade, and promising coal-fields are being opened up in several Brazilian States; wheat from the United States and Argentina, and wheat flour from the United States, Argentina, England, Austria, and Chili, the three last named supplying only a small amount; wines from France, Italy, Spain, and Portugal; hardware, cutlery, glass, and farm implements, chiefly from England and Germany; fine leather, boots and shoes, from France; electric machinery from the United States; iron and brass from Europe, and canned goods from Argentina and the United States. In addition to the above, are various kinds of paper from France, kerosene from the United States, cement from Germany and Belgium, and minor articles.

An important factor in the success of those countries which enjoy the most satisfactory trade relations with Brazil is their readiness to observe the demands of the Brazilian market and to appreciate the peculiar conditions governing its supply. Apropos of this subject, a humorous description is given, by an English traveller, of a cargo he saw unloaded by a British vessel at Rio, in 1810. He says: "Skates, furs, overshoes, and other articles useless to the inhabitants were piled on the wharf, while quantities of merchandise lay on the beach for want of warehouses, and the people made free use of everything, filing down brass pans and selling the filings as gold, at so much per ounce, to the very merchants who had brought in the goods." The countries that have secured the largest share of Brazilian trade have established banks in Brazil under their own control, built their own steamship lines, and opened in various Brazilian cities business houses under the management of their own merchants. The "commercial traveller," so prominent a figure in the mercantile world of the United States, does not accomplish such satisfactory results in seeking custom among Brazilian merchants as does the manager of a local branch establishment belonging to a foreign house. The reason is apparent when it is explained that a great number of adventurers, posing as accredited representatives of foreign business houses, have brought the commercial traveller into disrepute by their unscrupulous methods and overwhelming ignorance even of the first requirements of a foreign business representative, including a knowledge of either Portuguese or French, and, at least, a certain degree of politeness in manner and speech. It is a great mistake to imagine that business can only be done "as they do it in our country," to quote some of the foreign failures in this capacity. And

it is also a mistake to insist upon supplying articles that are not called for, simply because they are the newest and most stylish, in the opinion of those who offer them for sale. The most successful foreign merchant, in building up a business in Brazil, is the one who establishes a branch house there and supplies it with the goods which experience proves to be most salable according to Brazilian ideas and tastes. In order to give an impetus to the demand for those articles of manufacture not generally in use at the present time, especially in the nature of farm implements and machinery, it has been suggested by a careful student



VIEW ON THE CENTRAL RAILWAY.

of the existing conditions, that a permanent exhibition, established in the principal agricultural centres by a syndicate of capitalists, manufacturers, and others interested, and designed to show samples of all articles of use to the agricultural population, would be effectual if properly managed. One advantage which the established merchant possesses over the travelling salesman is in the dispatching of goods through the custom-houses, the merchants being permitted to have their own clerks dispatch their goods, while, otherwise, an authorized *despachante* [a sworn custom-house broker], working at an established tariff of charges,



RAILWAY BRIDGE AT CASTRO, STATE OF PARANA.

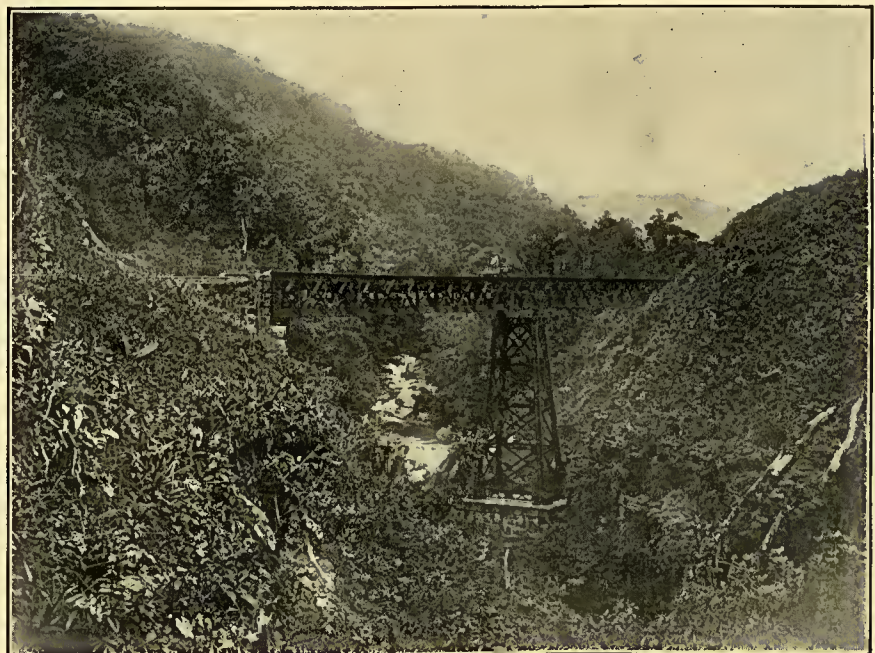
must be employed. A grave obstacle to American competition with European exporters to Brazil is the fact that freight rates to Brazil are higher from the United States than from European ports, merchants claiming that it is cheaper to ship from North America *via* Europe than direct to Brazil.

Several important steamship lines carry passengers and freight

between Brazil and foreign ports. The Pacific Steam Navigation Company's vessels make fortnightly trips from England to South America, calling at the European ports of Rochelle, Corunna, Oporto, and Lisbon, at the Cape Verde islands, the Brazilian ports of Pernambuco, Bahia, and Rio, and at the leading ports of Argentina, Uruguay, Chili, and Peru. The "Royal Mail" line of steamers, from England to South America, also makes fortnightly trips. An Italian line of steamers, "La Ligure Brasiliana," connects the European ports of Genoa, Marseilles, Barcelona, and Lisbon with the chief cities of the Amazon, Pará and Manãos; this line, which was established through the enterprise of the celebrated Italian statesman, Signor Gustavo Gavotti, has, for the accommodation of passengers, some of the finest ships in the transatlantic service, thoroughly modern in every respect, with electric lights, electric fans in the saloons and state-rooms, and an orchestra to supply music on board. The *Rio Amazonas* and the *Re Umberto*, which sail in alternate months, are under the command of courteous and attentive officers, who leave nothing undone that may contribute to the comfort of their passengers. The Hamburg-American line of Germany also has steamers running to Pará and Manãos monthly. The pioneer line in the steamship service from England to Brazil was the Lamport & Holt, the first steamer leaving Liverpool for Rio de Janeiro nearly half a century ago. Besides the line from England, there is now a fortnightly service of passenger steamers of this company from New York to Rio, calling at Pernambuco and Bahia, and freight vessels are constantly on the ocean carrying the commerce of these ports. While their passenger steamers are not so large as the ships of the great transatlantic lines, they are very commodious and well furnished, affording all the advantages of good ventilation, which is a very important consideration in voyages across the equatorial line. Among other companies operating steamship lines to Brazil are the "Prince," "Norton," and "Sloman," from New York to Rio de Janeiro, several French lines

from Havre, the Panama Railroad Company's steamers from New York to Colon, connecting with Royal Mail steamers for all South American ports, and the "Booth" and "Red Cross," with an average, together, of six steamers per month, three of their boats leaving Liverpool *via* Lisbon and Havre for Pará, Manãos, Ceará, and Maranhão, and returning to New York *via* the West Indies, while three start from New York for the Amazon, returning to Liverpool.

For the purposes of interstate travel and commerce, Brazil has several steamship lines of her own. With a navigable system of water ways covering fifty thousand miles, the principal method of transportation between the various points of her immense territory is by steamer, though extensive railway facilities meet all requirements where a water way is not available. The main artery of navigation in Brazil is the mighty Amazon, the first system having been established, in 1853, between Manãos and Pará, now extending up the river as far as the Peruvian border. A steamboat ascends the Amazon in a fortnight, while a sailing vessel requires from three to four months going up and about two months returning. The principal ports along the river from Pará are Santarem, Obydos, Manãos, and Teffé. The city of Manãos, the rapidly growing and prosperous capital of Amazonas, has had direct service with Liverpool since 1874, with New York since 1882, and with Rio de Janeiro since 1884. The main tributaries of the Amazon are navigable over a great part of their course. Vessels can ascend the Madeira as far as the falls of Santo Antonio, and again beyond them to the interior of Matto Grosso, this being the popular means of communication with outside ports for western Matto Grosso and eastern Bolivia; the distance from Pará to Matto Grosso over this route is about two thousand miles. The tributary Purus is navigable about a thousand miles, as far as the Acre. The Rio Negro carries vessels for three hundred miles, up to the town of Santa Izabel. The Tocantins, Xingu, and Tapajos are navigable for hundreds of miles, interrupted, however, by cascades. Since September 7, 1867, the Amazon has been open to merchant ships of all nations. The usual route for transportation from southeast Matto Grosso to outside ports is by the Paraguay River and its tributaries, navigation being uninterrupted from Buenos Aires to Cuyabá,



PARANA RAILROAD BRIDGE OVER THE IGUASSÚ RIVER.

the capital of Matto Grosso, a distance of about two thousand miles. In 1858, the river Paraguay was opened to foreign merchant ships. A Brazilian steamship line, the "Lloyd-Brazileiro," runs regularly between Rio de Janeiro and Curumbá, in Matto Grosso, *via* La Plata and the Paraguay River route, connecting with smaller boats for Cuyabá, requiring a month for the trip. The same company has a line of steamers between Rio de Janeiro and Manaus, on the Amazon, the trip requiring about two weeks, and covering over three thousand miles. The vessels are of English manufacture, built expressly for the coast trade; they are well constructed, and are commanded by polite and experienced officers.



VIADUCT ON THE PARANA RAILWAY.

Another Brazilian line, the "Navegação Costeira," under the proprietorship of the Messrs. Lage Brothers, connects Rio de Janeiro with all southern Brazilian ports, including Santos, Paranaguá (the sea-port of Curitiba), Florianopolis, Rio Grande do Sul, and Porto Alegre. The boats of this line are very commodious, comfortable, and clean, having well-supplied tables, and officers thoroughly acquainted with the obligations of their position. Other native steamship lines are "Viação do Brazil," "Companhia Pernambuco," "Esperança Maritima," and "Espírito Santense de Navegação a Vapor." Besides the larger water ways, there are boats plying up and down all the smaller rivers and streams.

The railroad systems of Brazil, already completed, ten years ago exceeded in mileage those of any other South American country, notwithstanding the great difficulties of construction which are encountered in all efforts of

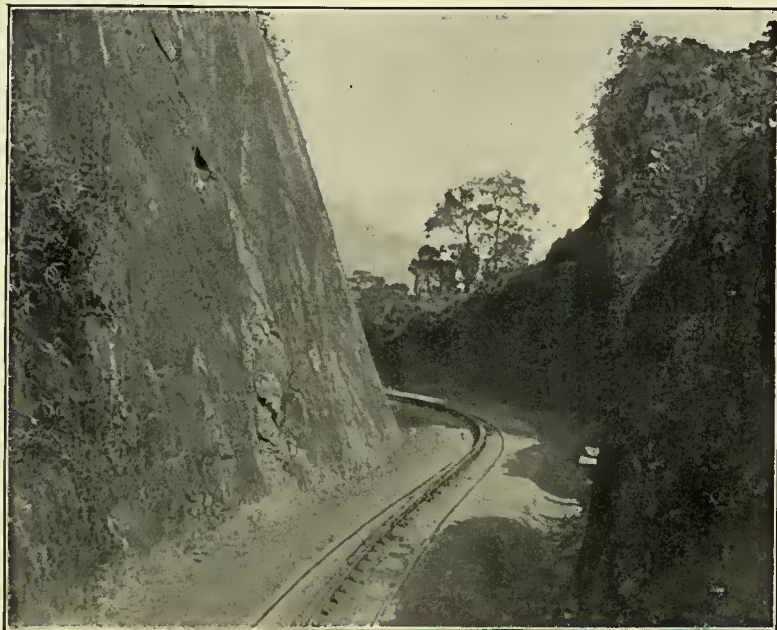
railroad engineering within the territory. During the last ten years of the republic, the trackage has been doubled. There are now sixty-three separately operated railways, the length of line under traffic being nearly ten thousand miles. The Federal government operates five lines, with a length of twelve hundred and eighty-seven miles; the State governments, four lines, with a length of one hundred and ten miles; guaranteed companies, nearly five thousand miles, and other companies about three thousand miles. The government has leased several of its railways to companies, experience proving that these lines pay better dividends under such management than under government control.

The first railroad track in Brazil was laid in 1854, at Mauá, the landing for boats taking passengers to and from Rio across the bay to connect with conveyances between that point and Petropolis. The line was opened to traffic in 1856, running, at first, only from the landing to the foot of the mountains, though it has since been extended up the mountain and beyond Petropolis, now forming a part of the Leopoldina system. In honor of its promoter, Visconde de Mauá, the pioneer of railroad building in Brazil, this line was called the Mauá Railway. Next to the Mauá, the Recife and São Francisco Railway is the oldest in Brazil, and, with the exception of the Copiapo Railway in Chili, the oldest in South America. The Visconde de Mauá was also one of the promoters of this line, which was subsidized by the government, the concessionaire being Mr. Alfred de Mornay, an English engineer, who secured his grant in 1852, and, in 1854, turned over the privileges to the Recife and São Francisco Railway Company, the plan at that time being to connect Recife [Pernambuco] with the São Francisco River above the Paulo Afonso rapids, though this project, which would require a railroad nearly five hundred miles long, has never been accomplished. The construction of the road was begun in 1855, and was completed in 1862. It is paying good dividends. In 1858, a section of railroad was opened from Rio de Janeiro to the town of Belem, about thirty miles; a few years later, the government bought it, and completed the work across the mountains of the Serra do Mar, giving the railroad the name "Dom Pedro II.,"

by which it was known until rechristened under the republic the "Central Railway of Brazil." The "Central," as it is familiarly called, now connects the Federal capital with the chief cities of São Paulo and Minas Geraes, has a trackage of nearly a thousand miles, extending to the heart of the richest gold-mining region, and is the most important railroad in Brazil, with the largest income and expenditure, and enjoying a monopoly of the terminal facilities at the port of Rio. It also controls most of the suburban traffic of the capital. The estimated cost of this system to the government was about one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, gold, per mile. It has three tracks for ten miles out of Rio, and a



SCENE ALONG THE PARANA RAILROAD.



THREE-RAIL TRACK ON LEOPOLDINA RAILROAD, STATE OF RIO.

metropolitan in appearance and complete in arrangement. Railroad fare is cheaper than in some other countries, but baggage is charged extra, except small hand-bags.

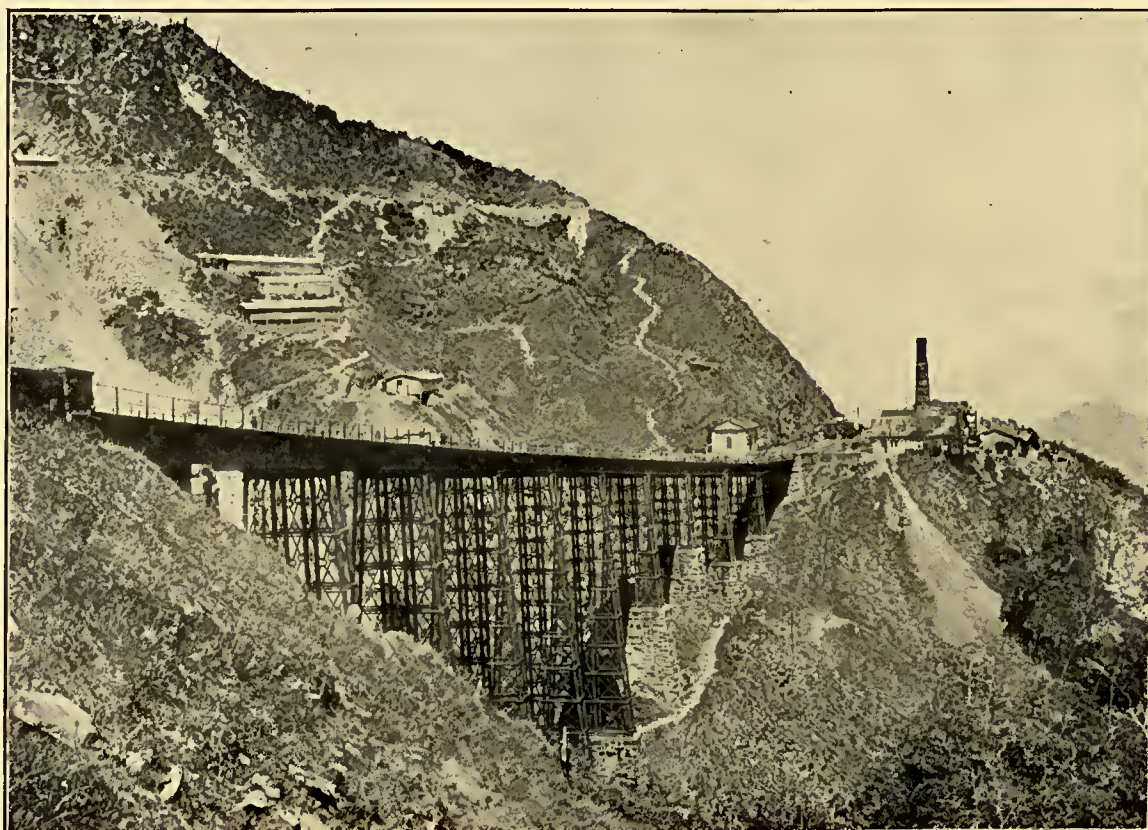
The most profitable railway in Brazil is the São Paulo, first opened in 1866, from Santos to São Paulo and Jundiahy, a distance of about a hundred miles. This line passes through the most productive coffee region in the world, and connects all the other railroads of the State with the sea-port. It pays an annual dividend of over ten per cent., and its freight rates on coffee are lower than those of any other railroad in Brazil. From Santos to the city of São Paulo an ascent of two thousand six hundred feet is made within five miles, divided into four planes of equal length, the trains being pulled up and down by cables operated by stationary engines. The track is being duplicated for the better accommodation of the enormous traffic. It is broad-gauge and double, and cost one hundred and fifty thousand dollars per mile for construction, including terminals. The gross income is said to be about forty thousand dollars a mile. Other lines of railway in the State of São Paulo are the Paulista, connecting the São Paulo Railway with the city of Campinas, and by branch lines with other interior towns; the Sorocabana, running west from the capital and covering the southern part of the State, one of its branches being extended toward the Parana frontier, with the object of connecting with the São Paulo and Rio Grande, which, when completed, will give a continuous line of railway from the Rio, Minas, and São Paulo systems down through the States of Parana and Santa Catharina to Rio Grande do Sul; and the Mogyana, extending from Campinas into western Minas, within about fifty miles of the State of Goyaz. This line will probably be built as far as Cuyabá, the capital of Matto Grosso, which is now reached only *via* La Plata. The State of Rio is gridironed by the Leopoldina system of railways, which has more mileage than any other line in Brazil, and ranks next

double track three miles farther. Besides suburban trains every few minutes, seven trains a day run as far as the junction of the São Paulo and Minas divisions, two trains a day leave for the end of the Minas line, four trains daily reach Juiz de Fóra and Barbacena, in the State of Minas, and two trains a day to and from São Paulo. The passenger coaches are modern in style and very comfortable, the sleeping-cars being fitted up with all necessary conveniences. The Grand Central Station in Rio is a handsome modern depot,

in importance to the Central. It is owned by an English company, and consists of two lines, one of which connects the city of Rio de Janeiro with Petropolis, São José, and Rio Preto by ferry from Rio to Mauá, and thence by rail over the Serra da Estrella, passing through a region renowned for the beauty of its scenery; the other line crosses the Serra de Boa Vista from Nicheroy, and by numerous branches extends to all the chief towns of this State, southern Minas, and the western part of Espirito Santo.

The Parana Railroad, connecting the State's chief sea-port, Paranagua, with the capital, Curytiba, and towns farther inland, is a masterpiece of engineering, surmounting the *serra* without the aid of cogs or cables, by means of trestles, bridges, tunnels, and innumerable curves. There are seventeen tunnels in all on the road up the mountain. The Parana Railroad was built by a French company, and opened to traffic in 1883. It is now under Swiss management, and is extending its tracks far into the interior of the State. A great deal of the yerba maté of Parana is shipped over this road to the sea-port of Paranagua.

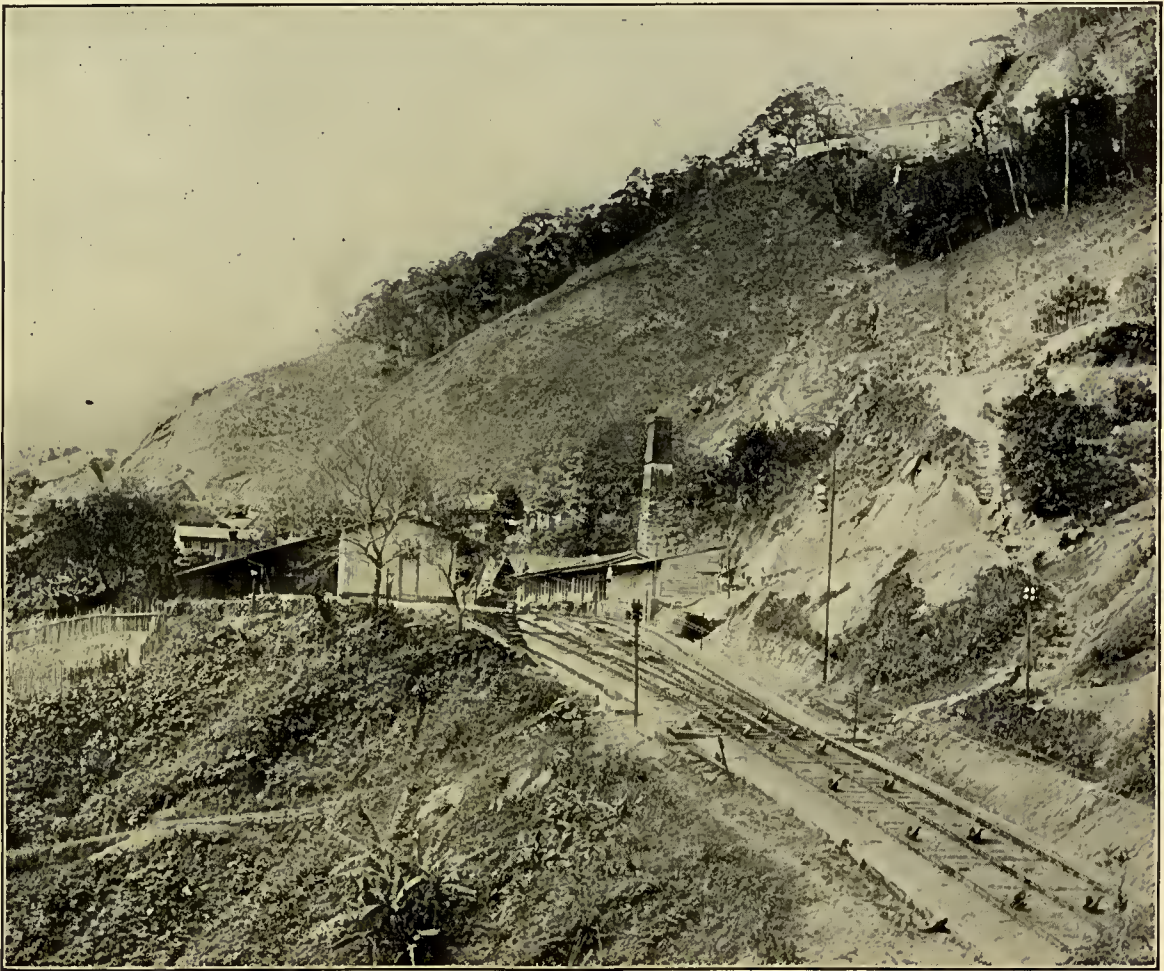
The State of Bahia has six separate railroads, of which the Central, running from Bahia harbor, opposite the city, up the Paraguassú valley to the Bahia diamond-fields and crossing a territory rich in sugar and tobacco, is the most important from a financial standpoint. The Bahia and São Francisco Railway is nearly three hundred miles in length, connecting the city of Bahia with the river São Francisco at the town of Joazeiro, where a line of steamers



VIADUCT ON THE SERRA BETWEEN SANTOS AND SÃO PAULO.

makes further connection up the river and its tributary, the Rio das Velhas, a thousand miles into the interior of Minas Geraes, near the diamond-fields of that State.

Besides these lines, there are railroads from Pará to Bragança, sixty-five miles; from the river Itapicurú to the river Parahyba, in the State of Maranhão; from Fortaleza to Baturité, in Ceará, fifty miles; and from Camocim to the interior of the same State, a hundred miles; the Natal and Nova Cruz, in Rio Grande do Norte, seventy-five miles; the Parahyba and Independencia, fifty miles, in the State of Parahyba; the Great Western,



CABLE ROAD BETWEEN SANTOS AND SÃO PAULO.

seventy miles, and the Pernambuco Southern, ninety miles in length, in the State of Pernambuco; the Alagoana Central, running from Maceio to the interior of Alagoas for a distance of a hundred miles, and the Paulo Affonso, connecting the lower with the upper São Francisco around the famous falls; the Santo Amaro, Nazareth, and Caravellas, in the State of Bahia; the Espirito and Caravellas and the Cachoeiro Railway, in the State of Espirito Santo; in southern Brazil, the Dona Theresa Christina, in the State of Santa Catharina; the São Paulo and Rio Grande from the western terminus of the Parana Railway,

north and south, one hundred and fifty miles, designed to connect the southern system of railways between Rio de Janeiro and Rio Grande do Sul; and the Uruguayana, extending from the river port of Taquary half-way across the State of Rio Grande do Sul; the Cruz Alta, branching from the Uruguayana, is to extend northward to connect with the São Paulo and Rio Grande; the Rio Grande Southern connects Pelotas with the interior of the State.

As will be seen from a study of the railways already in operation, very little extension is needed to complete a system that will extend from the extreme north of Brazil to its southern boundary. In the interior, new lines are under construction in the States of Goyaz and Matto Grosso, and efforts are being made to induce the investment of capital necessary to complete the abandoned work on the Madeira River, which requires only a short line to greatly facilitate transportation from the heart of the continent to the Atlantic sea-board *via*



A RIVER-BOAT WITH NATIVE INDIAN OARSMEN.

this route. Notwithstanding the almost insurmountable difficulties of construction, railroads now cross all the principal mountain ranges, the engineering feats on some of the lines being most remarkable. The highest point of altitude reached by railway in this country is at Ouro Preto, in the State of Minas Geraes, five thousand feet above the sea. There are several imposing railway viaducts, notably the one crossing the Paraguassú between Cachoeira and São Felix, in Bahia, and another, more than a mile long, where the coal mines of Tubarão, in Santa Catharina, are located.

The transportation facilities of Brazil by vigorous extension keep pace with the needs of her growing commerce. As foreign trade increases, and especially as the relations of the three Americas become more intimately connected, the problem of transportation presents new features, demanding the most careful attention. At the Pan-American Congress, which

was held in Philadelphia in 1890, it was suggested that the commercial interests of all the countries on the American continent would be advanced by the construction of a great Pan-American railway connecting North, Central, and South America, utilizing existing railways where possible. It remains to be seen whether such a plan will ever be realized; but, in the meantime, Brazil has overcome the most serious obstacles in railroad building, and is now, as has already been stated, rapidly pushing her various lines toward the interior. A bill was recently presented to the Brazilian Congress authorizing the Araraquara Railway Company to build a line from San José do Rio Preto, in the State of São Paulo, to Cuyabá, in Matto Grosso, crossing the Paranahyba River just north of its confluence with the Rio Grande, and at the point marked by the junction of the four States of São Paulo, Minas Geraes, Goyaz, and Matto Grosso. The guarantee required from the government by the company constructing this road includes a privileged zone of twenty kilometres on each side of the centre of the line for a period of fifty years; the right of making necessary disappropriations; and exemption from customs on materials. These contemplated new lines and the extension of existing roads will, without doubt, lead to the rapid development of vast resources as yet untouched and will consequently materially improve the commercial importance of the country, leading inevitably to an increase of facilities for foreign transportation, by the organization of large steamship companies and a quicker service between foreign ports and Brazil.

Complete telegraph and submarine cable systems connect the chief towns and cities of Brazil. The government telegraph lines have a total length of 12,000 miles, with 25,000 miles of wire. A submarine cable of about three thousand miles extends from Pará to Montevideo, another cable connecting Brazil with Europe *via* Cape Verde and Lisbon.



VIEW OF HARBOR AT SANTOS.



PETROPOLIS.

CHAPTER XIV

THE STATE OF RIO



DR. QUINTINO BOCAYUVA,
PRESIDENT OF THE STATE OF RIO.

SITUATED in a fertile region, and possessing the advantages of a moderate climate favored alike by the mountain air and the sea-breeze, the State of Rio borders, on three sides, one of the most famous harbors in the world, and constitutes the only outlet for the overland traffic of the Federal capital and district, a complete net-work of railways penetrating every section of its territory and connecting its towns and cities with each other and with the great metropolis. Chief among its cities is the world-famed Petropolis, not only renowned for the beauty of its scenery and the salubrity of its climate, but having especial importance as the summer capital of the republic, and the permanent residence of the foreign diplomatic corps in Brazil, as well as the favorite summer resort of residents of the Brazilian metropolis. Situated in the Serra da Estrella, it presents an enchanting

picture in the variety and charm of its Alpine effects. It is particularly attractive in the first blush of morning, when, as some one has exquisitely described it, "the sun rises in all his splendor above the seven hill-tops, lighting up the dull, grassy green of the orange-groves, the tall, feathery crests of the graceful palms, the huge banner-like leaves of the banana, the spiky columns of the cactus, the great rocks that stand isled in the sea of vegetation, and the rainbow plumage of the humming-birds and butterflies that hover enjoyingly on the warm, voluptuous air, till all above and below is a dazzling blaze of glory." One can imagine nothing more delightful than in the early morning hours "to take a horseback ride along the smooth road, with all the glories of tropical vegetation poured out like a flood over the great mountain walls on each side; to see the little river dancing and leaping among the black, broken rocks below, now flashing its foam in the sunlight, now slinking

shyly away beneath the shadow of overhanging trees; to watch the broadening sunshine roll across the endless range of woods, tree-top after tree-top catching the glow till the whole forest is one sea of splendor; to feel the fresh mountain breeze stirring your blood till it leaps through your veins, making mere existence an enjoyment." Any one who has seen the place will readily recognize a description of that picturesque path, with its "over-arching leaves of brightest crimson, crumbling walls alive with glittering lizards, and great boulders of black rock down which the living green of the trailing fern pours itself in a

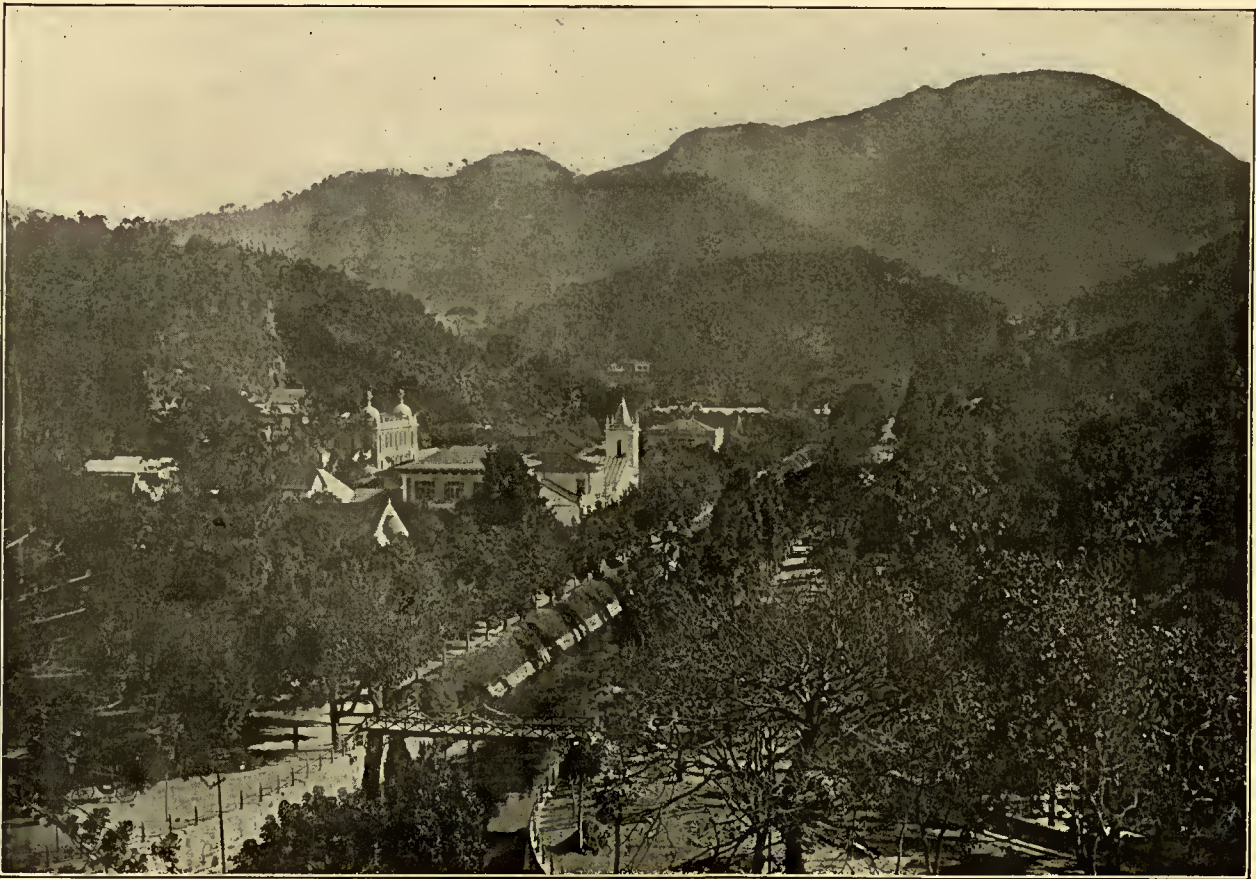


RIVER SCENE IN PETROPOLIS.

silent water-fall, and huge bell-like convolvuli twining lovingly round the maimed stumps of the felled trees."

During the social season, which is from December to May, Petropolis is the scene of continued gaiety, its drives thronged with carriages and its homes brilliant with various festivities. Originally founded in 1845, as an agricultural colony with a small German population, the city has grown to be the Versailles of the Brazilian capital; as the favorite resort of wealth and fashion, and an important educational centre, it has some advantages above all other Brazilian cities. It is unique as the only city outside of a national capital that is the permanent residence of the foreign diplomatic corps. This distinction was first

gained when, in consequence of a yellow-fever epidemic in Rio de Janeiro, the diplomatic body sought shelter in this beautiful spot, twenty-eight miles from the capital and three thousand feet above its level. At first, only nine months of the year were spent here, during which daily visits were made to and from the city; but this routine being very tiresome, the chiefs of diplomatic missions petitioned their governments to authorize the establishment of permanent residences in Petropolis. All the legations are now located there except the Italian, which is built upon a beautiful site among the hills of Tijuca, where



PRINCIPAL AVENUE OF PETROPOLIS, BATHED BY RIO PIABANHA.

its distinguished minister, Count Antonelli, dispenses charming hospitality. As the residence of about twenty foreign diplomatic representatives, Petropolis is one of the most important small cities in the world. Situated in the midst of rich tropical verdure, and affording an endless variety of effects in landscape and architecture, some of its most charming features are derived from the legation villas, which, as a rule, are located most attractively, surrounded by gardens and well-trimmed lawns. The German legation, presided over by one of the most honored of European diplomatists, Count D'Arco Valley, occupies a particularly picturesque spot; the American legation, whose quarters are the official residence of Minister Charles Page Bryan, is established in a beautiful mansion, a typical Brazilian



JAPANESE LEGATION, PETROPOLIS.

country-house, with broad verandas and spacious grounds, better known, perhaps, than any other foreign residence in Brazil, from the genial hospitality dispensed on all occasions by its distinguished chief; the Japanese legation has an admirable site, and is the frequent scene of delightful gatherings, the resident minister, Dr. Okoshi, and his accomplished wife being great favorites in social and diplomatic circles.

Just opposite the residence of the American legation is situated the palace which was the summer residence of the second emperor, a large and commodious building with extensive grounds, at present the property of Isabel, Condessa d'Eu, and used for a young ladies' seminary. Several of the city's schools and colleges are conducted under foreign management, among the most important being the German college for boys, to which youths from all over Brazil are sent for

training; and the American college for girls, an excellent institution under the direction of Miss Watts, an American resident in Brazil for nearly twenty years, and during that time devoted to educational enterprises.

The present president of the State of Rio, Dr. Quintino Bocayuva, resides in Petropolis. As statesman, orator, and journalist, Dr. Bocayuva, who is a staunch republican, has wielded an important influence in Brazilian politics from the first days of his public career. Progressive and enterprising in his efforts for the advancement of his country's best interests, he gives close attention to every detail of his present high office, laboring by every means in his power to promote those conditions most favorable to the growth and prosperity of the State.

In addition to the interest that attaches to the summer capital as a fashionable resort, the seat of foreign diplomatic missions, and an educational centre, it has many commercial attractions in the nature of large spinning-mills, factories, and breweries. The population numbers about twenty-five thousand. From Petropolis an old turnpike-road extends to Juiz de F6ra, in the State of Minas, a distance of nearly one hundred and fifty miles, a highway which was first opened after the construction of the Mau6 railway, for the purpose

of bringing down the produce of the interior. Although the Central Railway now carries all this traffic, the road is still a favorite drive-way. A railroad connects Petropolis with Nictheroy, a busy city of thirty thousand people, lying on the eastern shore of the bay of Rio, opposite to the Federal capital. Nictheroy, an Indian name signifying "hidden water," was an Indian settlement at the time of the discovery of Brazil. It is to-day a thriving and prosperous city, with extensive business enterprises, its cotton-mills and match factory employing thousands of workmen. It is divided into three wards, or districts: Praia Grande, the business section; S. Domingos, where the old palace of the President is situated, as well as a number of picturesque villas and *chacaras*; and the magnificent suburb Ica-



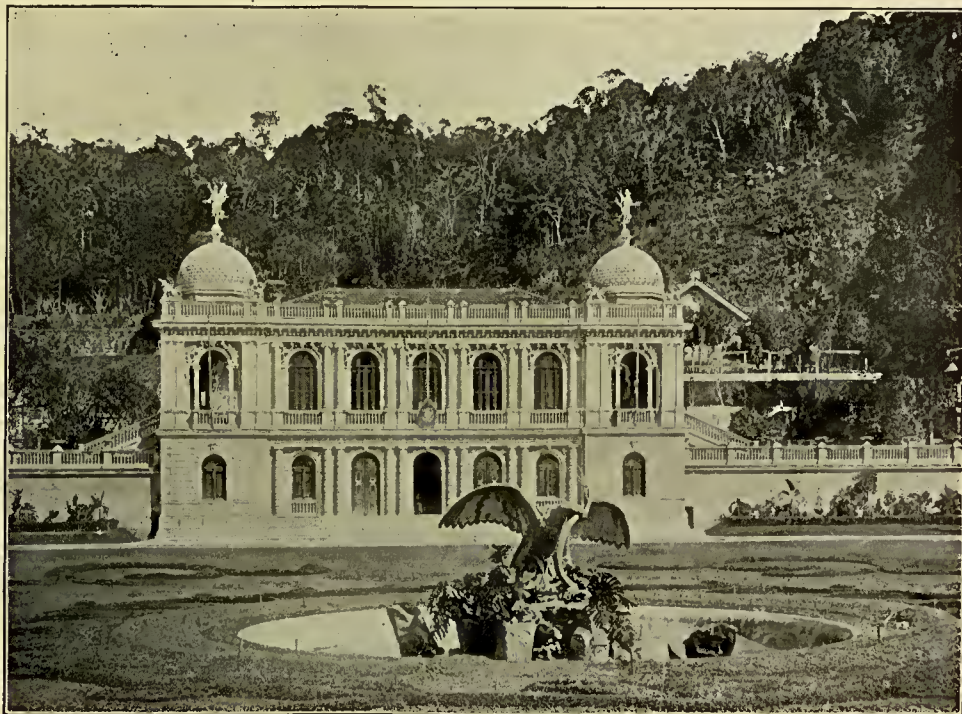
OLD DILIGENCE ROUTE TO PETROPOLIS.

rahy, famed for its baths, beautiful drives, and enchanting scenery. By a charter of May 10, 1819, the name Villa Real da Praia Grande was given to this city, and in 1835 it was made the provincial capital, under its present title. The municipality includes the six parishes, João Baptista, S. Lourenço, Nossa Senhora da Conceição da Jurujuba, São Sebastião de Itaipú, S. Gonçalo, and Nossa Senhora da Conceição de Cordeiros. Seven public squares, or *praças*, ornament the city, of which the Pinto Lima, with its verdure-clad garden, is the most attractive. The streets are broad, well paved, well lighted, and traversed by a complete system of street railways, or "bonds." Many handsome public buildings have been constructed, including the charity hospital, Asylo de Santa Leopoldina, the new marine hospital of Santo Isabel in Jurujuba, the municipal chambers, hospital of São João Baptista, Pyrotechnic Laboratory, Normal School, theatres, and churches. The *Barcas* ferry connects Nictheroy with Rio de Janeiro. Among the flourishing towns that reflect more or less the life of these larger cities are Campos, Macahé, São João da Barra, Itaborahy, Rezende, Nova Friburgo, and the celebrated mountain resort, Theresopolis. Campos, with a population of about twenty thousand, is the largest and richest of these towns. It is built on a plain over

which the sea-breeze blows with refreshing coolness. Three railroads respectively connect it with the Federal capital, the State of Minas Geraes, and the State of Espirito Santo. The municipal building is a neat edifice, containing, among other important features, a valuable library, besides which there are two smaller libraries open to the public, the property of particular societies. The town is situated on the banks of the Parahyba, an iron bridge crossing the river at this point. By means of a grand canal, Campos is connected with the sea-port Macahé, a railway also uniting the two towns. Among the successful institutions of Campos are the Society of Agriculture, benevolent societies, hospitals, the Jockey Club, and musical, dramatic, and dancing societies. Three newspapers are published here, and the professions are well represented.

Macahé is a sea-port of considerable importance, having a regular line of steamers that connect it with Rio de Janeiro and near coast towns; it is an enterprising town, and the centre of a fertile district where coffee, sugar, and *feijão* [the black bean] are grown in great quantities. The Quissaman sugar factory in this municipality produces about forty thousand bags of sugar a season, and one of the growing industries is the manufacture of bricks.

The Swiss colony of Nova Friburgo is the oldest immigrant settlement in Brazil, having been established, in 1819, on the site of the present progressive little city of that name. The location of the colony could not have been better chosen, as the climate is perfect, the soil rich and fertile, and the scenery indescribably beautiful, the approach by railway rivalling in some aspects the marvellous grandeur of the route to Petropolis. The feats of



LIBRARY, PETROPOLIS.

engineering accomplished on the line of the Leopoldina in this vicinity are remarkable; the Fell system is used in making the ascent of the *serra* for a distance of about ten miles, and an elevation of nearly four thousand feet is reached at the highest point, or Alto da Serra, from which the town is scarcely ten miles distant, with an altitude of about three thousand feet. Nova Friburgo is the centre of a productive coffee district, and within easy distance of the Federal capital, where many of its wealthy proprietors spend the winter season.



GERMAN LEGATION, PETROPOLIS.

São João da Barra, named from a church erected at this place by the Portuguese settlers at the beginning of the seventeenth century and dedicated to Saint John the Baptist, is a growing town, of about ten thousand inhabitants, situated on a tongue of land, about a mile square, at the mouth of the Parahyba River. The large sugar-refineries of Usina Barcellos give additional importance to its manufacturing industries, which include several mills and other enterprises. To São João da Barra belongs the honor of having nurtured one of the great poets of Brazil, Casimiro de Abreu. Itaborahy, a little town not far from Nictheroy, is famous as the birthplace of the distinguished romancist Joaquim Manoel de Macedo.

Rezende, named in honor of the viceroy Conde de Rezende, under whose administration the town was founded a hundred years ago, is built on the right bank of the river Parahyba, in one of the most beautiful locations imaginable; three surrounding hills, upon the summit of each of which a pretty little church has been erected, give a charming effect to the scene. On the opposite bank of the river is the suburb of Campos Elyseos, with its neat little railway station on the line of the Central.

There are innumerable growing towns and villages dotting the landscape throughout the State, among others Cabo Frio, S. Fidelis, Cantagallo, Parahyba, Magé, Vassouras, Valença, Pirahy, Barra Mansa, Angra dos Reis, Paraty, Sapucaia, Rio Preto, and others. Besides the extensive cultivation of coffee, sugar, and cotton, the State of Rio yields good harvests of *feijão*, millet, fruit, and garden-stuffs; hides and lumber are also among the valuable

products. The State of Rio was separated from the national capital and district, in 1834, by the decree of the *acto adicional* of the Constitution, and Nictheroy was made its capital.

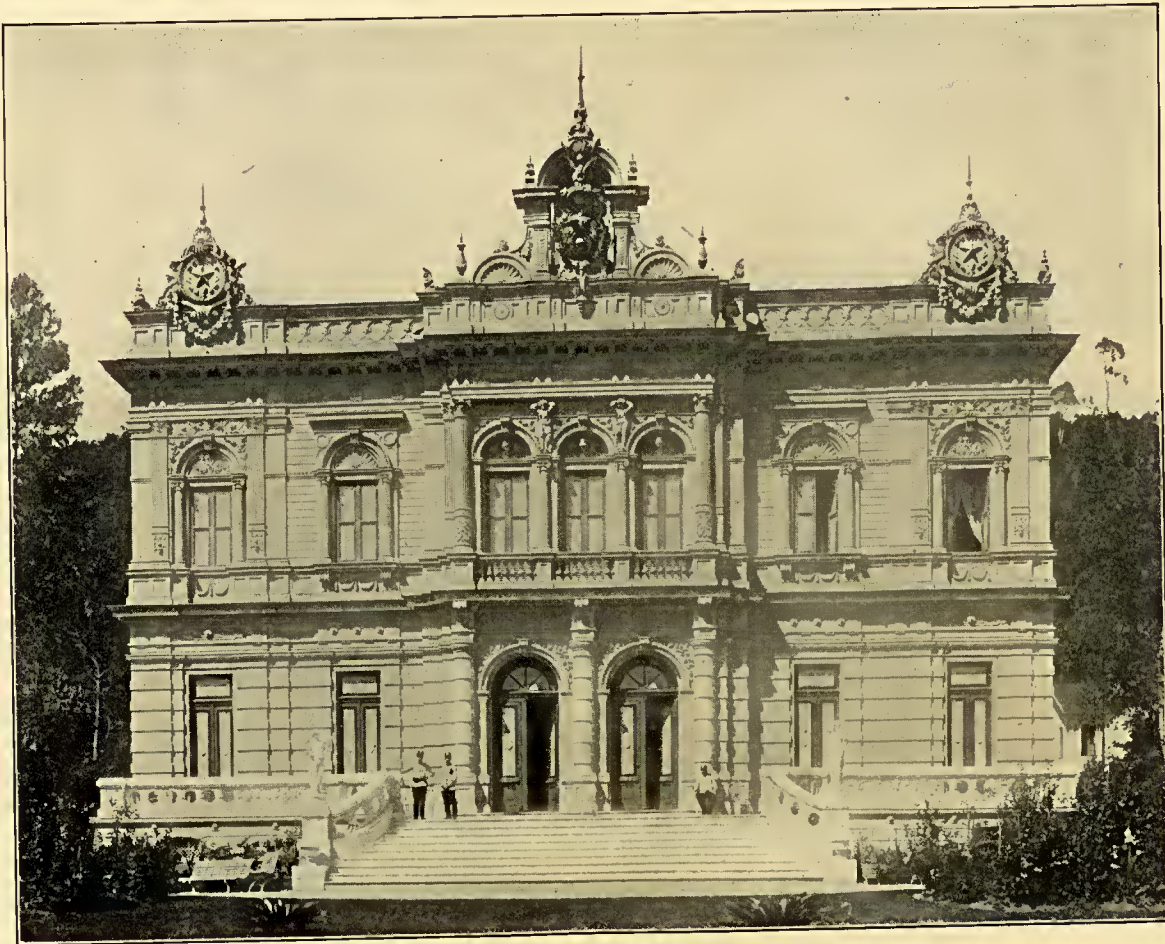
In the development of its cities and towns, Rio has had many advantages, not only because of excellent railway communication, and the inviting charm of natural beauty, but also in its proximity to the Federal capital, and the great harbor to which ships of all nations come; so that residents are constantly in touch with the outside world, living, so to speak, on the great highway of ocean travel. The climate of the State is, naturally, much more delightful and pure in the mountains than on the lowlands along the coast;



MOUNTAIN DRIVE-WAY, PETROPOLIS.

but, taken altogether, it is of average healthfulness. Yellow fever, which is popularly supposed to be endemic in Rio, made its first appearance, as stated elsewhere, in 1849, on a slave-ship, and was totally extinguished ten years later, not visiting the State again until 1869, when it was brought in by an Italian ship, the *Creola del Plata*. Since then, it has remained in gradually decreasing force up to the present time, though in some years, even in the hottest summer months, from December to May, there are only a few sporadic cases. With the constant effort of the government to stamp out the plague, there is good reason to believe that it will soon disappear permanently. Foreigners in Rio sometimes catch the fever through a disregard of simple rules of health, and many are victims through the

devitalizing effects of constant fear and dread. Under ordinary circumstances, the risk to health is no greater than that encountered in any country, during a hot season, from the many diseases that affect a debilitated system. The greatest difficulty is experienced in making the average stranger recognize the necessity for moderate living in a climate where every undue tax upon the system reduces the power of physical resistance so necessary for a successful battle with any disease. The high percentage of mortality among yellow-fever cases is due in a great measure to the fact that only a couple of days is necessary for



PRESIDENT'S PALACE, PETROPOLIS.

the attack to reach a crisis, and nine out of ten victims put off the necessary treatment until too late, not realizing the nature of their illness. Yellow fever has always been a bugaboo of terrible dimensions to the European or North American visiting Rio for the first time; but to those who know the real conditions it has less terror than the *grippe* of colder climates, since it is more easily avoided. Petropolis, Theresopolis, Nova Friburgo, and many other towns are entirely safe from contagious fevers, and are wonderfully free from sickness of any kind.

Several important islands in the harbor of Rio belong to the State, of which the Ilha das Flóres is the most important, having a large immigrant station and adjoining buildings. Two light-houses, the Cabo Frio and S. Thomé, protect the mariner from the rocks at these points.

In general development and commercial importance, Rio ranks among the first States of the Union. Its area is about thirty thousand square miles, and the length of its coastline a little more than five hundred miles. Several ranges of mountains cross the State, of which the chief are the Serra dos Orgãos and the Serra da Estrella; the river Parahyba is the principal water way in the northern part, for some distance marking the dividing-line between Rio and Minas Geraes. Although there is considerable forest land, the territory under cultivation is quite extensive, coffee being grown everywhere in the State, on the plains as well as along the sloping hill-sides. Rio coffee grown in this State is of prime quality, and the yield sometimes reaches an average of five or six pounds to the tree. Sugar and cotton plantations are numerous and under the highest cultivation. With the increasing net-work of railways, the commercial facilities of the State are constantly increasing, and a rapid growth in population is assured in consequence of the opportunities offered to immigrant colonies of an industrious class.



AMERICAN LEGATION, PETROPOLIS.



FAZENDA OF BARÃO GERALDO DE RÉZENDE.

CHAPTER XV

COFFEE



BARÃO GERALDO DE REZENDE.

BRAZIL produces two-thirds of all the coffee in the world. Ten million bags annually, or more than eight hundred thousand tons, are the average production. The vast wealth represented by this resource may be imagined from the amount paid annually by the United States of America alone for coffee, which reaches nearly a hundred million dollars in gold. Some of the best qualities of coffee on the market come from Brazil, the government sparing neither labor nor expense to introduce the best plants obtainable, free of charge to the planter, besides keeping up costly experimental stations for testing them. Nearly all the States of Brazil produce some coffee, though São Paulo is the coffee State *par excellence*, and the richest region in the world for this valuable product, the estimated number of coffee-bearing trees on its vast plantations reaching hundreds of millions. The great "Dumont"

fazenda, which belongs to an English syndicate, contains more than a hundred thousand acres of the best lands in the State of São Paulo, and has six million coffee-trees under cultivation. The profits of this enormous enterprise are said to reach the important sum of seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars in gold annually. The plantation has its own private railway connecting with the main line sixteen miles away. It gives support to more than a thousand families. The largest plantation, however, is the "Palmeiras," nearly forty miles long and thirty miles wide, and containing over three hundred thousand acres. Many of the coffee estates present attractive features aside from their commercial importance, and

most of them have associations that lend the charm of sentiment to their surroundings and history. Near the town of Campinas the fazenda of Barão Geraldo de Rezende, with half a million coffee-trees adorning its fertile hill-sides, presents an æsthetic aspect in its magnificent "casa" and gardens, inviting envy by the wonderful collection of rare orchids and the eight hundred different varieties of roses that bloom in its flower-beds. Within the mansion are all the evidences of luxurious and artistic tastes: a well-filled library, curious and costly statuary and bric-a-brac, fine old tapestries and carpets, paintings, music, and all that is needed to harmonize with the elegance and comfort of a handsomely appointed establishment. The broad acres of the Prado estate possess an interest of singular character through their intimate relation to the dramatic scenes of abolition days; it is impossible to contemplate the splendid picture of that flourishing forest of coffee-trees without seeing, in imagination, the glorious day when its princely proprietor, with a word, liberated his great army of slaves, setting an example to posterity by the free renunciation of a claim which the law of the land held to be honorable, but which the higher monitor within his own breast convinced him was wrong. In any country, such an adherence to principle at the expense of material possessions would command universal admiration. Other large plantations tell a similar story, for when the famous decree of emancipation was put into effect, in 1888, there were whole sections where planters were already paying wages for the labor on their farms. Many of the former slaves remained with their employers under the changed conditions, and pathetic stories are related of faithful and willing servants like the loyal old soul who, acting as spokesman for his brethren when their mistress gave them the papers that assigned to them their freedom, exclaimed, with feeling, as he tore the documents to pieces: "We have never been slaves while we worked for you!"

Since the emancipation of the slaves, Italian laborers have been employed in large numbers on the coffee fazendas, and, as a rule, they give perfect satisfaction, readily acquiring the language and finding the climate altogether agreeable. The demand for labor is always greater than the supply, and constant efforts are made to increase immigration and colonize the coffee and other agricultural districts of the States. An idea of the immense army of workers necessary to move the coffee crop may be gained from a statement of the extent of this industry in two of the principal States. There are 15,075 plantations in São Paulo, of which 11,234 have upward of 50,000 trees; 1844 have from 50,000 to 100,000, 999 between 100,000 and 200,000, and 597 from 200,000 to 500,000 trees. On these plantations are 1703 machines for cleaning coffee, of which 1243 are operated by steam and 460 by water. In the State of Minas Geraes, there are nearly three thousand plantations, 64 of which have over 500,000 trees each, 1243 of the machines running by steam and 500 by water power. Some of these plantations raise exclusively fine Java coffee from imported Java seeds; others grow only Mocha, and some produce the Bourbon variety recently introduced into Brazil.

From beginnings so small as to seem of utter insignificance, the coffee culture of Brazil has grown to such enormous proportions as to eclipse all competition, being sufficient to

meet the principal demand of the whole world, which, within less than two centuries, has increased from a single wagon load to about forty thousand car loads. Although of comparatively recent fame, the history of this now universal beverage is very ancient, Abyssinia and Ethiopia having used it as a medicine apparently from time immemorial, introducing it into Persia during the ninth century and into Arabia about the beginning of the fifteenth century. The Arabians seem to have been the first to drink coffee as a beverage, their writers of the end of the fifteenth century referring to it as a popular refreshment among the brain-workers in the city of Aden. From the Orient it gradually became known elsewhere, being offered for sale in Constantinople in 1554, in Venice in 1615, and in Germany in 1582. About the middle of the seventeenth century, the first coffee-house was opened in England, and by



A COFFEE-TREE.

the middle of the eighteenth century the culture of coffee was making good progress in America, having been begun first at Martinique, in the West Indies; a few years later at Pará, Brazil; and afterward in Rio, São Paulo, and other southern States of this country. About the middle of the eighteenth century, a Franciscan monk, Friar Villasco, brought some coffee-plants to Rio, and cultivated them in the garden of the monastery of São Antonio. A little later, Dom João Alberto Castello Branco, chancellor of the court of Rio, established a coffee farm from plants furnished by the Capuchin monks and by an Englishman named Hoppman, who afterward cultivated the product on a large scale on his plantation in the vicinity of Engenho Velho. Once begun, the culture of this product in Brazil spread rapidly, and as early as 1767 a Jesuit missionary in Amazonas reported that the people even of that remote section were making extensive experiments in coffee-growing. According to excellent authority, the first coffee plantation of importance was laid out by Father Antonio Lopes da Fonseca on his estate in Campo Grande; others were soon afterward established at Rezende, and São Gonçalo, in the State of Rio; then the neighboring States of São Paulo and Minas began the culture; and the Capuchins having given some settings to a planter of Villa Viçosa, the new enterprise was thus introduced into Bahia. The history of coffee export from Brazil begins in 1817 with the shipment of about sixty thousand bags, though two bags are said to have been sent to a foreign market as early as the first year of the nineteenth century. The rapid decline of coffee-planting in the West Indies and its failure

in Ceylon and other parts of the East leave Brazil to-day with few strong competitors, and open up possibilities for the foreign investor that can scarcely be offered elsewhere. To the ambitious farmer the opportunity is worth consideration. It is said that a small coffee orchard of from five thousand to ten thousand trees may be made to yield a splendid income by the cultivation of other crops at the same time, not interfering with the success of the principal product. Under proper management, coffee can be produced, as has been proved by some of the large companies who have investments in Brazil, at a greater profit than the western American farmer realizes on his corn at thirty cents or his wheat



DRYING COFFEE.

at eighty cents a bushel. It is a singular fact, that, while North American capital has been looking up the coffee industry in the far East, it has failed to study the fine opportunities in Brazil, where large sums have been invested by the English and Germans with eminently satisfactory results.

The epicure who sips his *café noir* with critical daintiness, can scarcely appreciate the care and delicacy of treatment necessary to bring about perfect results, from the time the little seed is planted in the red soil of sunny southern hill-sides to the important moment when the delicious beverage is served to his fastidious palate in a style according to the highest traditions of the caterer's art. Perhaps it would give zest to enjoyment if he

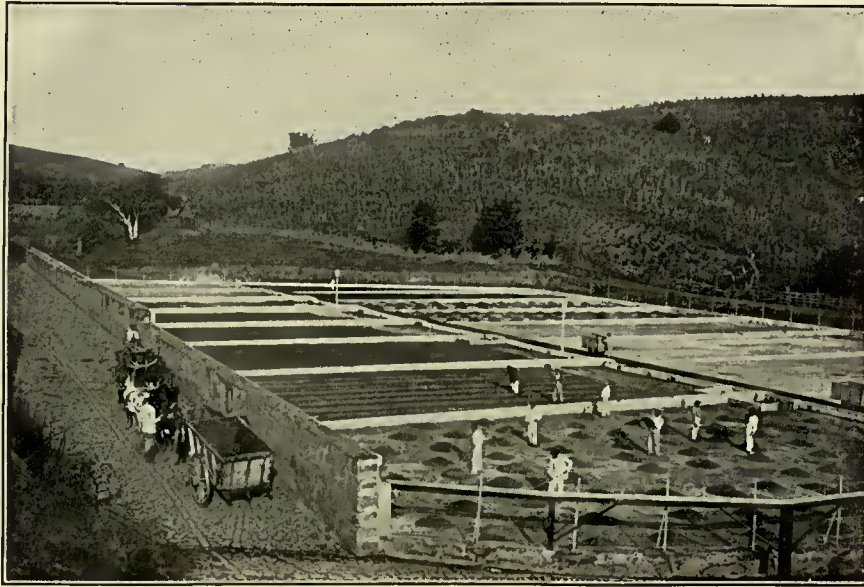
could call up in imagination the graceful little green coffee-trees nodding to the sway of soft breezes under the sapphire skies of their native land; the picture of peasant groups, with their "homely joys and destiny obscure"; the luxury and extravagance of the rich homes where *fazendeiros* live like princes; the whirl and din of the factory which converts the red berries into the coffee of commerce; the eager mart of traders and shippers, and the busy wharves where great ships wait to carry a precious burden across the seas. Every detail of the evolution of this delicious beverage possesses a distinctive charm. The nature and development of coffee affords material for description worthy of the most gifted pen. First, from the seed-beds where only the choicest beans are planted, the little shoot springs



PICKING COFFEE.

up, rapidly clothing itself with the richest verdure; every month it grows and spreads a little, until it has reached a couple of feet in height, when it is ready to be transplanted, and to begin its career as a full-fledged tree.

The coffee-tree is an evergreen, growing to a height of from five to twenty feet, according to variety, usually having a single trunk, though in Brazil it is often found growing from six or seven slender stalks. The leaves are long, smooth, and dark green in color, the blossoms growing in fragrant white bunches in the axils of the branches. The fruit grows in clusters varying from half a dozen to a dozen, and having very short stems or none at all. When ripe, it resembles a medium-sized cranberry. The coffee-bean of



SCENE ON A COFFEE FAZENDA.

commerce is the seed of this fruit, every berry having two seeds, or beans, shaped like irregular half-spheres, lying imbedded in its yellow, sweetish pulp, with their flat surfaces together so as to form almost a perfect sphere, separated only by a thin "parchment skin." When the berry is dried, the pulp hardens into a shell or pod. There is seldom a time of the year when

blossoms are entirely absent, and sometimes the fruit in all its stages, from the blossom to maturity, is found on the same tree. Coffee may be grown in climates free from frosts, where the soil is neither too dry nor too moist, these extremes being fatal to its culture. It is usually planted on the mountain slopes, a thousand feet or more above sea-level, but has been successfully grown also on fertile flat lands properly drained. The trees begin to bear when from three to five years old. The "Bourbon" variety will produce a good crop the third year, and the "Java," planted on the same land, will yield a satisfactory crop the fourth year. From the sixth year abundant harvests may be gathered up to the twentieth, after which the yield is less, until the fortieth, or, in some instances, the fiftieth year, when production ceases altogether. The average crop of a healthy tree from five to fifteen years old is about four pounds to a tree, though some plantations in favorable years have grown six and even ten pounds to the tree. An idea of the natural advantages which Brazil possesses as a coffee-growing country may be gained by comparing these averages with the records of some other coffee countries where the yield is little more than a pound per tree.

During the harvest, a coffee plantation is the scene of constant activity. The trees begin to blossom in September, and by April or May the fruit is ripe and ready for the pickers, who present a business-like appearance with their great baskets strapped on their shoulders, apparently eager to enter the arena of competition, where, like "pickers" the world over, they work for reputation, as well as money, the fame of being "the fastest picker in the State" having a charm no less potent to their limited ambition than are the superlatives that attract their fellow-men in higher fields of human endeavor. An honest incentive that lightens labor and offers a happy goal to human effort gives dignity to any toiler, however humble his position. In large plantations, the space necessary for the various processes of

treating the coffee from the time it is gathered and taken to the *terreiro* until ready for market embraces a surface of several acres, with mills, warehouses, stables, and machine-shops. The employés of the farm and factory include hundreds of families. The larger *cafezales* have a complete outfit for drying, shelling, and sacking the coffee. Nearly all the processes of preparation seek first the removal of the outer pulp by maceration in water, then the drying of the seeds, and finally the removal of the thin parchment-like skin that still envelopes them after the outer pulp has been taken off. By an additional process, the coffee is divided into classes according to form and size, as "Mocha," "Martinique," and other "sorts." The *cafezale* of a large fazenda is one of the most interesting establishments imaginable when converted into a hive of industry by the arrival of a harvest of the precious fruit. The first operation to which the berries are submitted is known as pulping, which is done by a machine that consists of a revolving iron cylinder set with teeth and covered on one side by a curved sheet of metal against which it impinges as it turns, the bottom of the cylinder being perforated so that the beans fall through, when free from the pulp, into a canal of flowing water that carries them into the fermenting tanks for the removal of the saccharine matter that must be washed off before they can be dried. There are usually three of these tanks, of which two are receiving cisterns, each large enough to accommodate the greatest possible daily gathering, and the third a cleansing tank, nearly as large as the other two combined; a good-sized outlet is provided with a sieve fine enough to retain the beans when the water is drawn off, without becoming clogged with the saccharine scum. After fermentation, the coffee passes into the cleansing tank, where the last trace of the saccharine matter is removed, and the beans are prepared for the drying process. All Brazilian fazendas have drying terraces made of cement, where the coffee is spread out in thin layers so as to have the full benefit of the sun's heat. Men with rakes are kept constantly busy turning the beans, to hasten the drying, which sometimes requires several weeks. An artificial method is occasionally employed by means of steam heat, but it is said that no other process is so satisfactory as the sun's rays. When the beans are dry, the "parchment skin" is removed by passing them between heavy rollers arranged for the purpose, the chaff being cleared away by a winnowing



A GROUP OF COFFEE-PICKERS.

process. The coffee is afterward separated into different grades, this operation being performed usually by women and girls, who work at a long table arranged for the purpose. Then the coffee is put up in coarse sacks, and sent to the nearest station for shipment to one of the sea-ports. Rio de Janeiro and Santos are the principal shipping ports for coffee, from which the Brazilian coffees receive the names "Rio" and "Santos" coffees. During the busy season, the warehouses have a lively appearance. The narrow streets are blockaded with wagons loaded with coffee; scores of stout-shouldered carriers hurry back and forth, taking on their heads the sacks from the wagons to the warehouses,



SÃO ANTONIO COFFEE FAZENDA, STATE OF SÃO PAULO.

while darting in and out among the wagons are women with sieves for scooping up the beans spilled on the ground in unloading, who often sell their little hoard for quite a considerable sum. In the warehouses the coffee is emptied out in great piles, and repacked in bags of uniform weight, sometimes by machinery, though generally by hand, the men employed in this work attaining great dexterity. At the wharves, carriers are busy unloading from the cars to the ships, policemen patrolling the landing to guard against any infringement of the law, especially to prevent stealing, as there is a great temptation to the sluggish conscience in the many opportunities offered to indulge such a propensity. Fights and

brawls are of rare occurrence, the disposition of the Brazilian, even among the lowest classes, being peaceable and good-natured.

The best coffees known to commerce are "Mocha" and "Java," specified as "mild" coffees. The beans of the Arabian Mocha are small and of a dark yellow, while those of Java are larger and of a pale yellow, or a brown, the brown Java beans being older and more valuable. Brazilian coffee is divided, commercially, into many grades, the fine grade consisting of regular-sized beans, free from hulls or other extraneous matter, while the lowest grade is not carefully assorted and may contain broken and defective beans as well as hulls, sticks, and other rubbish, which give it a cheap value in the market. In view of



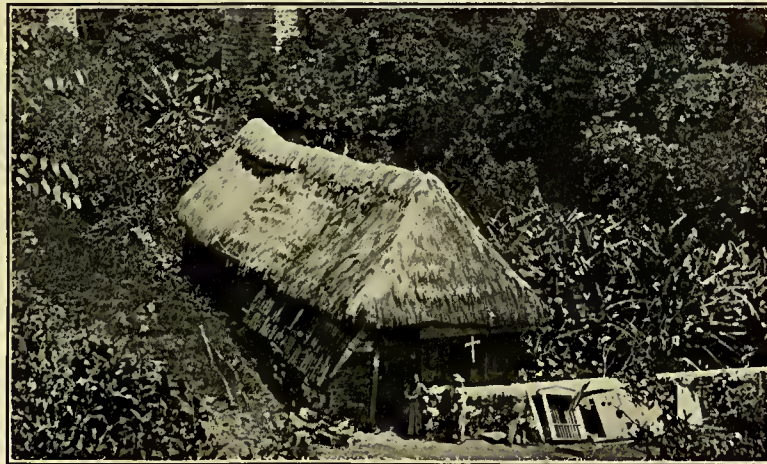
FAZENDA NOVA LONGA.

the constant effort of the government of Brazil to maintain a high standard of excellence in the culture of coffee, it is discouraging to know, that, while the inferior grades are recognized abroad in their true origin, the best qualities are frequently sold as Arabian Mocha, Java, or other Oriental coffees, sometimes even being shipped from Europe to Egypt, and thence to Arabia, for repacking in Mocha fashion, with the result that good Santos coffee, first sold in Brazil at five cents per pound, brings a retail price of forty-five cents a pound in foreign markets, after its transformation into "real Arabian Mocha."

In the raw state in which it is shipped the coffee has little flavor, the caffeine, a peculiar brown oil which gives coffee its characteristic aroma, being developed by the process of roasting. The Brazilians, who understand perfectly the nature of coffee, say

that its quality, its flavor and aroma, cannot be enjoyed to the full measure of its possibilities unless it is kept several years before using, always in a perfectly dry atmosphere. Some connoisseurs maintain that coffee is at its best after being kept eight years in this way. To make a good cup of coffee, the beans should be roasted and ground afresh each time, and never boiled, but reduced to fine powder and compressed in a woollen bag through which hot water is poured, so that a percolation rather than a decoction is the result. Coffee that has been gathered at least two years is used in preference to new coffee. The varied operations through which the coffee passes before it can be said to have "arrived" are altogether in keeping with the character of its destiny, the important rôle it plays in the progress of human affairs. "Coffee and pistols" has passed into a proverb significant of the close association of this beverage with the supreme moments of life; the "coffee-house" and the "café" have always been famous as the rendezvous of great men and the favorite resort of cabals; the dainty little coffee service in every home is intimately related to the sweetest and bitterest memories of life, and hearts have throbbed with courage or broken in despair under whispered words punctuating the pauses between sips of this divine nectar "when love was young and hopes were high."

In the homes of Brazil, where hospitality finds its sweetest expression, every guest is invited to enjoy a cup of coffee so perfectly prepared as to realize fully the famous formula of the immortal Talleyrand: "*Noir comme le diable, chaud comme l'enfer, pur comme un ange, doux comme l'amour.*"



COFFEE-GATHERER'S CABIN.



THE PALACE AT SÃO PAULO.

CHAPTER XVI

SÃO PAULO



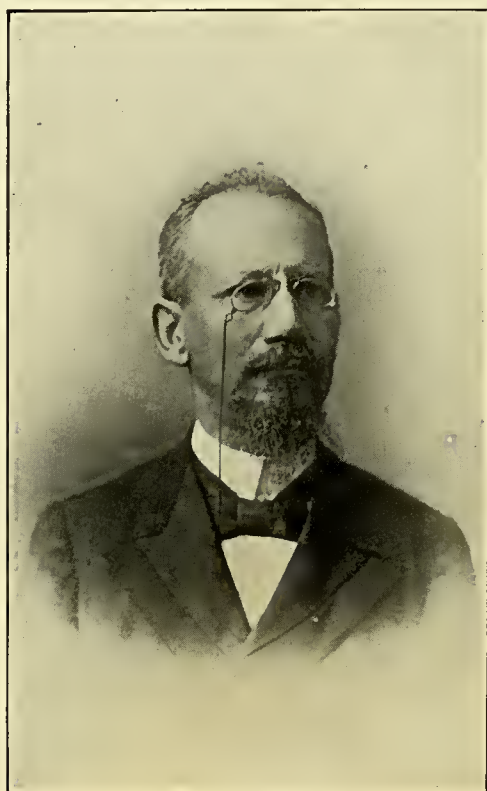
GARDEN SCENE, SÃO PAULO.

THROUGH all the varying fortunes attending the growth and advancement of Brazil, São Paulo has had such an important share that its history is indissolubly woven with the history of the nation. The civilization and development of central and southern Brazil especially have been largely due to the sturdy and energetic people of this territory, from the very earliest days, when, under the government of the redoubtable Ramalho, the *Mamelucos*, or pioneer Paulistas, rendered valuable assistance to Martim Affonso in settling the present State of São Paulo, which took its name from a mission founded by the Paulist priests on the site of the present State capital; overcoming every obstacle, the State has grown and prospered under all conditions, and to-day occupies a distinguished place as the most important of the Brazilian Union. Possessing extraordinary interest as the richest coffee-growing region in the world, it is further renowned as a great educational centre and as having a political constituency of the most important influence. The State covers an area of seventy-five thousand square miles, of which two-thirds is under cultivation, chiefly divided into coffee plantations, though the agricultural possibilities are almost unlimited, sugar, cotton, and tobacco constituting important articles of export, while increasingly favorable results are attending the fruit-growing interests, and the vineyards of the State are constantly improving in value.

The mineral resources also are extensive, and include gold, silver, precious stones, copper, iron, and coal. Iron is found in enormous quantities, especially in the mountains of

Araçoiaba and Ypanema, where large foundries and smelting-works are located; and the immense cattle-farms of the State are in a prosperous condition.

From its situation, São Paulo derives many advantages commercially, bordering the Atlantic Ocean on the southeast, the State of Rio on the east, Minas Geraes on the north, Matto Grosso on the west, and Parana on the south, and being in direct railway communication with them. A considerable extent of the northern, western, and southern limits is traced by the river Parana and its tributaries, the Rio Grande and Rio Paranapanema. A natural division of the State is made by the mountain chain, Serra do Mar, which crosses it near the southeastern border, parallel with the sea-coast, toward which it descends abruptly,



DR. RODRIGUES ALVES,
PRESIDENT OF SÃO PAULO.

leaving merely a narrow strip of lowland between, which is the only part of the State liable to malarial conditions, the climate of the interior being everywhere salubrious and equable. The course of the Serra do Mar is marked by wild and rugged mountains, extensive valleys, impetuous streams, and the varying landscape presented by flourishing coffee-fields adorning the hill-sides and rich cattle-farms dotting the valleys. In the west, the country consists of a high plateau, part of which is practically a *terra incognita*, though offering great reward to the bold pioneer who shall dare to penetrate its fastnesses. The river system of the State is excellent, the Tieté, with innumerable tributaries, crossing it from the Serra do Mar to the Parana River, of which it is one of the most important tributaries, passing through the State capital, watering vast coffee plantations in the central part and traversing the unknown territory of the west. In addition to the water ways of the Tieté and the boundary rivers, the populous section of the southeast is completely drained by the Rio Pardo, Iguape, Parahyba do Sul, and Mogy-

guassú. Excellent railroad facilities throughout the State greatly aid in its development, every town of importance being connected in this way with the capital city, and through it directly with the Federal capital.

The city of São Paulo, the capital of the State, within a quarter of a century has increased its population tenfold, from a town of twenty thousand inhabitants to a flourishing commercial and educational centre with a population of more than two hundred and fifty thousand. The municipal government is of the most advanced and progressive character, evidences of broad and liberal methods appearing in all the details of the administration. The city is one of the largest and most attractive in Brazil, being especially noted



VIEW OF SANTOS AND HARBOR.

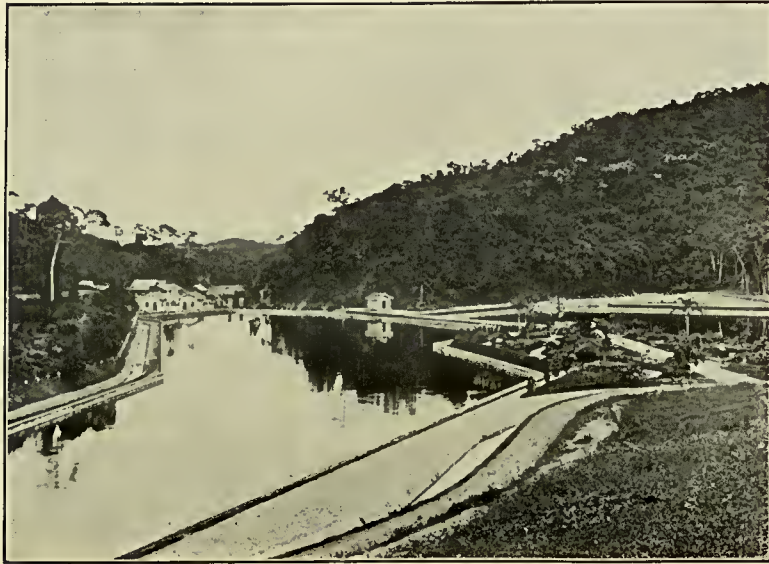
for its handsome public buildings, well-kept parks, and beautiful suburbs. The older section still preserves its identity as a product of Portuguese civilization, in the narrow streets bordered by low-built houses having façades of ornamental tiles in various designs. A superb viaduct connects the old with the new city, called the Viaducto Chá, or "tea viaduct," from the extensive tea-gardens formerly cultivated in the valley beneath. Truck-gardening and fruit-growing have quite superseded the culture of tea, and the view from the viaduct now shows a more attractive variety of scene, thoroughly rural but charmingly diversified. The greater part of the city is of modern construction, having broad, well-paved streets

crossing one another at right angles and divided into squares of handsome commercial buildings, palatial residences, colleges surrounded by beautiful lawns and gardens, or pretty cottages nestling under embowering trees.

The chief seat of educational activity in Brazil, São Paulo is essentially a "college town," maintaining altogether nearly eight hundred educational institutions. Of these, the most celebrated are the *Academia de Direito*, or Law School, the *Faculdade de Medicina*, the *Escola Polytechnica*, and the Normal School, all of which offer free instruction on the most liberal plan. The government also maintains a bacteriological institute, a pharmaceutical laboratory, and a laboratory for chemical analyses. The Gymnasio of São Paulo is conducted according to thoroughly modern methods, as are all the public schools of the city. The *Lyceu do Sagrado Coração de Jesus* and the *Seminario das Educandas* are excellent schools, occupying handsome and well-appointed buildings. As an indication of the standard of educational advancement in São Paulo and the general appreciation shown for the benefits of higher education, it is stated



PALACETE OF CONSELHEIRO ANTONIO PRADO, SÃO PAULO.



IMPOUNDING DAM, SÃO PAULO WATER-WORKS.

height. In the Largo do Palacio, as the name indicates, is situated the State president's palace, a commodious and elegant structure, fronting a beautiful tropical garden. The palace of the State Treasury, the offices of the departments of the Interior, Agriculture, and Justice, and the Post-office, also face the Largo do Palacio. The *Thesouraria Geral de Fazenda* is a magnificent edifice of attractive architectural design and distinctly metropolitan appearance, devoted to the uses of the Department of Finance. The Largo Municipal, which takes its name from the municipal palace overlooking it, is one of the most important squares of the city. The oldest park is the Jardim Publico, originally created by royal charter in 1790, though not completed until 1825, when it was opened to the public by order of the first president of the province, Visconde de Congonhas do Campó. Scarcely less beautiful than the parks are the extensive grounds belonging to some of the public institutions, of which there are several especially devoted to charity, as the Portuguese hospital, two lazarettos, and the asylum for the poor.

The suburbs are particularly attractive for their many charming drives, bordered by handsome villas or fine public edifices. In the suburb of

that at a recent banquet held in that city thirty of the guests were graduates of the highest universities on the American continent.

As in most college cities, the streets are beautified by numerous shade-trees, and the parks attract general admiration by their inviting appearance. Many of the large squares in the business portion of the city are surrounded by handsome buildings of modern construction, several stories in



RUA FLORENCIO D'ABREU, SÃO PAULO.

Arouche, the *Santa Casa de Misericórdia*, one of the principal hospitals of the city, is a conspicuous feature of the landscape, its grand proportions and impressive architectural style commanding especial attention. The Episcopal Seminary, an excellent institution founded by Bishop Antonio Joaquim de Mello, and the State Penitentiary, a massive but gloomy pile, are situated in the suburb of Luz. The *Hospedaria de Immigrantes*, in the Braz district, offers excellent accommodations to the new arrivals from foreign countries, who are to settle in the various farming colonies of the State, and it is one of the very important institutions of the government. Liberdade is the most picturesque suburb, and possesses



PUBLIC SQUARE IN SÃO PAULO.

more than ordinary interest as the site of the chief botanical garden of the State, and the location of the head-quarters of the São Paulo water-works system. But the principal point of interest for all visitors to the city is Ypiranga, the magnificent monument erected, in 1885, on the spot where the proclamation of the independence of Brazil was made in 1822; it is the finest work of architecture in Brazil, designed not only to commemorate this glorious event, but also to serve as an institution of learning. The museum of Ypiranga contains treasures of great historical and scientific interest, many curious and valuable relics, also some of the finest paintings of Brazilian artists. In the department of taxidermy are preserved more than six hundred specimens of humming-birds, those dainty little exquisites



STREET IN CAMPINAS, STATE OF SÃO PAULO.

of the forest who build their nest so very tiny that they are obliged gradually to spread it out as the nestlings grow, until, by the time the little ones are ready to take flight, it is perfectly flat. The *Louvadeus* [Praise God] grasshopper, that regularly makes its way to the top of a bush or tree and puts up its feelers in an attitude of prayer, is another curiosity of which many specimens are preserved in this museum; and of butterflies the collection is apparently endless in variety. Curiosities have been culled from every available source of the mineral as well as of the animal kingdom, the classification being so systematically arranged as greatly to facilitate inspection. The action of the red sand of this district on the marble of the edifice has

given it something of the appearance of old ivory, greatly enhancing its effectiveness. From the porticoes of Ypiranga a splendid view of the city is presented, with its spires and towers gleaming in the sunlight. The church architecture of São Paulo is similar to that in other cities, the Jesuit style predominating, especially in the older churches. Its theatres are well-appointed, following the French in general style, the favorite being the São José, frequently visited by excellent European companies. The Mercado Municipal, or city market, is quite a feature of the shopping district, having everything for sale, like the department stores of other countries. The various railway stations and the hotels are centrally located. A complete system of street railways connects all parts of the city, and extends to its suburbs. Other modern improvements which the citizens enjoy are: the benefits of electric lighting, gas, a splendid water-works system, drainage, telephone communication, district-messenger service, and mail delivery. The chief manufacturing industries include spinning and cotton mills, ice factories, gas-works, foundries, match factories, furniture factories, and establishments for cleaning, dyeing, and renovating all kinds of fabrics. The city has been the chief scene of action in many stirring events of Brazilian history, and the home of some of the

country's greatest heroes. It was the birthplace of the poet Alvares de Azevedo, and has been the chosen residence of many renowned scholars and statesmen. Its several newspapers reflect the spirit of the people, are ably published, and thoroughly up-to-date.

Ranking next in importance to the State capital, the city of Santos is the great commercial sea-port of São Paulo, and one of the most important in South America, the enormous shipments of coffee from this point giving it a world-wide reputation. The town was founded by Braz Cubas in the middle of the sixteenth century, and received its name from Santos Hospital, established by the founder a few years earlier, the first charitable institution in Brazil. Braz Cubas was one of the most distinguished pioneers of Brazil, where he spent the greater part of his life, and died at the advanced age of a hundred years. His descendants are counted among the leading families of São Paulo. This ancient city was also the birthplace of the celebrated Andrada brothers; of Bartholomeu Lourenço de Gusmão, the inventor of the air-ship who gave the first practical demonstration of its power, the experiment taking place before the king, in Lisbon, in the year 1709; and of Visconde de São Leopoldo, the first president of the province of Rio Grande do Sul, founder of the flourishing colony of São Leopoldo in that State, prominent in the organization of the Law Colleges of São Paulo and of Olinda (the latter since removed to Pernambuco), and one of the founders of the Historical Institute of Brazil. So that, aside from its commercial interest, Santos possesses the proud distinction of having been the cradle of some of Brazil's greatest men. But its commercial importance outweighs every other claim at the present time, and there is little to indicate the haunts of the scholar in its busy streets lined with warehouses and crowded with heavy wagons. Its docks are constantly thronged



COL. FERNANDO PRESTES,
EX-PRESIDENT OF SÃO PAULO.



HOSPITAL DE ISOLAMENTO, SÃO PAULO.

with workmen, loading and unloading the ships that visit its port from all parts of the world. Several street-car lines cross the town, which is compactly built, and ornamented with many attractive buildings. The custom-house, theatre, hospitals, and churches constitute the chief public institutions. From the neighboring hill of Montserrat, on the summit

of which is one of the oldest shrines in Brazil, Nossa Senhora de Montserrat, a superb panorama of the city and harbor of Santos is presented to the view.

Across the bay from Santos is situated one of the most delightful resorts in Brazil, the sea-side city of Guarujá. It is built upon a huge knoll, shaped like half an orange, and surrounded by high hills covered with virgin forests. This charming retreat overlooks the ocean, and is bordered by a delightful beach unrivalled in its bathing facilities and fanned by Neptune's most soothing breezes. It was created through the enterprise of a few public-spirited men of São Paulo, prominent among them being Dr. Guillermo Ellis and Dr. Elias Fausto, who bought the ground and built a town of more than fifty cottages, imported from



RESERVOIR DA LIBERDADE, SÃO PAULO.

the United States, to which have been added many others of brick, cement, and stone. Every house is provided with electric lights and has running water and perfect drainage. A large hotel, a theatre, and a *Cassino*, or club, afford accommodation and amusement to all their guests or members. At the hotel, an orchestra supplies music during each meal and in the evenings. The town is lighted by electricity. The transportation from Santos is made by steamboat and railway, requiring half an hour for the trip. The residents of the State of São Paulo find this beautiful resort a most attractive spot in which to spend the hot months of summer, and, with the many attractions that are offered to increase its popularity, there is valid reason for regarding it as the coming Newport of Brazil.

Of all the cities of the State, none retains more charming memories and traditions or shows greater growth and activity than the model town of Campinas, the birthplace of President Campos-Salles and the cradle of Brazil's greatest composer, Carlos Gomes. It is beautifully situated, in the centre of a rich coffee district, on the line of one of the main arteries of railway travel, and in a climate unsurpassed for its healthfulness. With a population of about forty thousand, it has all the municipal improvements enjoyed by cities of double its population. The streets are broad, and handsomely paved with stone; gas is used for lighting purposes; the water-works system is excellent; telegraph and telephone communication is established; there are ice factories, machine-shops, cotton-mills, and other



BEACH AT GUARUJÁ, STATE OF SÃO PAULO.

industries of the kind; and in educational matters the city is particularly progressive, having several important colleges, among others the *Culto á Sciência* and the *Corrêa de Mello*; a far-reaching charitable work is carried on by the hospitals *Misericórdia* and *Beneficencia Portuguesa*; a large public library is open to all readers; three daily newspapers are published, one of which has been established for a quarter of a century; one of the principal churches, *Conceição*, was erected in 1820, and is famous for the magnificent carving of its altars and interior decorations, all the wood being native cedar, hand-carved in beautiful designs.

Like Campinas, the city of Piracicaba enjoys a wide reputation as the home of one of Brazil's great men, having the honor to number among its residents the former president,

Dr. José Prudente de Moraes Barros. It occupies a picturesque site on the banks of the Piracicaba River, a branch of the Tieté, and one of its greatest natural attractions is the cascade that the river forms here, offering a charming variety of scenery. The fertility of the soil in this locality is remarkable, producing coffee, sugar, and cereals in abundance. The American school of Piracicaba is one of the most successful in the State.

Itú, also an important town in many respects, is historically interesting as the birthplace of such illustrious Brazilians as Father Feijó, Paula Souza, and the celebrated painter Ferraz de Almeida, Jr. It is situated on the left bank of the river Tieté, and is the thriving centre of a rich agricultural district, as well as the seat of important educational institutions, including the college of S. Luiz and that of Nossa Senhora do Patrocinio, founded, about the middle of the nineteenth century, by Bishop Antonio Joaquim de Mello.

Among other large agricultural or manufacturing towns is Jundiahy, an important railway junction and shipping centre. Taubaté is especially noted as the location of valuable petroleum wells recently discovered, and of extensive gas-works, and is an attractive place of residence because of its healthful climate, excellent schools, hospitals, and churches. Rio Claro, Limeira, Mogy-mirim, Casa Branca, Mocóca, Franca, and Araraquara are thriving and progressive towns. Porto Feliz, Capivary, Itapetininga, Tatuhy, Botucatu, Itapeva, and Sorocaba have important agricultural interests, Sorocaba being also famed for its large cattle market. Jacarehy is the centre of valuable pasture-lands, and Lorena is one of the most picturesque little cities of the State, and a progressive commercial centre. Silveiras, Queluz, Caçapava, Franca, Iguape, and Itapetininga are important towns commercially.



HOTEL AND CASINO AT GUARUJÁ.



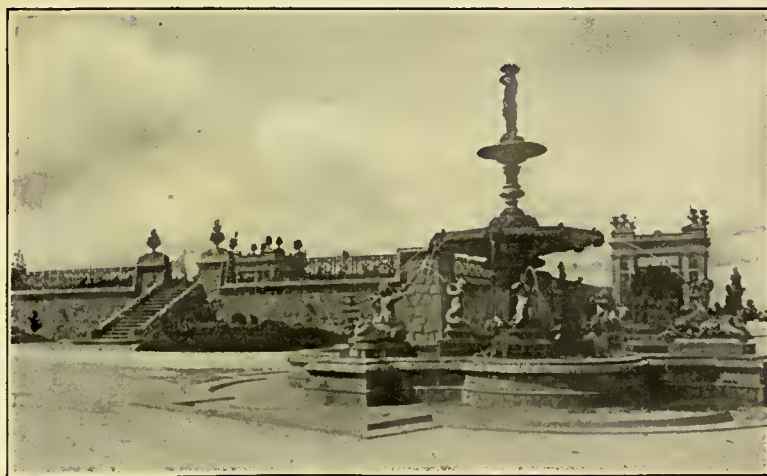
LARGO DO PALACIO, SAO PAULO.

Although very extensive, the production from agricultural and mineral sources is not a tithe of what the State is capable of yielding if thoroughly developed, though the exports are constantly increasing, especially of fruits, wine, cattle, lumber, cereals, and iron. The mines are, as yet, comparatively little worked, but, with the increasing population that results from immigration, systematically encouraged, the future of the mining industry is very promising for São Paulo.

The inhabitants of the State of São Paulo are estimated at about two millions, and its great wealth has been largely accumulated within recent years, during which the population has grown with remarkable rapidity. With the wisdom of good government, the money of the State has been employed in improving the sanitary conditions of the less favored localities, with the happy result that a host of country towns, formerly decimated by fevers as a result of bad drainage, are now absolutely free from such diseases, and even where the work has been only partially completed the percentage of mortality has been materially reduced. In Santos it is especially desirable that good sanitary conditions should exist, and gratifying efforts are being made toward this consummation.

The attractions offered to foreign immigration by the government of São Paulo have found reward in a substantial way; and though the national government, in 1897, withdrew entirely all subventions for immigration, yet nearly thirty thousand immigrants have been

introduced into the State since that time, and the foreign colonies are all in a prosperous condition. The railway trackage of the State covers thousands of miles, and is constantly being extended. Harmony prevails in political affairs under the excellent leadership of the State president, Dr. Francisco de Paula Rodrigues Alves, whose renowned administrative ability gives him a leading place among the statesmen of Brazil, and whose unflinching zeal in the service of his country has won the highest admiration and esteem of the Brazilian people. In every official capacity in which he has served the nation during the years of his active political career, Dr. Rodrigues Alves has proved the disinterested character of his efforts, his unimpeachable integrity and sound judgment. The State of São Paulo has been particularly fortunate in the choice of presidents, having been honored in every case with administrative officials of the very highest type. The honorable predecessor of the present executive, Colonel Fernando Prestes de Albuquerque, a native Paulista, was, like his successor in office, an advocate of republicanism and one of its most enthusiastic propagandists for a long time before witnessing the triumph of the cause so dear to every citizen of the New World; and during all the years following the establishment of the republic Colonel Prestes has been an indefatigable promoter of its interests, his efforts being especially directed toward the advancement of the State of São Paulo. Among other great leaders who have stood at the helm in this State in the past are such celebrities as Dr. Prudente Moraes, Dr. Bernardino de Campos, and Dr. Campos-Salles. São Paulo has taken no backward steps in all its career, and progress within the past ten years has been phenomenal. At a similar rate of development in the future, there is no limit to the success that may attend its advancement during another decade.



FOUNTAIN LIBERDADE, SÃO PAULO.



QUARRY AT MORRO VELHO, MINAS GERAES.

CHAPTER XVII

MINERAL WEALTH AND VEGETATION



THE COQUILLA-NUT PALM.

THE glitter of gold and the flash of gems have possessed a singular fascination for mankind from time immemorial, and the intimate relation these treasures bear to the joys and sorrows of the human family furnishes the subject of many enchanting myths, traditions, and romances. Human nature has not greatly changed throughout the ages in its predilections, the same instinct that was illustrated in the sacred guarding of the treasure in the garden of the Hesperides still existing in the motive of the twentieth-century miser; the "golden apple" is as invaluable an aid in securing the good offices of Venus nowadays as it was when Paris won Helen of Troy; the irresistible magnetism of costly jewels is as potent with the modern belle as it was with the distinguished guest of King Solomon; and, in various guises, the popular idol of society is, as it has always been, no other than the much-

worshipped golden calf of Israel's camp. This universal attraction toward the precious product of the mines has given to the gold and the diamond fields a special charm; and every epidemic of the "fever" which invariably follows gold discovery has had the inevitable accompaniment of prodigal waste and barbaric display. But of all the fabulous tales related of silver kings and bonanza princes, the palm for extravagance belongs to the history



DIAMOND MINER'S HUT.

of early mining days in Brazil, when horses were shod with gold; when lawyers supported their pleadings before the judge with gifts of what appeared at first sight the choicest oranges and bananas, but proved to be solid gold imitations of these fruits; when guests were entertained while at dinner by the discovery of gold pebbles in their soup instead of grains of corn; when

a nugget was the most convenient medium of exchange in the money-market. Tradition has woven a very interesting story about the first discovery of the precious metal in Brazil, with a touch of the supernatural that entirely rescues this important event from the unattractive realm of the commonplace. It is, that, as early as the sixteenth century, a *sertanejó*, or backwoodsman, of São Paulo, having heard that gold and precious stones were to be found in the interior of Goyaz, organized a band of followers and proceeded as far as Villa Bqa (now the city of Goyaz), where he encountered several Indians decked out in gorgeous array and wearing costly gold ornaments. He demanded of them to be taken to the place where the gold had been found; and upon their refusal to give up the secret, the *sertanejó*, with a great display of anger, took from his pouch a flask of rum, poured out a quantity, and set fire to it, exclaiming, in a voice of thunder: "See! Thus I will burn up all your rivers, if you do not show me where your gold is to be found!" The Indians were panic-stricken at this sight, and cried out, in superstitious terror: "*Anhanguera! Anhanguera!*" meaning "wizard." Their leader was brought to terms without further difficulty, a guide was secured, and the party proceeded at once to the place, where they obtained a large amount of the precious metal. From more authentic sources it is learned that gold was discovered in the seventeenth century in the States of Minas Geraes and São Paulo. About the middle of the eighteenth century, the gold output was at its height, the revenue from this product being enormous. It is said that, in a certain district, five thousand pounds' weight was panned from placers within the area of a square mile in one year, and from another region a hundred pounds' weight was collected in one night. In the year 1792, the gold registered in Rio de Janeiro was three hundred and sixty thousand pounds in weight, and, from recent researches among old archives, an English authority has put the total amount of the gold output of Minas Geraes at the enormous value of two hundred

million pounds sterling. The most important gold explorations in Brazil have been made in the State of Minas Geraes, and though the production during the nineteenth century did not equal that of the eighteenth, it has never ceased to be profitable and give good returns for the amount of capital invested. At Morro Velho, in this State, the largest mines in Brazil, the property of the Saint John del Rey Company, have been worked for the past fifty years, yielding during that period twenty-six million dollars' worth of gold. Modern machinery is used in these mines, and many difficult and costly improvements have been made within recent years. The ore yields six-tenths of an ounce per ton, and the annual output is fifty thousand ounces. Another important company is the *Aurifera*, with which Dr. Urbano Marcondes is prominently identified.

Probably no other part of the world contains such varied mineral wealth as the State of Minas Geraes, which, in addition to its inexhaustible gold and diamond deposits, has manganese mines that rank among the most important in the world, supplying the great steel mills of Europe and North America. From the largest of these mines, the "Usina Wigg," located about three hundred miles north of Rio de Janeiro, on the line of the Central Railway, twenty thousand tons were shipped to the Carnegie Steel Company in 1897; and the supply is apparently unlimited. This State is also rich in deposits of topazes and of amethysts, found chiefly near Ouro Preto; of onyx unequalled in beauty, and of marble and granite in various qualities and colors. Silver, copper, iron, mercury, mica, and petroleum are among the rich products of the State, which is still in the early stages of mineral development notwithstanding its wonderful record. The present tendency toward an important revival of gold mining in Brazil is likely to result in an enormous "boom" when the real facts become known regarding its wealth. The gold mines of Bahia, Goyaz, Matto Grosso, São Paulo, Pará, and Amazonas are sources of wealth that have scarcely been touched, the mining industry in these States being still in its infancy. New gold discoveries are constantly being made in every State of the Union, and in those regions where gold and diamonds have been found but have not yet been worked; owing to their inaccessibility, the newly-constructed railways are extending their



BANANA-TREES IN A PRIVATE GARDEN.

lines rapidly, thus facilitating the means of reaching remote districts that have for so many centuries kept their precious stores hidden in the heart of the continent. Not only is the outlook promising for gold mining, but for the diamond fields as well; the States of Bahia, Goyaz, Minas, and Matto Grosso, especially, offering inducements for the development of their diamond resources. The Brazilian diamond mines have been famous for nearly two centuries, and the story of their discovery is related in various ways. According to some authorities, they were first found by the gold miners, who regarded them as mere curiosities, and used them as counters in gambling, until a worthy friar, happening to observe this base use of Fortune's favorite bauble, informed the governor of the province, who immediately notified the king. The discovery was first officially reported in Lisbon in 1729, and the first gems were sent to Rome by João V. as a present to the pope. Several of the most celebrated diamonds of the world have since been found in Brazilian mines. The "Braganza," the most highly prized of the crown-jewels of Portugal, was taken from Caethé, about the middle of the eighteenth century. Connoisseurs differ as to its value, and its weight has been variously stated, but it is world-renowned as a rare and beautiful gem. The "Regent," named in honor of Dom João VI., and worn by him on all great occasions, was found in 1791, under circumstances of peculiar interest. Three men, convicted of a capital offence, had been condemned to spend the remainder of their days in the far west of Minas, and forbidden, under penalty of death, to enter a city. After wandering about for several years, searching for treasure in the apparently vain hope of some day being able to purchase their pardon, they suddenly came upon this diamond, weighing nearly an ounce. Recognizing its great value, and eager to test its power as a means of securing their pardon, they told their secret to a priest, begging him to accompany them to the city and to intercede for them with the governor, submitting to him the precious stone they had found. As a result they were granted their pardon and permitted to return to their homes, though they received no further reward. The "Estrella do Sul," also a product of Minas Geraes, and now the valued possession of a great Oriental potentate, has a history similar to that of the "Regent." It was picked up at Bagagem by a poor negro slave, who gave it to her master as the price of her freedom. It afterward proved to be worth fifteen million dollars, and still ranks among the most costly gems in existence. Aside from its intrinsic worth, it possesses a unique value as representing the highest price ever paid for the blessed boon of human liberty. In a rough state, this precious stone weighed two hundred and fifty carats, and, when cut, about half that amount. It was discovered in the year 1854.

The history of diamond mining in Brazil and the modern processes of the industry present many interesting features. The great centre of the diamond district is a town of ten thousand inhabitants, situated in the State of Minas, about six hundred miles from Rio de Janeiro, and named, from its chief product, Diamantina. It was originally a gold-mining camp, until the discovery of diamonds early in the eighteenth century transformed it in appearance and character. For a hundred years after their discovery the mining of diamonds in Brazil was a monopoly of the crown, all diamond mines being declared State property by

the king of Portugal; and it was only after the abdication of the first emperor of Brazil that private diamond mining was legalized by the national government, in the year 1832. The methods of mining pursued by the government officials in charge of this valuable property of the State were extremely careless and shortsighted, the main object, apparently, being to get the greatest amount of treasure possible with the least delay. As a result, there are large deposits of diamond-bearing gravel which can never be mined because buried under the detritus of other workings.

Diamond-bearing gravel is usually found in the interstices of the rocks and boulders that block the current of the mountain streams in their first steep descent down the narrow



MANGO-TREE.

ravines near the summit of the *serra*, before they reach the broader bed of the river below. An experienced miner easily recognizes it by the presence of certain other minerals which are only found where the diamond is indicated.

The following description of the four distinct methods of diamond mining practised in the Diamantina district is taken from an official report of Hon. Charles Page Bryan, United States Minister to Brazil, to the State Department in Washington, containing an account of a visit made by the secretary of the United States legation, in 1899, to these diamond fields:



PAPAW-TREE.

“The diamond is a heavy mineral, its specific gravity being about 3.6, much greater than that of ordinary rock. When the mother-deposits in the high *serra* were eroded and washed into the streams, the diamonds and other heavy minerals were separated from the bulk of the detritus by the action of the water. The heavy gravel thus left at the bottom and caught among the boulders is the *formação*, or diamond gravel. There are more than thirty minerals of which some are always found in it, among them tourmaline, specular iron, disthene, rutile, gold, and various phosphates. The *formação* is prospected for in the dry season, and as soon as found is dug out and piled near the water. When the rains interrupt the digging, the miners work up the gravel. The operation is very simple. The gravel is first washed in a *bacu*, an excavation

a yard wide and a yard and a half long, on the bank of a pond or stream. Its lip is a few inches above the surface of the water, and it deepens slightly to the rear. A cubic foot or more of gravel is placed in the back end, and the workman dashes water against it out of a large concave wooden plate, giving it a peculiar rotary fling. This rapidly separates the lighter and larger stones from the smaller and heavier ones. When concentration by this rough method is as complete as possible, the gravel is worked with the *batea*. This unique instrument is a wooden dish, about thirty inches in diameter, with a sort of pit at the bottom. Filling the *batea* with the concentrate and water, the workman agitates the contents, whirling and shaking them, meanwhile pouring and scraping the lighter gravel from the top as fast as he separates it. The operation is very similar to old-fashioned gold panning, but requires even greater skill on account of the danger of losing diamonds. It is said that a man may be a first-rate gold panner and yet useless for diamond washing. At the end of the process, the diamonds are simply picked out by hand from the remaining minerals. Their peculiar lustre makes them easily recognizable even by a tyro. The Brazilian method of washing alluvial gold is substantially that described above. By its use, practically all the diamonds and placer gold which Brazil has produced have been obtained.

"The second method of mining is that practised in the beds of the larger streams. The opening of one of these mines is an extensive and complicated undertaking, requiring the employment of thousands of dollars and hundreds of men. At the beginning of the dry season, a spot is selected which is believed, from tradition or ancient documents, to be virgin. Just above the spot selected, a rude dam is erected, and also a sluice around it, through which the waters of the river are turned. The bed thus exposed is usually found to be of sand, largely the detritus of ancient workings. This sand is carried out, a shovelful at a time, in little wooden pans on the heads of negroes. Naturally, such a process is tedious and expensive. The work could be done many times more cheaply and quickly with dump-carts or even with wheelbarrows. The excavation is often carried to a depth of thirty or forty feet before bed-rock, where the *formação* is to be found, is reached. The work has to be done in great haste, because the first heavy rains in September and October wash away the whole structure and fill up the excavation. One famous spot in the Jequitinhonha, called the 'Poco de Moreira,' reputed to be virgin and fabulously rich, was unsuccessfully attempted several times in the early part of this century. Every time, before the bottom was reached, the rains came and destroyed what had been done. A few years ago, Antonio de Lavandeyra, a Cuban engineer, by the use of modern methods and pumps, succeeded in reaching and uncovering the bed-rock. The practical results were a good example of the discouraging uncertainty of diamond mining; only four diamonds were found.

"The gravel found is carried out of the excavation and placed in piles until the enforced leisure of the wet season gives a convenient opportunity to wash it. If the ground is virgin, the miners are likely to get a rich reward; if the gravel has been washed before, they lose all they have expended. The river mining is usually carried on by a local expert, who forms a company to which his speculative neighbors and friends subscribe.

"The third kind of diamond mining is from the *gupiaras*, or deposits of gravel found on the slopes and sides of the valleys.



TYPES OF HALF-BREED INDIAN WOMEN.

The finding of these is largely a matter of chance. Some of them have proved wonderfully rich. From one, the 'Gupiara da Pava-Pes,' more than one hundred and sixty thousand carats were taken in one season. It covered an area of not more than six acres, and was probably the richest small deposit of diamonds ever found. Even this was not thoroughly worked over. Last year, two negroes doing a little casual washing on their own account found twenty carats.

"The fourth kind of mining is that in the conglomerates and beds of clayey rock which are found high up in the *serra*. These beds are almost certainly the source of the alluvial diamonds, in just the same way that quartz veins are the source of placer gold. Contraband miners discovered that they were diamondiferous. These daring fellows, mining by stealth and in small parties in the little streams, followed them up to their sources. To their surprise, they continued to find diamonds clear to the top of the *serra*, and finally in the country rock itself. The conglomerate, or clay, is, of course, far less rich than the alluvial gravel in which the gems have been concentrated by the action of water, but in compensation the quantity is much greater. Much of it is hard and compact and difficult to work, but some is soft enough to wash away readily in running water. After the Brazilians had taken the diamonds out of the weathered surface, they proceeded to work the deeper deposits in the following manner, which is the only method they know:

"They collected rain-water in pools on the tops of the plateaus and led it by ditches to a favorable outcrop of the diamondiferous deposit, there cutting out great gullies in the soft rock. The action of the water separated the *formação* from the bulk of the *débris*, and this was further treated in much the same way as the alluvial gravel. This method was extremely slow and vexatious, because sufficient water for effectively washing away the masses of rock could only be collected a few days in each year. Ten working days is a good average for a twelvemonth, and whole seasons pass without a single day's washing. Nevertheless, fortunes have been made in this kind of mining, and some of these *chapada* mines, as they are called, have been continually worked for nearly a century.

"The only noteworthy attempt to apply modern scientific methods to diamond mining in Brazil has been made eight miles from Diamantina by a French corporation, the *Companhia da Boa Vista*, the managing director in charge being an American citizen of Cuban birth, Mr. A. Lavandeyra, formerly one of the engineers of the Panama Canal. The difficulties which Mr. Lavandeyra has successfully surmounted have been very great. The same conditions are to be encountered in no other kind of mining, and the methods of meeting them had to be thought out from the beginning. Even the diamond mining of South Africa affords no precedents. Work on this enterprise was begun in 1898, and is not yet finished. That it will be successful seems almost certain, unless reasonable expectations prove to be unfounded."

Valuable information relative to the nature and quality of the mineral deposits of Brazil has appeared in various scientific journals of Europe and America from the pen of Professor Orville A. Derby, of São Paulo, who has given special attention to this field of research.

In addition to the wealth of gold and precious stones found in nearly every State of Brazil, rich treasures exist in copper, iron, lead, silver, and zinc. Bahia has never been thoroughly prospected or even explored, and no scientific mining has been done; yet, in addition to her gold and diamond mines, which yield great wealth even under the most primitive methods of development, there are rich silver, copper, and zinc mines,



THE BAMBOO PALM.

manganese ore deposits, and enormous mountains of limestone sufficient to supply all the cement and lime used in the country, though this article is imported in large quantities. Although granite and porphyry exist in abundance, suitable for building, monumental, and statuary work, nearly all the marble used in Brazil is brought from Italy. There are two large manganese mines in Bahia, with an estimated capacity of seven hundred thousand

tons, shipping large quantities of this product to North American markets. Copper and coal are found in Rio Grande do Sul; mineral salt in Matto Grosso and Goyaz; saltpetre in the limestone caves of Minas; guano and phosphate of lime in the island Fernando de Noronha (off Pernambuco); peat, from which is extracted the oil used in the manufacture of sulphuric acid; and other minor deposits. There are valuable mineral hot springs at Alambray, Caxambú, Caldas, São Domingos de Araxá, in Minas; Caldas de Bittencourt, in Santa Catharina; Itapicurú, in Bahia; and a number of others in these sections.

A decided impetus has been given to the mining industry of Brazil by the recent legislation favoring the development of this interest. The government has removed the heavy import duties on machinery, implements, and other accessories used in mining works, placing, instead, a tax of five per cent. *ad valorem* on these imports. In addition, the State of Minas Geraes has reduced the export tax on gold from five to three and a half per cent., and promulgated a law to define more clearly the regulations affecting prospecting and mining concessions in connection with land under State control. In regard to the acquirement of mining property, the law is liberal, and restrictions are few and reasonable. The owner of land has the first right to the mineral, but if he fails to exercise his privilege others may explore after giving notice. The discoverer of the mineral is entitled to four lots of fifty metres square, with ground necessary for working. Claims are transferable, but no single person or company may own more than a hundred contiguous lots. But, in order to accomplish the best results in the development of Brazilian mines, the investment of large capital is necessary, and the establishment of enterprises working upon a scientific and systematic basis. Under such conditions, it is not difficult to picture a future rivalling in prosperity the mineral regions of Australia and Kimberley.

The forests of Brazil are no less productive than her mines. Vegetation here presents several characteristics different from those of other tropical or equatorial regions of the globe. The submerged forests of that part of the Amazon valley in which the abundant rains have transformed the lowlands into swamps are distinguished by the appearance of trees with branchless trunks for two-thirds of their height, and, in some cases, with only a tuft or canopy of green foliage at the top. During the brief intervals between the inundations, the earth is covered with creeping vines of every description. In the higher lands, where the soil is not submerged so frequently nor so long at a time, the forests are remarkable for the great height of some of the trees, which is upward of one hundred and fifty feet, and for the rich luxuriance and variety of foliage, the tall trunks being twined about with innumerable vines; the choicest orchids are found in these forests, and from the tangled undergrowth are gathered many valuable medicinal herbs. The timber of the "dry forest" is of more resistant fibre than that of the "wet forest," which is water-soaked, and consequently more or less spongy in quality. Between these two distinct types of equatorial vegetation, in the space that separates them, are various woods of lesser extent and ranging in size from the smallest to the largest growths. Palms and ferns predominate in this territory. The vegetation of the coast region from Pernambuco to Rio is similar to

the equatorial growths in some respects, though it is even more luxuriant, and there is a blaze of color in its foliage that is not seen in the forests of any other section. Here Nature has mixed her colors with the impressionist's scorn for detail, and the result is bewildering, though enchanting. The beautiful tree-fern is found in the coast country, and on the outskirts of the woods along the water-courses the bamboo grows in profusion. In this region the giant *mangueiras* are found. On the *serras* of Parana, Santa Catharina, and São Paulo grow the *pinhêirões*, or fir-trees, composed exclusively of the *Araucaria Brasiliensis*, the only specimen of this rare species which grows in Brazil, giving to the vegetation of this



WASHING DIAMONDS.

region an aspect quite distinctive. The interior plateaus, or *campos*, have none of the luxuriant plants of the equatorial or the coast regions, though there are many shrubs of various kinds, and the flora is distinctively Brazilian. A peculiar feature of the vegetation in these parts is the falling of the leaves in the dry season. The vast plains covering southwestern Brazil, and extending over a great part of the State of Matto Grosso, constitute the marshy zone, with tropical forests bordering all the water-courses and covering the lowlands. Here are found the graceful palm-trees of the *carandá* species, spreading out their broad fan-like branches, and other trees that require constant humidity for their growth. Along the banks of the marshes are numerous varieties of reeds, bamboos, and tree-ferns. In the extreme

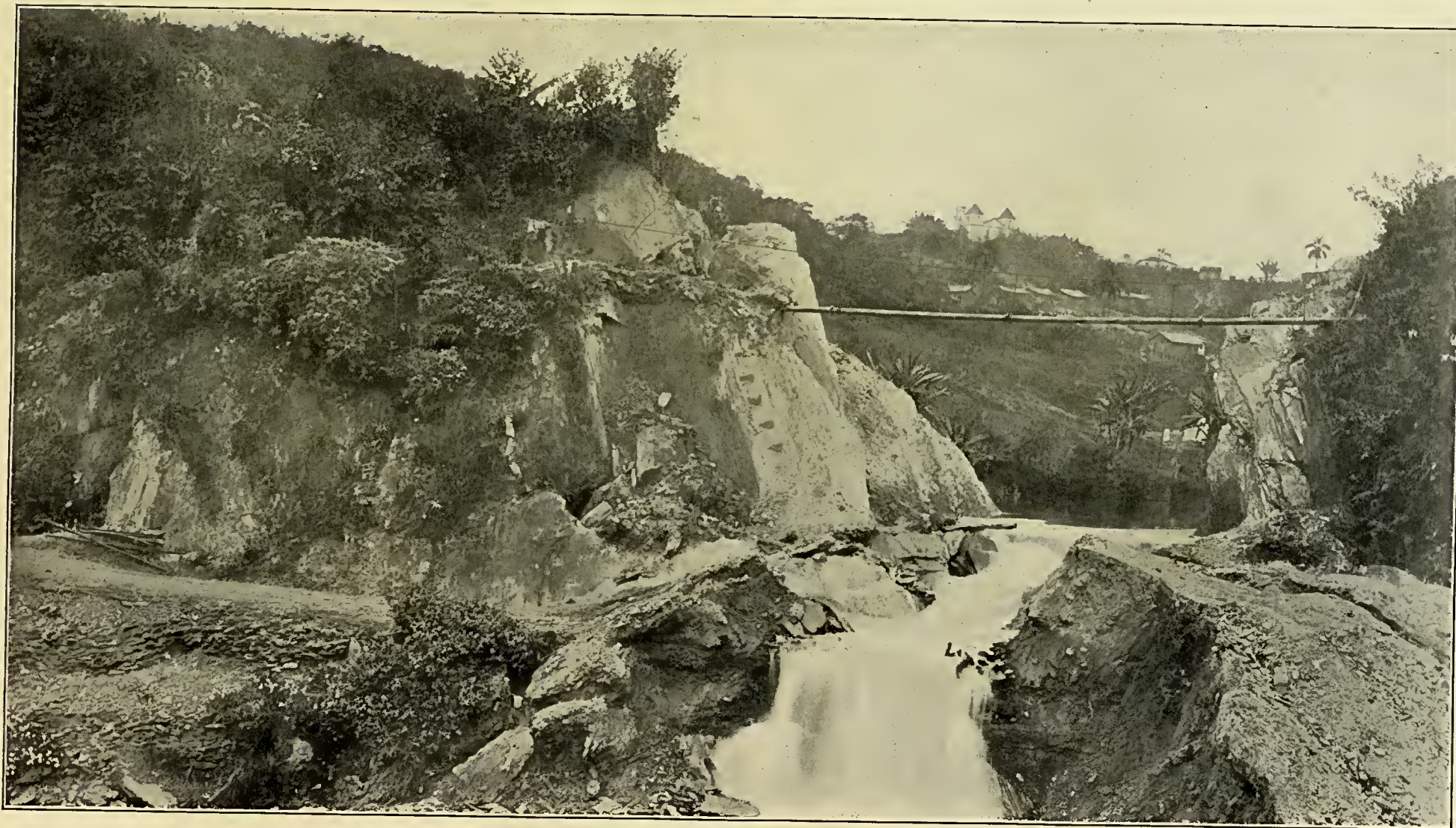
south of Brazil the temperate climate produces vegetation not unlike the character of European gardens and fields, the influence of the four seasons being apparent.

Of the many beautiful or striking vegetable formations in Brazil, the papaw-tree attracts special attention, because of its medicinal properties. Its unripe fruit possesses remarkable curative properties, and is often called the "vegetable pepsin." It is used with wonderful success in rebellious skin diseases especially. When ripe, the fruit, which resembles a melon, is quite palatable. The bark of the *pão pereira* furnishes a valuable substitute for quinine in fever cases, the drug being known as *pereirina*, and used throughout South America in preference to quinine, to which it is said to be superior in many ways. Several varieties of the cinchona, or quinine-tree, grow in Brazil. The bark and the fruit of the *sapucáia* are effectively used in the preparation of tonics. The *cajueiro* fruit is used not only in the preparation of a delicious beverage, known throughout Brazil as *cajuada*, but forms the basis of one of the greatest blood-purifiers in materia medica. The number and varieties of medicinal plants is practically unlimited, and the revenue from this source alone is constantly increasing as new scientific discoveries are made. Thus, in her forests and her mines, Brazil possesses inexhaustible treasure; and, when the opportunity arrives for developing their full possibilities, results will prove how graciously Nature has favored this fortunate land that is overflowing with the fulness of her gifts, waiting only for the busy hands to gather them.

The mining world is just now interested in the prediction made by one of the great geologists, Professor Shaler, of Harvard University, that before the middle of the present century the world will have so much gold that it will not know what to do with it. Should such an astonishing prediction be realized, there can be no doubt that one of the most important contributors to this condition of affairs will be Brazil.



BANANA-TREES



CASCADE NEAR MORRO VELHO, MINAS GERAES.

CHAPTER XVIII

MINAS GERAES



HAVING been the cradle of the republican sentiment in Brazil, the chief centre of many important national events, and the home of some of the greatest patriots and poets whose names embellish the pages of Brazilian history, the State of Minas Geraes, like that of São Paulo, possesses an important political as well as commercial influence. These two States were united under one government from 1709 until 1720, when they became separate capitanias, though remaining closely allied in their adherence to the principles of progress and independence, and always standing together as leaders in the promotion of their country's highest interests. The commercial history of Minas Geraes is no less interesting than its political record, and presents many features that are of extraordinary importance. The discovery of valuable gold and diamond mines, in the eighteenth century, led to great industrial activity and contributed to the development of the State in many ways, though the heavy demands made upon the revenue by the crown prevented a realization of the full measure of benefit which, under more favorable circumstances, would have placed it among the most prosperous sections of the world. Under the existing government, the conditions are quite different, and with the near prospect of a great revival in the mining industry, as well as the development of its agricultural products, a future of the greatest prosperity and wealth seems assured. Although Minas Geraes is one of the interior States, the easy access to the port of Rio de Janeiro and the excellent railway facilities afford every advantage in the promotion of trade relations; while in climate and location there is no State of Brazil more favored. It lies in the heart of a rich mineral and agricultural region, and its boundary-line is marked by six important States; on the south are São Paulo and Rio, the latter also extending to form part of the eastern boundary, which further includes Espírito Santo and a narrow strip of southern Bahia; on the north, the whole length of the State is bordered by Bahia; and the western limit is defined by the States of Goyaz and Matto Grosso, though the latter merely touches the extreme western point where the



CASCADE NEAR BELLA HORIZONTE, STATE OF
MINAS GERAES.

confluence of the Rio Grande and Parana-hyba forms the Parana River. The area of Minas Geraes is about two hundred and fifty thousand square miles, the greater portion of which is an elevated plateau, forming part of the great central table-land of Brazil. Crossing the State from north to south is the mountain chain of Serra da Mantiqueira, taking various names according to the district it traverses, as Serra do Espinhaco, Serra Branca, Serra das Canastras, the last-named being especially noted as the source of the great São Francisco River, while the Serra do Espinhaco is remarkable as the source of the Rio das Velhas and the Rio Doce, which drain the most important gold and diamond lands of Brazil. The fertility of the soil permits the cultivation of all kinds of products, and upon the grassy plains of the upper plateaus cattle-raising is particularly favored by the conditions of climate and vegetation. Even in the high *serras*, the sheltered valleys produce sugar-cane, Indian corn, rice, and bananas. The process of agriculture is still quite primitive in many sections, a bountiful harvest of Indian corn being gathered from farms of which the only culture consists in simply burning off the underbrush from a new piece of land, making holes with a sharpened stick, and dropping into them the seed, leaving to nature all further responsibility as to results. Sugar-cane also grows without cultivation. The São Francisco valley is very fertile, yielding large crops of tobacco, Indian corn, sugar-cane, cotton,

rice, mandioca, yams, sweet potatoes, and black beans, or *feijões*; Irish potatoes, rye, barley, and vanilla are also grown; and fruit is plentiful, of excellent quality and great variety. Southern Minas is one of the great coffee-producing districts of Brazil, and Mangabeira rubber is exported from this locality in increasing quantities every year. Cattle, pigs,

sheep, and poultry are abundant everywhere in the State, which is especially noted for the superior quality of its dairy produce from which the principal markets of Brazil are supplied. "Minas cheese," "Minas eggs," and "fresh Minas milk" are familiar signs in the grocery stores of Rio de Janeiro, which gets its chief dairy supply from this source, with the exception of butter; that is largely imported from Europe. The manufacture of wine is a growing industry in Minas Geraes, the demand for home consumption increasing with the supply; grapes of several different varieties are cultivated, of which the "Isabella" is the most popular for wine-manufacturing purposes. According to the best authorities, the ferruginous



THE MOUNTAIN CITY OF OURO PRETO, STATE OF MINAS GERAES.

nature of the soil and the abundance of gravel adapt it especially to the needs of viticulture, which promises to be one of the most successful industries in Brazil. In addition to the manufacture of wine, considerable capital is invested in cotton factories and in breweries.

There are unlimited opportunities for the small farmer in Minas Geraes. The country is comparatively little developed as regards its agricultural and fruit products; and yet, wherever the soil has been turned, the results have proved more than satisfactory. The whole São Francisco valley is a fertile garden, and the time is not far distant when it will be a densely populated farming region of great wealth and productiveness. It is necessary that immigration should be invited to the State, and also that modern methods of agriculture

should be introduced; but neither of these requirements offers any difficulties of fulfilment, as the climate is salubrious and agreeable to foreigners and the importation of machinery is easily effected, especially since the recent legislation in favor of lowering the duties on certain kinds of implements.

The government of this State gives special attention to educational matters, and the schools are placed under efficient management, their interests regarded as of the first importance, and compulsory attendance made a feature of legislation. Under the Department of Superior Instruction, the Free School of Law was established in 1892, and an advanced School of Pharmacy; the secondary courses are taught in the *Gymnasio Mineiro*, modelled after the *Gymnasio Nacional*, and having schools in Ouro Preto and in Barbacena; and primary instruction is given in more than two thousand schools. There are eight normal schools, and several institutions exist under the charge of the Department of Special Instruction, such as the School of Mines, referred to in a previous chapter; the Collegio Mineiro, Lyceu de Artes e Officios, Seminario de Marianna, Collegio das Irmãs de Caridade [College of the Sisters of Charity], and others.

The population of the State is about three millions, largely distributed in the rural districts; there are several thriving cities, but none of very large population. The present capital of the State is Bella Horizonte, a new and model city, built purposely for a State capital, and laid out in broad avenues, parks, and public drive-ways. Although scarcely four years since its first corner-stone was laid, the city numbers twenty thousand inhabitants. Its public buildings are of magnificent construction and modern architecture, particularly the Governor's Palace, which is a stately edifice of white stone, with marble porticoes and staircases, the design of the interior presenting many features of peculiar attraction. The avenues and streets cross at right angles, and run due north and south and east and west, the principal thoroughfare being the Affonso Penna, one hundred and fifty feet broad and two miles long. The city is lighted by electricity, has an excellent system of water-works, good drainage, and other modern improvements. It is situated in the centre of a rich region, at the distance of a day's journey from Rio by the Central Railway.

The former capital of the State, Ouro Preto, is a picturesque mountain town of twenty thousand inhabitants, situated on the slope of one of the mountains of the Serra de Ouro Preto at a height of about four thousand feet above the level of the sea in the basin of the Rio Doce, and not far from the head-waters of the Rio das Velhas. It is one of the oldest cities of Brazil, having been an important centre of government when Minas Geraes was a capitania of Portugal and, as the possessor of enormous wealth, one of the mother-country's most carefully-guarded strongholds. But the chief interest attaching to this quaint old town is derived from its share in the memorable events connected with the Tiradentes conspiracy, and the fate of the little company of poets whose dream of liberty was so ruthlessly shattered by the cruel sentence of a rigorous court. In the principal public square, appropriately named "Praça da Independencia," stands a marble column, surmounted by a statue of the martyred Tiradentes, commemorating the execution of the patriot; the pedestal of the

monument is the original stone which was used as a pillory for the condemned, and to which he was bound when publicly scourged upon the very spot now marked by the splendid column. Many historic places formerly belonging to celebrated *Mineiros* are preserved because of their associations; the house of Claudio Manoel da Costa is still to be seen, with the very balcony in which were gathered the enthusiastic plotters for liberty on so many occasions; also the *Casa dos contos*, where he was arrested. The *Casa dos ouvidores*, where "Dirceu" wrote his impassioned verses to "Marilia," and the modest little house where Marilia knelt at the window for long hours in the hope of seeing again her



JUIZ DE FÓRA, STATE OF MINAS GERAES.

banished lover, are among the interesting sights to all visitors who know the story of the city's past; and the locality where once stood the home of Tiradentes, which was destroyed, is guarded as sacredly as is the public square that was the scene of his execution, when his head was exposed on a pike as a warning to all rebellious spirits. This city was the home of the great statesman Vasconcellos and of the poet Guimarães, and is the birthplace of many prominent Brazilians of to-day. In addition to its buildings of exclusively historic interest, Ouro Preto has several churches and schools of importance. The School of Mines, as already stated, is one of the best institutions of the kind in existence, besides which the city has the Lyceu Mineiro, Escola de Pharmacia, and other educational establishments.

The city of Juiz de F6ra, in the southern part of the State, is an important industrial and commercial centre, containing about twenty thousand inhabitants. It is located on the main line of the Central Railway, in a region of great productiveness, and is blessed with a climate of mild and salubrious character. It is of comparatively modern growth, dating from the middle of the nineteenth century; its streets and buildings are of substantial and handsome appearance, its numerous educational and charitable institutions are in a flourishing condition, and the municipality enjoys the advantages of such modern improvements as electric lighting, good pavements, a street-car system, and water-works. One of its most important establishments is the immigrant station, which provides every convenience for the foreign colonist until finally settled in the land as a permanent resident. The German and the Italian colonies in Minas Geraes are large and prosperous settlements. Among the chief manufacturing industries of Juiz de F6ra are cotton-mills, breweries, machine-shops, and factories of various kinds.

An important centre of the cattle industry, as well as of other pastoral products, Barbacena, with a population of ten thousand, is a rapidly growing town, and its progress extends not only along commercial, but also educational lines; the climate is cool and invigorating, and the soil is of remarkable fertility.

Diamantina, famous as the centre of the diamond industry in Minas Geraes, is, aside from its importance as a mining town, honored as the seat of a bishopric, and can claim some of the finest educational and charitable institutions in the State. Factories are established here for cigar-making, cotton-weaving, and lapidary-work; and there are several breweries. The location of Diamantina is delightful, and the climate fine.

Among the flourishing towns of the State are S6o Jo6o d'El Rey, with twelve thousand inhabitants, the centre of valuable gold mines, and having manufacturing interests comprising, to enumerate a few, spinning-mills, pottery-works, and breweries; Cataguazes, in the coffee region of the southeast; Baependy, noted for its tobacco and its mineral waters; Rio Branco, with sugar plantations and refineries; Christina, in the neighborhood of tobacco-farms and plantations of cereals; Marianna, the seat of one of the oldest bishoprics in Brazil; Sabar6, in the sugar district, famous also for its gold fields; Itabira, Arassuahy, Campanha, Queluz, and others.

The president of the State is Dr. Francisco Silviano de Almeida Brand6o, and the vice-president, Dr. Joaquim Candido da Costa Sena. All the officials of the government are men well known in the higher political circles of Brazil, having been identified with the history of the republic in various ways, through the services of loyal patriotism. Dr. Almeida Brand6o is one of the leaders of to-day in Brazilian affairs, a man of firm principles and honest purpose, and a statesman of great ability. During his official career as chief executive of the State of Minas Geraes, Dr. Brand6o has shown himself an earnest advocate of progress and improvement in every department of his administration. The distinguished vice-president, Dr. Costa Sena, is esteemed as one of the foremost politicians of the State, and in his high office he enjoys the confidence of the people to the utmost degree. Senator

Alcides Medrado is counted among the great men of Minas Geraes, his influence in political matters being of prominent importance, while his superior social qualities win him the good will of all parties. The courtly and learned State secretary of finance, Dr. David Campista, is a type of the modern Brazilian gentleman who has travelled extensively, read a great deal, is a connoisseur of art, and a favorite in society. He is a finished orator, and was honored as the official speaker on the occasion of the inauguration of the Tiradentes monument in 1894, Dr. Moreira Pinto, at that time president of the State, having the ceremony in charge. The director of the Secretaria de Fazenda, Dr. Theophilo Ribeiro, is another distinguished Mineiro, especially esteemed for his valued contributions to historical and scientific knowledge; he is an ardent admirer of American institutions, and has translated several important works by North American authors.

The State of Minas Geraes, which has given to Brazil many of her great men in science, literature, art, and politics, was the birthplace of the present Minister of Foreign Affairs,



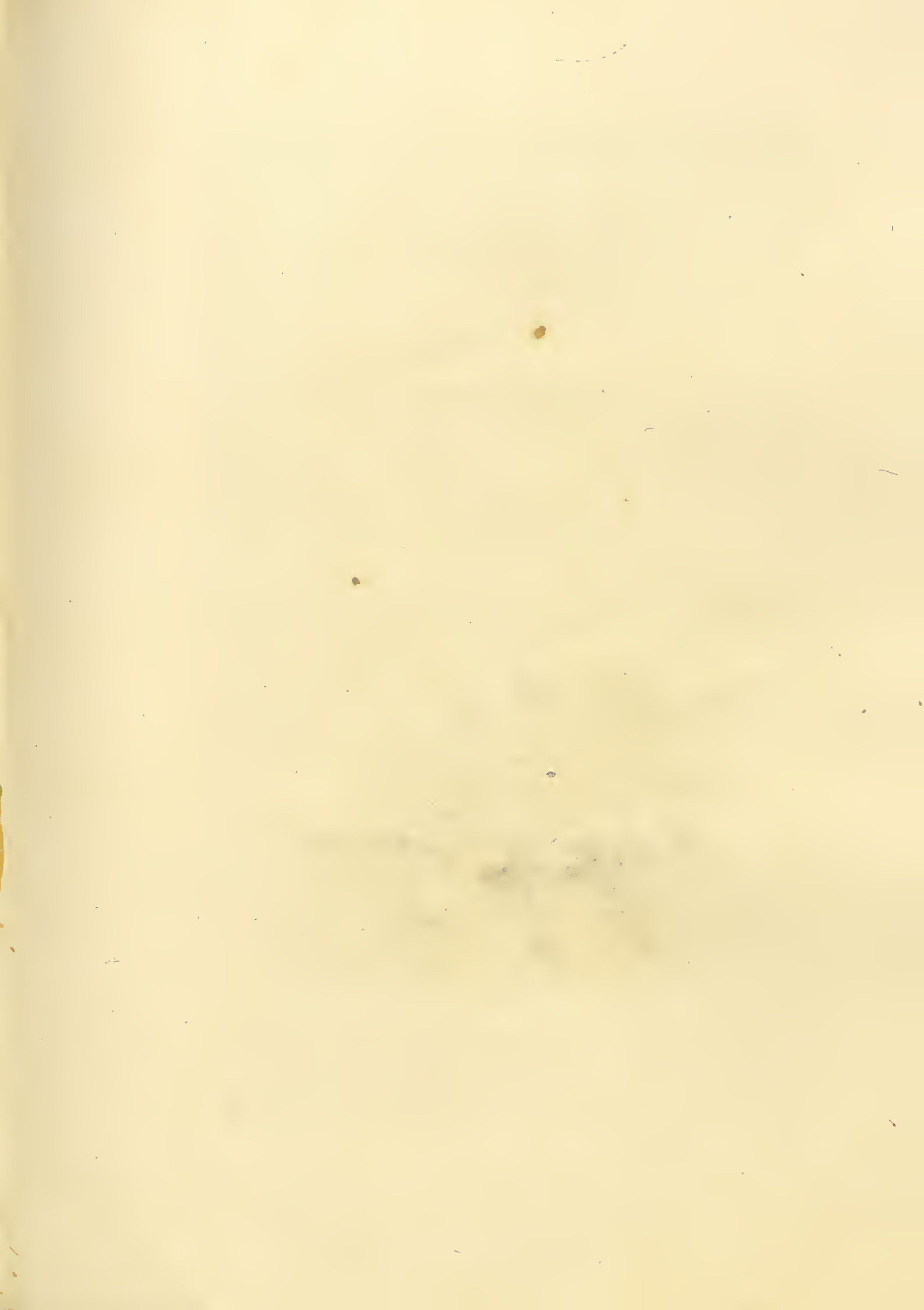
MORRO VELHO, MINAS GERAES.

Dr. Olyntho de Magalhães. The progress of the State has always been of a character to commend the judgment and patriotism of her people, who represent in some respects the best type of the Brazilian character. Bold and fearless as pioneers when the country needed men of such mettle to open up the unknown regions of the vast interior and civilize their savage inhabitants, the Mineiros have shown equally noble characteristics in the more peaceful tasks of social and political life. There has never been an occasion in the history of Brazil when the natives of this grand old State have faltered in the face of their country's need, or hesitated to risk all that life holds dearest in the loyal, faithful, unflinching, patriotic discharge of duty. From the earliest days of their history they have been devoted adherents to the principles of political independence, and have shown a proud and determined resistance to every effort to infringe upon their heaven-born rights, or to treat their sacred

privileges with contempt. Ever appreciating the gracious advantages of intellectual training, they have given special attention to their educational institutions; the results being apparent in the literary advancement of this section, to which the world owes many great statesmen and poets. From Gama and Durão, the originators and chief inspiration of the little group of poets who formed the "Escola de Minas," to the last of that brilliant but ill-fated company, Claudio Manoel da Costa, Antonio Gonzaga, and Alvarenga Peixoto, the history of literature in Minas shone with a lustre which was reflected in the life and thought of their contemporaries, not only in Brazil, but throughout the mother-country. *Villa Rica*, written by Manoel da Costa on the subject of the old town of Ouro Preto, is vivid with local color; *A Marília* has made Gonzaga famous for all time; and in the exquisitely dainty verse of Alvarenga Peixoto some of the rarest gems of genius are preserved. In the commercial life of the republic, none of the States commands a more important place or promises a greater future than Minas Geraes, with its wonderful store of riches, both hidden and in plain view; the delights of its sunny skies and fragrant atmosphere; the incomparable blessing of its abundant rivers, ample forests, and "the cattle upon a thousand hills."



A SYLVAN SCENE, MINAS GERAES.





BAHIA. VIEW FROM THE UPPER CITY.

CHAPTER XIX

BAHIA



MONUMENT SEGUNDO DE JULHO.

BAHIA represents the oldest European civilization on the American continent; for, although the discoveries of Columbus antedate those of Cabral and Americus Vesputius, the latter were the first to make known the existence of a western continent, Columbus resting in the belief that his discovery meant nothing more than a short route to the Indies and an easier access to Oriental treasure-stores; in the capitaniás of

Portuguese America, colonial government was an accomplished fact nearly half a century before the first successful colonies were established in North America. When Americus Vesputius reported the existence of a new continent, after exploring the coast of Brazil in the service of the Portuguese government, during the year following Cabral's discovery, it was not known that this great body of land was merely the southern part of the same continent on which Columbus had set up the standard of Spain ten years before; the universal belief was that it constituted a new division of the earth, supposedly lying south of Asia, and its discovery was regarded as

vastly more important than that of Columbus when the name "America" was given to it, in honor of the famous pilot,—the name at first applying to Brazil, then to South America, and finally to the whole continent. According to historical precedence, the Brazilians have the first right to the title of "Americans."



PRAÇA IN LOWER CITY, BAHIA.

It was about a year after the first discovery of Brazil that the Portuguese fleet, accompanied by Americus Vesputius, and commanded by Christovam Jacques, entered the magnificent harbor of Bahia, which was named by the discoverers, in honor of the feast-day on which it was first seen, "Bahia de Todos os Santos" [Bay of All Saints]. The settlement of the new territory began a few years later, and the present city of Bahia was founded in 1549, thirty-five years earlier than the foundation of San Augustine, the oldest city in the United States of America. Bahia was the chief seat of colonial power from 1549 to 1762, and during that time was the official residence of all the high functionaries representing

the crown: the governor-general, the *ouvidor*, the supervisor of the exchequer, and the *capitão-mór*, or overseer of the coast. The colonial capital was transferred to Rio de Janeiro in 1762, but the progress of Bahia was not retarded by the change, development being rapid and uninterrupted everywhere in the territory, which even at that day had a world-wide commercial importance as the centre of rich mineral wealth and of great agricultural resources.

The State of Bahia enjoys many natural advantages. It has an area of nearly two hundred thousand square miles, with seven hundred miles of coast-line, and its climate is generally healthful and moderate, a great extent of the territory being mountainous, with plateaus two thousand feet above sea-level, while the whole State is intersected by magnificent rivers that drain every part of it. On the coast the weather is warm all the year round, the hottest months being from December to April, when this locality is subject to malarial diseases; in the interior the climate is far more temperate, and fevers are unknown, the natural conditions being similar to those existing in the adjoining States of Goyaz, Minas Geraes, and Piauhy; its coast climate resembles that of Espirito Santo to the south, and Sergipe, Alagoas, and Pernambuco to the north. The mineral wealth of Bahia, as previously stated, is inexhaustible, though practically undeveloped. New discoveries in this direction are constantly being made. Near the town of Prado, in the southern part of the State, an American mining engineer recently found valuable deposits of monazite sand, rich in thorium silicate, which is now being exported in large quantities to Germany and Austria, where the thorium is prepared that fills an important place in the manufacture of incandescent lights. This sand is estimated to be worth a hundred dollars

a ton. The State is rich in vegetation, the commercial products from this source including various kinds of hardwood for cabinet purposes, and fancy woods used in the manufacture of umbrella-handles and walking-sticks; the medicinal plant *manaça*, from the leaves, roots, and stems of which a vegetable mercury is extracted; *araroba*, furnishing an excellent caustic powder, sold in England under the name of Goa powder; the balsam of the *capahúba*; and several kinds of oils, resin, and wax. The coquilla-nut palm furnishes the fibre used in the manufacture of brushes and brooms. The nuts are shipped in enormous quantities to the Orient, where they are carved and ornamented to furnish the rosary beads and crosses sold in all parts of the world, from the kernel of the nut a fine quality of lubricating oil is extracted, and from the fibre of its leaf-stalks the brooms and ropes

of commerce are made; the seeds, which are called coquilla-nuts, grow in clusters, in a similar fashion to the banana fruit, and are three or four inches long, brown in color, very hard, and of sufficient thickness to be turned into door-knobs and various other kinds of handles, as well as the beads and crosses which form such an important feature of their usefulness. The discovery of the great possibilities existing in the coquilla-nut is due to Mr. S. S. Schindler, who practically enjoys the monopoly of this trade. On his immense plantation, within a few hours' distance of the city of Bahia, which embraces a territory of one hundred thousand acres, three thousand men and women are employed in cultivating, gathering, and shipping the product of the coquilla-nut palm, the nearest port of shipment being named for the owner,—who is one of the principal landowners in Brazil,—Port Schindler. Mr. Schindler was also the first to discover *mangabeira* rubber in São Paulo, Minas Geraes, Goyaz, and other States, and to attract attention to its great commercial importance. From the root of the wild quince the material is supplied for the fancy walking-sticks and umbrella-handles that are in universal demand. The agricultural industries of the State are in a flourishing condition. Tobacco is produced in large quantities, about twenty thousand tons being exported annually, and the cigar and cigarette factories employ about ten thousand men, women, and children. Coffee forms one of the sources of revenue, the receipts from this industry amounting to about a hundred thousand dollars annually. Rubber is exported in increasing quantities every year, and it is said that the unexplored interior of the State contains vast forests with an abundance of rubber-trees



DR. LUIZ VIANNA, EX-GOVERNOR OF BAHIA.

which will yield rich harvests as soon as the difficulties of transportation have been overcome sufficiently to make this source of wealth available. Cotton is grown with little cultivation, and the cotton factories of the State furnish employment to thousands of workmen. The most important of these is that of Pereira, Monteiro & Co., in the city of Bahia, and it is conducted upon a plan which guarantees the best advantages to both employer and employé. A model village accommodates the workmen and their families, who enjoy the benefits of free schools, an amusement hall, regular weekly musical concerts, lectures, and classes in art, music, and fencing, and free medical treatment and legal advice. More than a million dollars capital is invested in this enterprise, which operates six mills, employs two thousand hands, and produces nearly a hundred million yards of cotton annually.



SENHOR S. S. SCHINDLER, BAHIA.

The sugar plantations are in good condition, and several refineries exist in various parts of the State. The Rio Fundo factory crushes annually more than fifty thousand tons of sugar-cane, producing about four thousand tons of sugar, half a million litres of rum, and fifteen hundred pipes of molasses. The quantity of cane crushed at the Iguape factory during the year averages about twenty thousand tons, producing a thousand tons of sugar, eighty thousand litres of rum, and eight hundred pipes of molasses.

The cultivation of cacao has prospered wonderfully in the southern districts from Valença to Alcobaca, especially in Ilhéos, Cannavieiras, and Belmonte. The nature of the plant requires a damp soil, containing a considerable amount of clay and having a thick layer of vegetable mould. The exportation of this article of commerce increases annually, amounting to thousands of tons.

Mandioca is grown in every part of the State, chiefly for the home market, which it has supplied extensively ever since colonial days, when the cultivation of the product was made obligatory by law. The fertility of the soil guarantees the best results from the cultivation of all kinds of cereals, from truck-gardening and fruit-growing; but very little effort has been expended in this direction, and large quantities of corn, beans, rice, potatoes, onions, and similar table necessities are imported.

Cattle and hides are shipped from Bahia in large quantities, the value of the trade in hides reaching a quarter of a million dollars annually. The manufactures of the State include, besides extensive cotton-mills and tobacco-works, several match factories, tanneries, saw-mills, foundries, and other enterprises of similar importance.

The population of the State of Bahia is about two and a half millions. The great commercial, social, and educational centre is the ancient and picturesque city of São Salvador da Bahia, to-day one of the most populous and progressive cities of the Brazilian Union, and the capital of a State whose wealth of natural resource promises to make it renowned in every port of the commercial world. Bahia, as the city is familiarly called, is the Crescent City of Brazil, and is not unlike its northern sister in other features besides the outline which half

encircles the shore of the Bay of All Saints. The circumstances of its growth and development present some features similar to those which attended the history of New Orleans in early slavery days, though the African types seen in the creole city afford no such evidences of material prosperity as appear in the costly jewels that hang about the neck, encircle the arms from shoulder to wrist, and fill the fingers to their tips, on the person of a Bahian negress "of quality." The Brazilian city has the advantage over New Orleans in location, too, being partially built on a high bluff and divided into two sections,—the *Cidade Baixa*, or "lower city," lying close along the bay shore and containing all the commercial houses, factories, and machine-shops of the metropolis; and the

Cidade Alta, or "upper city," divided into beautiful residence quarters, parks, avenues, and suburban resorts. Communication between the two parts of the city has been established by means of incline railways, hydraulic elevators, and by a well-paved street curving along the mountain-side. In the lower city are situated the Al-fandega, or custom-house; the Post-office, the arsenals of war and the marine, public markets, warehouses, and other institutions of a business character, as



PANORAMA OF BAHIA FROM THE BAY OF ALL SAINTS.



CATHEDRAL, BAHIA.

well as the Orphans' Asylum and the home for mendicants. The Governor's Palace is situated in the upper city, near the entrance to the Lacerda elevator, and within a few minutes' ride of the lower city. It is a modern building of attractive architectural design and spacious dimensions. The Senate building and the municipal building occupy commanding sites in the upper city. There are nearly a hundred churches and church institutions, among which the Cathedral possesses particular claims to attention as one of the oldest buildings in America, having been originally erected as a Jesuit college in the sixteenth century, though rebuilt and improved at various times since. As stated elsewhere, several of the churches of Bahia are celebrated for their costly interiors as well as for their historic associations. Among other important public buildings are those devoted to the Faculdade de Medicina, and the Academia de Bellas Artes, referred to elsewhere; the Bibliotheca



THEATRE, BAHIA.

Publica, which contains upward of twenty thousand volumes; the Faculdade de Direito, or free school of law, established in 1891; the Lyceu de Artes e Officios, inaugurated in 1872, with day and night schools, and having a popular library connected with the institution; an ecclesiastical seminary and a seminary for preparatory studies; the Instituto Historico e Geographico da Bahia, inaugurated, in 1856, by Archbishop Romauldo

Antonio de Seixas; the Instituto Bahiano de Agricultura, established in 1859; Hospital da Santa Casa da Misericordia, Museum, Hospital Militar, and numerous theatres and schools. The city is beautified by many public squares, *praças*, and *largos*, of which the principal is the Praça da Constituição, containing the Governor's Palace and other administrative offices; in the Largo Quinze de Novembro the Cathedral is situated, also the Faculdade de Medicina, the famous convent of São Francisco, and several other churches; the Nazareth praça, beautified by the handsome new charity hospital erected here a few years ago; the Praça dos Martyres; Largo Duque de Caxias, in the midst of which stands the majestic monument of white Carrara marble and bronze, a hundred feet in height, named Segundo de Julho [second of July], which commemorates the date of the country's political independence; the Largo da Graça, where the ancient monastery of that name is situated; the

square named for the celebrated Bahian poet, Castro Alves; the Praça do Riachuelo, with the handsome edifice of the Commercial Association overlooking it, and in the centre a stately bronze monument on a pedestal of marble, capped with eight volutes upholding a sphere on which stands the angel of Victory, bearing a palm in one hand and a laurel in the other, symbolizing the victory of the Brazilian armies in the Paraguayan war which the monument commemorates. Exceeding all the other parks of the city in extent and luxuriance of foliage, in its variety of attractive and entertaining accessories, and a popular resort on feast-days and other holidays, is the beautiful garden in the parish of Victoria, overlooking the sea, the Passeio Publico, which contains,

among other interesting features, a magnificent marble monolith, set up to commemorate the opening of Brazilian ports to foreign commerce in 1808. Four systems of street railway traverse the city, connecting it with the picturesque suburbs of Rio Vermelho, Itapagipe, Barra, Plata, Forma, and Retiro. The shrine of Nosso Senhor do Bomfim, which attracts thousands of visitors annually, is situated in the suburb of Itapagipe, on the crest of a beautiful hill overlooking the sea. The State is dotted with innumerable small towns and



RUA DO COMMERCIO, BAHIA.



MUNICIPAL PALACE, BAHIA.

cities, rapidly growing in size and number, but as yet in the early stages of commercial development, with a few exceptions. The principal cities of more than twenty thousand inhabitants are Feira de Santa Anna, especially noted for its cattle-market; Bomfim, a thriving commercial town in territory particularly adapted to wine-growing, cacao culture, and wheat-farming; and Maragogipe, about thirty miles from the State capital, the centre of

a rich coffee district, and of valuable mines of gold and iron. There are several busy little cities of ten thousand and upward in population, such as Santo Amaro, situated about ten miles inland from the harbor of Bahia, and noted for its tobacco factories and distilleries; Alagoinhas, an important railroad terminus and the commercial centre of a large district; Cachoeira, on the bank of the Paraguassú River, not far from the capital, a flourishing city with cotton and spinning mills, and united by a bridge with the neighboring town of São Felix, which has one of the best cigar factories in the State; Jacobina, rich in gold mines and having extensive cotton-fields and yerba-maté plantations, also famous for the



BRIDGE CROSSING RIO UNA, STATE OF BAHIA.

manufacture of *goiabada*, or guava jelly; and Ilhéos, from which are exported large quantities of coffee and cacao, the surrounding territory being also rich in petroleum and other combustibles. Nazareth, Valença, Caravellas, Caetité, and Joazeiro, on the São Francisco River, connected by railway with the city of Bahia, and Lenções, are prosperous commercial and manufacturing towns.

The governor of Bahia is Dr. Severino dos Santos Vieira, recently elected to succeed Conselheiro Luiz Vianna. At the time of his election, Dr. Vieira held the portfolio of Minister of Public Works in the cabinet of President Campos-Salles, which he resigned in order to accept the honors of his present office. Dr. Vieira is admired as a political leader

of experience and tact, and esteemed as one of the prominent statesmen of Brazil. Under his judicious administration, the progress of the State of Bahia is unquestionably assured. The reins of government passed happily from one wise executive to another when Dr. Vieira succeeded Dr. Luiz Vianna. The former governor won high admiration for his judicious qualities as a leader, and during the term of his official career as governor of one of the most important States of Brazil he was noted for keen intelligence and progressive methods. Both the present governor and his predecessor are native Bahians, devoted to the best interests of their State and anxious to promote its advancement, realizing that efforts made toward its development politically, educationally, and commercially will be



RESIDENCE OF SENHOR JOSÉ DA NOVA MONTEIRO, BAHIA.

rewarded in results that cannot fail to place this favored territory among the most important of the world's commonwealths, and thus to honor all who have the good fortune to be associated with the record of its prosperity. From Bahia have come many of the great men who have added lustre to the history of their country. Castro Alves, the poet; Marquis d'Abrantes, the silver-tongued orator; Zacarias de Vasconcellos, the statesman; the illustrious Visconde de Rio-Branco; Alves Branco, Gregorio de Mattos, Barão de Cotegipe, Nabuco de Araujo, Agrario de Menezes, are among the distinguished Brazilian names in literature, statecraft, and journalism belonging to patriots and scholars cradled in the luxuriance which Nature lavishes with a free hand upon the smiling fields and forests of Bahia. The future holds out the promise of great wealth to this prosperous and growing State, and

rich blessings wait upon the energy and activity of its people, whose industrial advancement is no more marked than the charm and grace of their social life and customs. In no city of Brazil are more beautiful homes to be found, and nowhere is gracious hospitality dispensed with more pleasing compliment. European custom prevails in social life to a certain extent, though the same spirit of New-World freedom which has set its impress upon the political and commercial institutions of the country is to be observed in a growing tendency toward social emancipation. It is no longer forbidden to ladies to go shopping or visiting unattended; and even young ladies are sometimes seen alone on the streets, though the chaperon system is so thoroughly rooted in the social life of all Latin nations that changes in this respect are necessarily conservative. Nothing can be more delightful than the social occasions graced by the presence of representative Bahian society of the best class. Music and dancing are inevitable accompaniments, and the soft glances and seductive tones that animate conversation between times, are often superior in eloquence to the brilliant wit that distinguishes their more exclusively intellectual assemblages. The little tête-à-têtes between dances, that so greatly facilitate the archery of Cupid in North American drawing-rooms, are unknown in Brazil; yet eyes may speak the universal language of youth and love regardless of the tongue's limitation, so that these gatherings are always in favor with the young people, particularly as the opportunity for mutual converse is even still more restricted in the quiet home circle, where the whole family must share the secret of every expression. Among the poorer classes the *fiesta* is the great opportunity for social display, and to the visitor the scenes that attend these anniversaries are particularly captivating for their unique charm. Bahia possesses many social characteristics *sui generis*, and in this respect also it is like the Crescent City of North America. The city has a population of two hundred thousand inhabitants.



HOUSE OF THE SENATE, BAHIA.



STREET SCENE IN THE UPPER CITY, BAHIA.

CHAPTER XX

ESPIRITO SANTO, SERGIPE, AND ALAGOAS

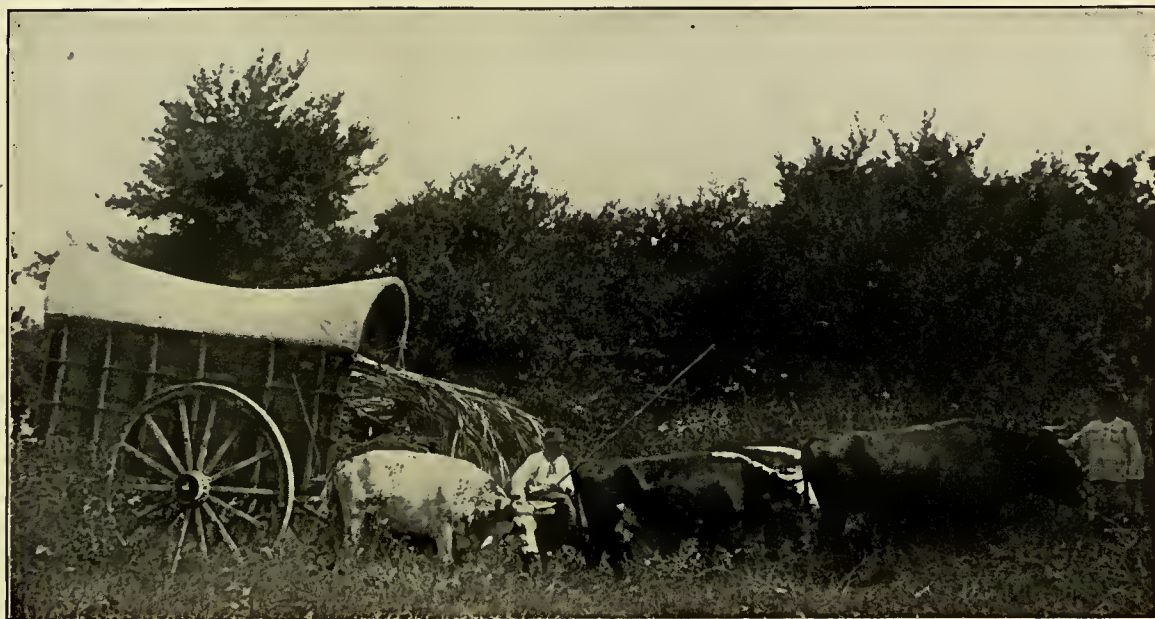


A LAKE SCENE NEAR VICTORIA.

THE three States, Espirito Santo, Sergipe, and Alagoas, form part of the coast country of Brazil, and are subject to the conditions of soil and climate prevailing in this region. Espirito Santo forms a narrow strip of land on the sea-coast, about two hundred and fifty miles in length and eighty miles in width, north of the State of Rio, east of Minas Geraes, and south of Bahia. In the northern and eastern parts of the State are flat plains covered with luxuriant vegetation and having innumerable small lakes and marshes, on the borders of which grow various palms, myrtles, and cacti. Beyond this low land, which skirts the coast-line

as far as the Rio Doce, dividing the State into two regions, extend high *serras* branching off from the main chain of the Mantiquiera and taking various names in different sections. This mountainous region is watered by swift and turbulent streams that swell in rainy seasons to surging torrents. The climate is moist and very warm along the coast, but agreeable in the interior, and generally healthful. The soil is particularly adapted to the

cultivation of coffee, sugar, cotton, and cereals, and offers excellent inducements for colonization. Mandioca, *feijões*, rice, cacao, and fruit are cultivated throughout the State. The forests supply the most valuable woods of commerce, such as rose-wood; the *peroba*, much used in cabinet-work and in ship-building; the *genipapo*, a very elastic wood of a peculiar lilac color; the *itapicurú*, having the appearance of rose-wood seamed with yellow fibres; and many other varieties for general building purposes. The capital city, Victoria, occupies an admirable location on the shores of Espirito Santo harbor, from its high bluff commanding a fine view of the ocean. It numbers about twenty thousand inhabitants, and is one of the principal ports on the line of the various steamers of the Brazilian coast trade, as well as of transatlantic steamers visiting Rio de Janeiro, from which it is less than three hundred miles distant. The entrance to the harbor of Espirito Santo is guarded by



TYPICAL COUNTRY CONVEYANCE.

two lighthouses, the Santa Luzia and the Francez, which increase the picturesqueness of the scenery, in addition to their usefulness as protective agencies. Besides the capital city, which is particularly attractive for its numerous churches and convents, the town of Anchieta, founded by Father Anchieta in the seventeenth century, is interesting for its antiquities; Itapemirim is a promising sea-port town; and São Mathens, with a population of ten thousand, is one of the thriving small towns of the State. The importance of immigration for the State of Espirito Santo is apparent. The climate is excellent, the soil fertile, the shipping facilities unsurpassed; it remains to develop its possibilities by establishing energetic farming communities throughout the State, and in this way opening up the great resources of a district which belongs to the most fertile zone in Brazil. The governor of the State is Dr. José de Mello Carvalho Moniz Freire, an able and progressive administrator.

Occupying a small though remarkably fertile territory between Bahia and Pernambuco are the two adjoining States of Sergipe and Alagoas, similar in climate and resources, and yet differing in many important characteristics. Sergipe covers a territory of forty thousand square kilometres, and has a population of nearly four hundred thousand inhabitants. The chief industries consist in the cultivation of cotton, sugar, and cereals; oils, resins, and timber constitute an important source of revenue. Educational facilities are constantly promoted by the government, and there are ten good colleges in the State for higher instruction, a normal school, and more than two hundred public schools for general instruction. The capital city is Aracajú, attractively situated on the bank of a river and at a distance



A PRIMITIVE INDUSTRY.

of about ten miles from the sea-coast. It has a population of twenty thousand, and is laid out in broad and well-shaded streets, with three public squares, or praças. Its principal institutions are the charity hospital of Nossa Senhora da Conceição; the Atheneu Sergipense, an advanced school, inaugurated in 1871; the Gabinete de Leitura; numerous churches and chapels; spinning-mills, soap-factories, and iron-works. The palace of the governor, Senhor Olympio de Campos, occupies a beautiful location on one of the principal praças of the city. The town of Riachuelo, situated a few miles from the capital, is a flourishing town, and Lagarto, Larangeiras, Maroim, and São Christovam are important centres of the sugar trade. The land in the coast country of Sergipe is particularly adapted to sugar

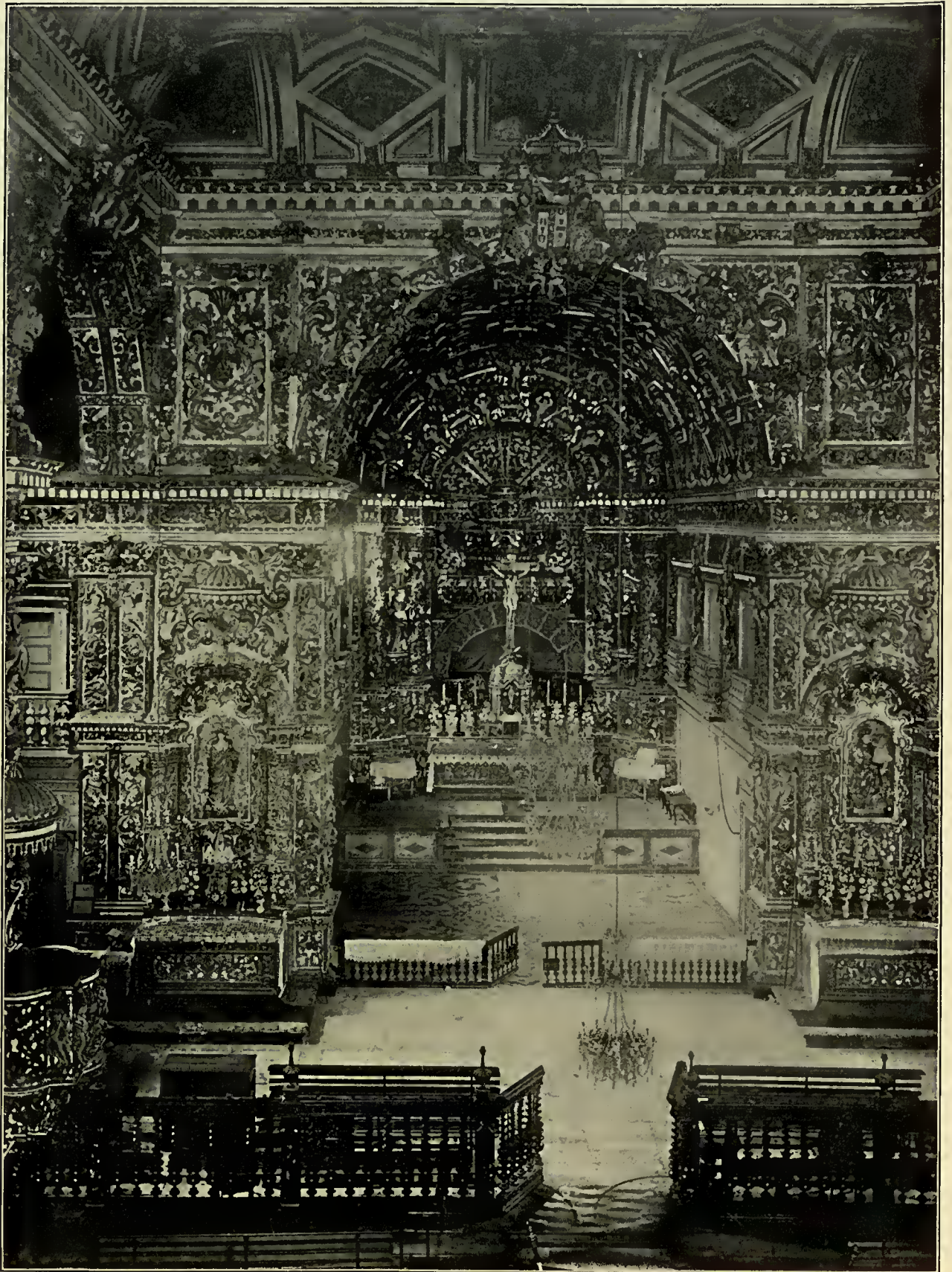
growing; and in the interior districts cattle-raising is an important source of revenue. The State of Alagoas is well advanced commercially and socially; its agricultural lands, and especially its cattle-farms, are under excellent management, and the exports from this State are remarkable in quantity and variety, considering its limited extent, covering a territory of only twenty-five thousand square miles. It is quite mountainous, and traversed by numerous small rivers; the climate, though warm, is very healthful and delightfully tempered by sea-breezes. The chief products are cereals, cotton, sugar, dyewoods, and various oils and essences. In the western part of the State are cattle ranches of considerable importance. Within recent years the exportation of products from this State to foreign markets has been steadily increasing, and the outlook is most promising for its future commercial relations, especially with North American markets, to which are shipped annually large quantities of sugar and dyewoods. The manufacturing industries of the State are rapidly developing, and include sugar refineries; establishments for the manufacture of vinegar; tobacco and cigar works; factories for making alcohol; cotton factories; pottery-works; saw-mills; soap factories; and an increasing number of smaller factories for making shoes, furniture, leather, and various articles equally in demand.

The capital of Alagoas, and the principal city of the State, is Maceió, a prosperous centre, situated a few miles inland from its sea-port, Jaraguá, and presenting altogether the appearance of a progressive modern city, keenly alive to the necessity for continual improvement in every feature of municipal life. The governor of the State, Colonel Francisco Manoel dos Santos Pacheco, an active and energetic leader, has his official residence in this city.

Alagoas possesses an especial claim to honor as the birthplace of Maréchal Floriano Peixoto, to whom the republic is indebted for gallant services.



PRIMITIVE METHOD OF THRESHING BEANS.



INTERIOR OF THE FRANCISCAN CHURCH, BAHIA. WOOD-CARVING OF THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

CHAPTER XXI

RELIGION AND SOME OLD CHURCHES



HIS GRACE ARCHBISHOP JOAQUIM ARCOVERDE,
OF RIO DE JANEIRO.

IN their antiquity, in the charm of their traditions and customs, and in the artistic value of their ornamentation, the old churches and shrines of Brazil possess a fascinating attractiveness. The history of religion in Brazil presents many contrasts to the records of the Church preserved in the annals of other Catholic countries. The liberal spirit of the Brazilian people is shown no less in religious than in secular matters. Since the inauguration of the republic, the Church and State have been separate, and absolute freedom of worship is assured to every citizen; but even under the empire, when the Roman Catholic was the established church, Brazil was distinguished among all the Latin countries for its independence of church ruling in secular matters or when such ruling did not accord with the national view of religious affairs. On several occasions, measures were adopted by the State to curtail

ecclesiastical authority; during the regency, it was once proposed to establish the Brazilian Church independent of Rome; at another time, the papal nuncio in Brazil was censured through the press for utterances not consistent with the dignity of his office; and when certain bishops tried to override the civil law by issuing decrees to forbid the burial of Freemasons, they were arrested, tried, and condemned to imprisonment, with hard labor. In early colonial days, however, the Church was a more important power, its missionaries exerting a widespread influence in the new country. The order of the Jesuits, which was



CHURCH OF SANTA ANNA, PARÁ.

founded just about the time of the first colonization of Brazil, sent out two apostles who devoted their lives to the cause of Christianity in this benighted land,—Father Nobrega and Father Anchieta; the story of their labors fills many an interesting page in Brazilian history, and may be read in some of the greatest institutions now flourishing in the blessed name of charity, as well as in the sacred ruins of edifices built centuries ago and dedicated to religious worship. The church which first served as the episcopal see in Brazil was built by these priests, and named the “Ajuda,” in the same year that the first governor-general, Thomé de Souza, landed in Bahia and founded the city. When the bishop arrived, three years later, the Jesuits gave up their chapel to him and removed to Carmo,

where they built a small hospital and a hermitage, the Ajuda serving as a cathedral church until the construction of the present church of Sé, which was begun in 1553, and was never completely finished. Soon after the Jesuits removed to Carmo, they found it necessary to return to the city, and having secured the necessary funds, they proceeded at once to build the *Collegio*, the first Jesuit college in America, which was endowed by King Dom Sebastian in 1564, though not completed until about ten years later. When Pombal expelled the Jesuits from Brazil, the college, by royal decree, was made a cathedral during the repairing of the church of Sé, and this prerogative was never withdrawn. The old edifice is one of the interesting sights of Bahia.

Authorities differ as to the priority of the chapels Victoria and Graça, but both these structures belong to the first half of the sixteenth century. It is related that when Martim Affonso was in Bahia in 1531 he was present at the marriage of one of Caramurú's daughters, the ceremony taking place in the church of Victoria, in which the following epitaph is still preserved:

“Here lies Affonso Rodrigues a native of Obydos, the first that married in this church, in 1531. His wife was Magdalena Alvares, the daughter of Diogo Alvares Corrêa, the first inhabitant of this capitania. He died in 1561.”

The chapel of Graça was erected by Catherine Alvares Paraguassú, who made it over by deed of gift to the Benedictines in 1582; it was converted into a monastery, and rebuilt, nearly two centuries later, by Abbot Peixoto. An interesting story is related regarding the building of this chapel. It is said that upon the return of her husband, Caramurú; from a shipwrecked vessel where he had been rendering aid to the unfortunate, Paraguassú

entreated him to go back and save a woman whom she had seen in a vision and who was at that moment among the Indians, praying that she would send for her and build her a place of shelter. Caramurú obediently set out in quest of the woman, but failing to find her after a third search, he was returning, quite discouraged, when his glance suddenly rested upon an image of the Virgin that an Indian had found on the shore and had thrown into a corner of his hut, and he took it home. Paraguassú was satisfied with this fulfilment of her vision, and ordered the chapel to be built and the image to be placed therein, where it was greatly venerated as "Our Lady of Graça." Paraguassú lies buried in this chapel, and the following epitaph still marks her last resting-place:

"Tomb of Dona Catharina Alvares Paraguassú, Lady that was of the Capitania of Bahia, which she and her husband Diogo Alvares Corrêa gave to the King of Portugal, having built this chapel of Nossa Senhora da Graça, which she gave, with the ground annexed, to the Patriarch São Bento, in the year 1582."

The ancient abbey of Montserrat, which is still one of the picturesque features of the neckland of Itapagipé, Bahia, was built early in the seventeenth century, though by whom is a mystery. Its origin is attributed by some authorities to a Spaniard, but this is also said to apply to another abbey of Montserrat, in the town of Santos. One of the most important of these early churches, from the magnificence of its present appearance, its wonderfully ornamented interior, and the costliness of its gilded carvings, is the Franciscan monastery of Bahia. It was built by Franciscan friars, the first of the order having come from Portugal in 1585, in response to an invitation from the *donatorio* of Pernambuco, and, after founding the convent of Our Lady of Olinda, they removed to Bahia. The work of building the present monastery was begun by the laying of the foundation-stone in 1686, the church in connection with it being begun in 1708 and finished in 1713. All the ornaments of the church were finished in 1723. The cloister is built with thirty-six arches, every pillar being made of a single stone. Around the walls are Dutch tiles ornamented to represent scenes in ancient sacred and profane history. The wonderful carving in the interior of the church was the work of a Franciscan monk of Bahia, Friar Luiz de Jesus.



CATHEDRAL, MARANHÃO.

The church has seven elaborately carved and gilded altars, on which, in accordance with the obligations of the order, seven thousand three hundred and fifty-eight Masses were said every year until 1754. About fifty Franciscans lived in the monastery up to the year 1856, when the emperor prohibited the admission of novices, and the order declined until, in 1892, it was recruited by the arrival of several monks. At present, its occupants number thirty-five, among others the scholarly and courteous Friar Bahlmann, from whom the description of the monastery was obtained. The most remarkable feature of the architecture is the dado of Dutch tiles that surrounds the cloister, and may be seen from the *patio*. Fabulous sums have been offered by curio hunters for these tiles, which

are of Delft porcelain, each tile having been painted and finished separately, but so carefully that the general design was perfect when the tiles were placed in position. The tiles surrounding the lower walls represent a succession of scenes from the works of Homer and other ancient writers, while those of the upper gallery represent Biblical scenes. It is probably the only work of the kind in existence in America.



CHURCH OF NOSSA SENHORA DO CARMO,
PERNAMBUCO.

A shrine of great antiquity and interest is that of Bomfim, in the suburb of Itapagipé, Bahia, erected in 1754, and one of the most popular shrines in Brazil to-day. In it are preserved many curious relics and symbols, such as are found in similar churches of Europe. The fiestas celebrated at this shrine are renowned for their magnificence and for the thousands of participants who assemble on such occasions.

Although Bahia was the great centre of religious worship in earlier days, and is still the stronghold of the Catholic Church in Brazil, the erection of places of worship began simultaneously with the discovery of the country, in every territory of the dominion. In Rio de Janeiro many old churches still exist that were built in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, as those of São Sebastião, São Bento, and the Candelaria. In Pernambuco, São Paulo, Ceará, and Maranhão there are to be found several chapels that date from the eighteenth century, and church fiestas are celebrated in every State of the Union, which are the survival of these earlier days, preserving, in a wonderful degree, the traditions and history of their inauguration. During the fiesta of Bomfim, the devoutly religious practise the greatest humility, entering the sacred chapel on their knees and performing numerous

rites that prove their desire to be rid of the sins of the flesh. A very picturesque fiesta is celebrated in Bahia by the donkey-drivers and water-carriers, who form a procession, sometimes a mile long, on their way to the church, the chief feature being the donkeys, which are gorgeously decorated with flowers and foliage. The impression which remains with the by-stander after witnessing one of these processions is that the donkey-drivers and water-carriers are the happiest and most contented of people.

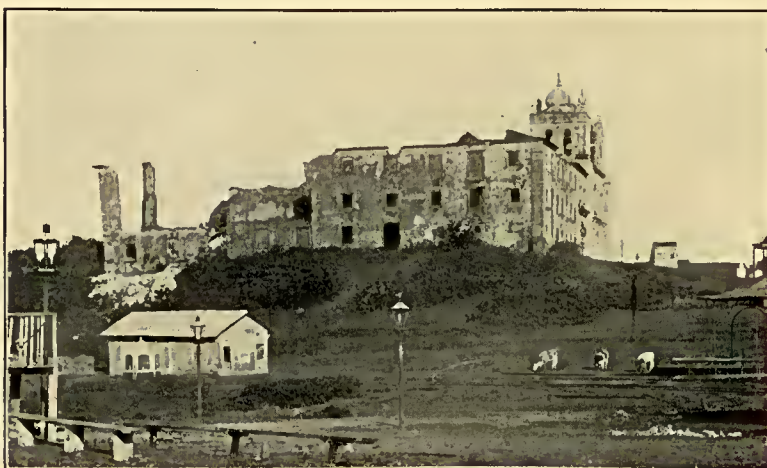
The chapel of "Senhor dos Passos," in Florianopolis, Santa Catharina, has a most interesting history, and its fiestas are attended with great religious demonstrations. It was built in 1765 by Dona Joanna de Gusmão, a sister of the renowned aeronaut, in accordance with a vow made while on a pilgrimage to the shrine of Our Lady of Neves, on the shores of the Iguape River, where she was miraculously cured of a terrible illness. Dona Joanna made a pilgrimage on foot, and unattended, throughout the whole of southern Brazil, seeking alms with which to build this chapel and to institute the Sisterhood of the Passos, until, at the age of eighty, her pilgrimage having succeeded in its purpose, she became the directress of the institution, where she died in 1780.

The most elaborate religious fiesta celebrated at the present day in Brazil is that of "Nossa Senhora de Nazareth," in the city of Pará. It occurs in the month of October, and attracts thousands of visitors to the city, lasting about two weeks, during which the place is given up to religious and social entertainments. The origin of this shrine and its attend-

ing observances is similar to the history of other celebrated shrines throughout the world. It is described by various writers, and related by the people of that region, without important deviations in the main points of the tradition. One day, about noon, two hunters, fatigued by their chase through the forests in the neighborhood of Pará, sought rest under the shade of a tree. They were



SHRINE OF BOMFIM, BAHIA.



RUINS OF CARMELITE CONVENT IN OLINDA, PERNAMBUCO.

discontented and disgusted not to have found so much as a toucan in the woods where game of all kind abounded. Their dogs, tired out like themselves, were stretched out under the same tree. In a few minutes they were asleep, overcome by exhaustion. During his sleep, one of the hunters was visited in his dreams by a woman who spoke to him and told him to search in a thicket close by, where he would find an image of the Virgin of Nazareth.

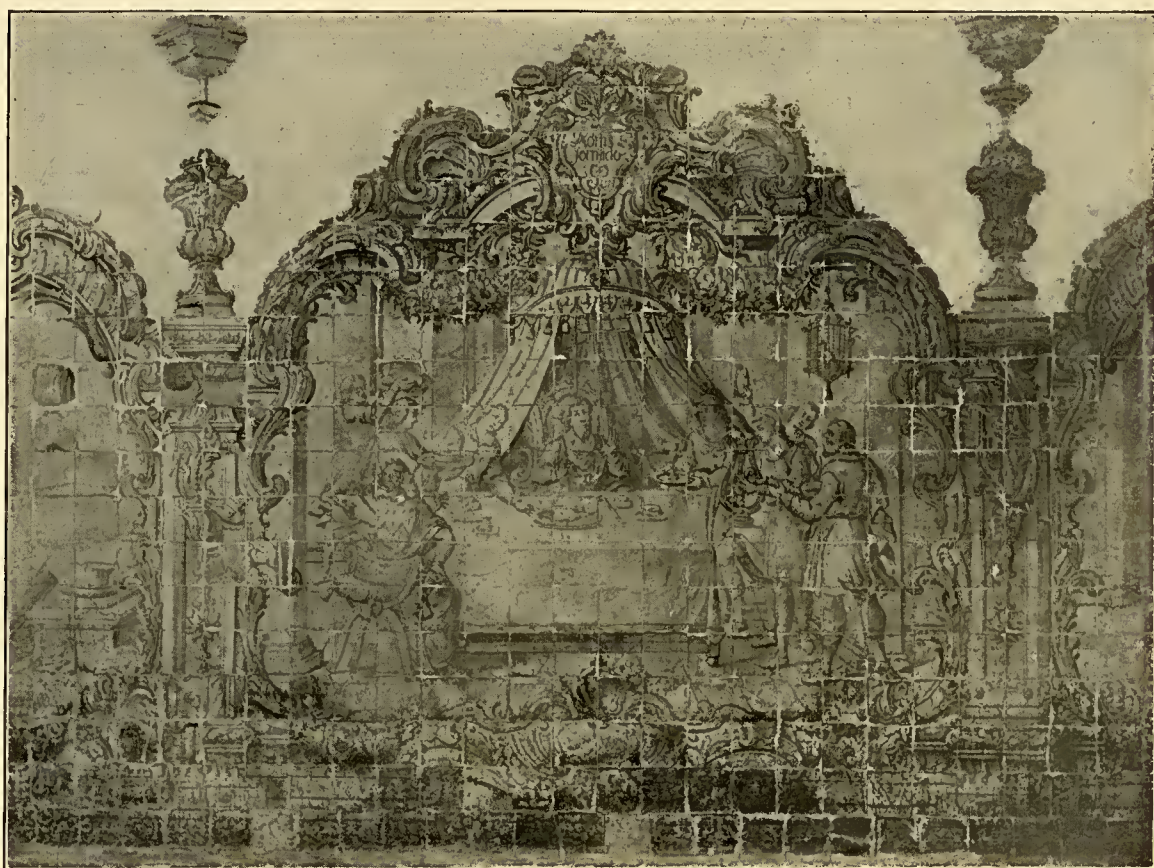


CHURCH OF SÃO FRANCISCO, CAMPOS.

On waking, he went at once to the mysterious place, and while he searched the thicket, his dogs, plunging into the midst of a cluster of palms, began to bark excitedly. He ran to them, and to his great surprise discovered near the trunk of the oldest palm a beautiful statue. Happier than if they had killed a thousand deer, the hunters took their way back to the town, carrying with them the glorious image, which they hastened to present to the governor, who placed it in the chapel of his palace. The news of this discovery spread throughout the town. The faithful prayed the governor to expose to the veneration of the people this sacred image of Our Lady, the patron of the town, and it was decided that the next day the doors of the chapel should be open to the public. But, alas! the next day, when they opened the chapel, the image had disappeared. The poor hunters who had started

the news were grieved because they feared they would be taken for liars. They went again to the thicket, and were overjoyed to find the statue in the same spot where they had first seen it. The governor and the people also went to the thicket, and the image was taken back to the palace with great pomp. The next day it had disappeared again, and again they found it in the same place and carried it back to the town. Three or four times the same miracle took place. Then the bishop, with the consent of the governor, decided

that they should erect a little chapel on the spot where they had found the statue and place it therein. The chapel was built, and the altar marked the location of the mysterious bush. The faithful gathered from all parts. Miracles were so numerous that soon the little chapel was replaced by a large church, with a covered vestibule for pilgrims. Every year afterward, great popular pilgrimages celebrated the fiesta of the Virgin of Nazareth. The pilgrimage is still continued to this day, though the forest has been transformed into broad avenues and the shrine is situated in a fashionable quarter of the large city which has grown up around it. Every year, in remembrance of the ancient miracle, the holy image is carried



SECTION OF DADO OF PAINTED DUTCH TILES ORNAMENTS THE WALLS AROUND THE PATIO OF THE FRANCISCAN MONASTERY, BAHIA, AND REPRESENTING SCENES IN SACRED AND PROFANE HISTORY.

from the chapel of the president's palace to the church of Nazareth. Many of the faithful who formerly knelt at the feet of the miraculous statue still relate wonderful stories of what they beheld on arriving in the early morning, the tunic of the saint still covered with turf. Devotees often met during the night a beautiful child of about twelve years of age, with transparent skin, eyes marvellously bright, golden hair, and an angelic voice. The fishermen also saw this vision of beauty, who was frequently accompanied by two smaller and younger children. Sometimes she spoke to these fishermen, and counselled them not to sell their fish too dear and to keep always a good quality. Others have caught a view of

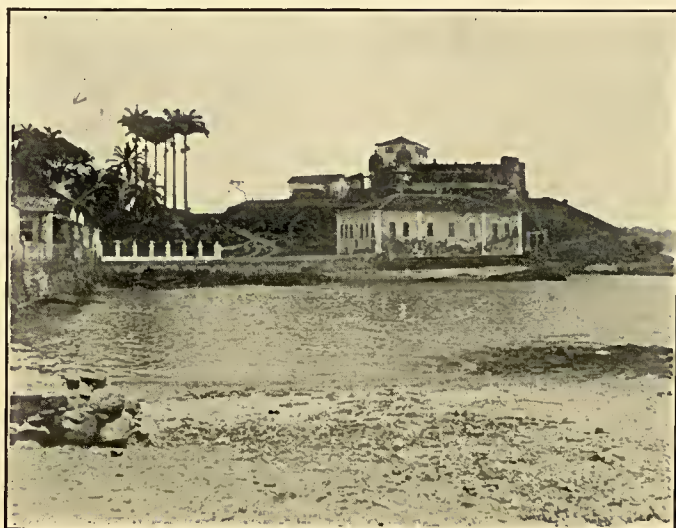
her playing alone on the church square or on the highway. It was the Virgin of Nazareth who thus gladdened the hearts of her people with fleeting glimpses of her glorious presence. As long as the worship of Our Lady of Nazareth was maintained in all its purity and ardor, and as long as the chapel remained open day and night to the faithful, the pest was a thing unknown in Pará. But the time came when a revolution broke out, the insurgent "Cabanos" paying no reverence to the sacred church of the Virgin, which was marred during their bitter strife, and from that day the saint has been seen no more outside the chapel;—no one has since met the beautiful child with the golden hair. But cholera and small-pox have visited the city. Then, contrary to the wishes of the old-time worshippers, a fine church was erected on another site; soon a comet appeared in the sky—it was the forerunner of a new pest, the terrible *beriberi*. Nevertheless, the good Virgin does not remain deaf to the prayers of the truly faithful; her miracles are still numerous, and even the incredulous are reminded of her power in the day of danger. The principal feature of this church fiesta is the "Cirio," a procession instituted and regulated by an ordinance from Dom Francisco de Souza-Coutinho, governor of Pará under Portuguese rule, from 1790 to 1803, which specified, among other things, the order of precedence to be observed by the various civil, military, and ecclesiastical authorities who were to follow in the procession "with meditation and prayer." The purpose of this procession was for the transporting of the holy image of Our Lady of Nazareth from the Governor's Palace to the chapel of Our Lady of Nazareth. Every one takes part in this procession; some, it is true, out of curiosity or to enjoy the spectacle, but many out of religious fervor, desirous of offering public proofs of their gratitude to the holy Virgin, to whose intercession they attribute miraculous cures, or a rescue from death, or whose answers to their prayers for loved ones in danger have wrought miracles in their behalf. First in the procession is a car, representing a

fortress, from which fire-works and rockets are exploded with great *éclat*. Then follows a long cavalcade, presenting a striking and rich appearance; after the cavalcade, another car or float, representing the miracles of Dom Fuas Roupinho, and of the barque *S. João Baptista*; then a boat carried on the shoulders of the Sailors' Union and of others who have vowed, on account of some miraculous rescue, to assist in carrying the boat full of children who represent a shipwrecked crew



CHURCH OF NOSSA SENHORA DE NAZARETH, PARÁ.

miraculously saved after days of struggle, hunger, and discouragement; next in line come the angels, on horseback, bearing bright oriflammes with the dates of miracles and the names under which these miracles are known; these are followed by carriages filled with members of the best families in the city, all dressed in brilliant costumes and having their carriages handsomely decorated; the procession of carriages ends with the coach of the governor, accompanied by his secretary and his aide-de-camp, who are followed by



CHURCH OF MONTSERRAT, BAHIA.

the bishop. The procession closes with a fairy-like coach, shaped something in the style of a royal crown, all purple and gold, in the centre of which stands the venerated image of the Holy Virgin. The coach is guarded on both sides by the directors of the fiesta, and the populace, taking hold of the long ribbons of red silk attached to the vehicle, draw it along with great respect and devotion, regarding it as a great honor to have this privilege. Many interesting instances of devotion are presented at these processions. Sometimes delicately nurtured women of high birth will follow in the long line of worshippers, having their feet bare and wearing a gown of sackcloth or other coarse material. Some enthusiasts have been known to crawl on their knees the whole distance from the palace to the chapel, about a mile. The city garrison, artillery and infantry, end the procession proper, though an interminable throng follows, crowding and pushing, to get a sight of the image, or to receive the bishop's blessing as his coach stops now and then in the course of the march. Each of these followers carries an offering for the altar emblematic of the nature of the particular cure for which there is special reason to be grateful to the blessed Virgin. It may be a wax arm, showing in ghastly red where a mortal wound had been made, and signifying that the bearer had been miraculously saved from the fatal effects of a terrible injury to the arm. Wax heads, spotted in red to indicate eruptions, or little wax figures covered with an imitation of small-pox marks, typify the particular form of disease overcome through the intercession of Our Lady of Nazareth. So dense is the throng during this procession, and so frequent are the delays, that it often requires three or four hours for it to pass a certain point. The best view is always to be had on the Avenida da Republica, where the crowd is thickest and the street broadest, also the delay most prolonged. During the remaining days of the fiesta, there are daily amusements of all sorts, the fund collected going into the treasury of the church for charitable purposes.

At Cuyabá, in the province of Matto Grosso, the fiestas of Pentecost are sumptuously observed. The director of the fiesta is chosen by lot. On the eve of the day to be

celebrated, he sallies forth accompanied by a band of music and some friends, and carrying the insignia of his office,—a silver crown, sceptre, and banner. He goes to solicit offerings, which usually amount to about a thousand dollars, sometimes more. The day of the ceremony, this leader, who takes the title of Emperor, proceeds to the church in the centre of a square made by four planks of wood, the ends of which are carried on the shoulders of the most distinguished personages of the town; on a silver plate the sceptre and crown are borne, the banner preceding the procession. In the evening, there is a grand illumination, including fire-works, extending all along the route from the door of the



PATIO OF THE FRANCISCAN MONASTERY, BAHIA.

church to that of the "Emperor," where a rich altar is raised. After the religious ceremony, there is a free distribution of food and drink for the poor, and even small cakes for everybody. The authorities receive special gifts, consisting of immense cakes ornamented with flowers and ribbons. Then there are bull-fights, balls, plays,—everything at the expense of the "Emperor," who sometimes pays as much as two thousand dollars or more for the entertainment. At Cuyabá, it is said, the episcopal church possesses a miraculous image of the "Senhor Bom Jesus." It was found on the island of Manoel-Homem, on the Rio Grande, two hundred and twenty-five leagues from the capital where it is worshipped

to-day. The island takes its name from a celebrated criminal, Manoel-Homem, who took refuge there. He found there the sacred image, and guarded it with devotion. The place, situated at the confluence of two rivers on the route of voyagers from São Paulo to the mines of Matto Grosso, was too exposed to the eyes of the curious; the criminal resolved to seek a shelter safer for his person. Before plunging farther into the interior, however, he built a little cabin, where he placed the image. A merchant found it there; he tried in vain to remove it, finally calling his friends to his aid; even then, all efforts proved useless, though the statue was of wood and weighed only a few pounds.



CHURCH OF NOSSA SENHORA DO CARMO, PARÁ.

Another traveller was more fortunate, and, in consequence, the statue now enjoys the place of honor in the cathedral.

But although the observance of traditional religious customs remains to a certain extent, there is a growing freedom of sentiment which is widespread. Protestantism has gained a foothold in many States, and the teachings of Auguste Comte have a large following. The Positivists, led by Benjamin Constant, were particularly prominent in the affairs of the revolution. To their influence has been attributed largely the first movement toward the separation of Church and State; the adoption of the motto "*Ordem e Progresso*" on the flag, and the use of the words "*Saude e Fraternidade*" at the head of

official correspondence. There was a conflict of opinion at the time of the legal suppression of the use of the cross in courts of justice, which took place in 1892, but it was of little importance. At present, the attitude of the government and the people is one of the greatest tolerance, even encouragement, to all religious institutions, regardless of creeds. Handsome churches of all denominations have been erected in the larger cities, and there is scarcely a village without schools and hospitals under the charge of more than one denomination. In southern Brazil the Protestant Episcopal Church has more than five hundred communicants, and is growing in strength and influence through the zealous labors of its honored bishop, Right Reverend Lucien Lee Kinsolving, S.T.D., who was chosen for this position by the American House of Bishops and consecrated in Saint Bartholomew's Church, New York, January 6, 1899. The Presbyterian Church is well represented in the principal cities, and the Methodists have many churches and schools. As modern thought stamps its impress upon religious as well as secular institutions, the more picturesque features of religious worship, its fiestas and pageants, are disappearing from the popular customs; but there is something so very attractive in these symbols of devotion that one is loath to think of their falling into disuse.



CHAPEL OF NOSSA SENHORA DA GRAÇA, BAHIA,
BUILT BY PARAGUASSÚ.

CHAPTER XXII

PERNAMBUCO



OLINDA LIGHTHOUSE, PERNAMBUCO.

NOWHERE does the glowing sun of the tropics shed its radiance more brightly than upon the fruitful forests and fields of Pernambuco, touching the rich greens of the luxuriant foliage into deepest tones, and bathing the gorgeous blossoms in a flood of dazzling brilliance. Under the bluest of skies the fair land smiles in the midst of the rich treasures that Nature has poured into her lap, distributing them to a gratifying extent to all parts of the world through the medium of ships that constantly fill the harbor.

A peculiar charm belongs to Pernambuco, not only in natural beauty, but in the absorbing interest of its history. Some authorities assert that the Spanish navigator Vicente Yañez Pinzon landed on the Pernambucan coast several months before Cabral set up the royal standard of Portugal at Porto Seguro, in the present State of Bahia. According to certain data pre-

served in the Archæological and Geographical Institute of Pernambuco, Pinzon disembarked at Cape S. Agostinho, the most easterly point of Brazil, on January 28, 1500, giving to the newly-discovered land the name of *Santa Maria da Consolação*. After a brief exploration of the territory, he continued his voyage northward; the next visit to the coast was made by André Gonçalves, sent out by the king of Portugal to continue the explorations initiated by Cabral. The settlement of the capitania of Pernambuco was effected chiefly under the direction of its first grantee, Duarte Coelho, who paid special attention to its

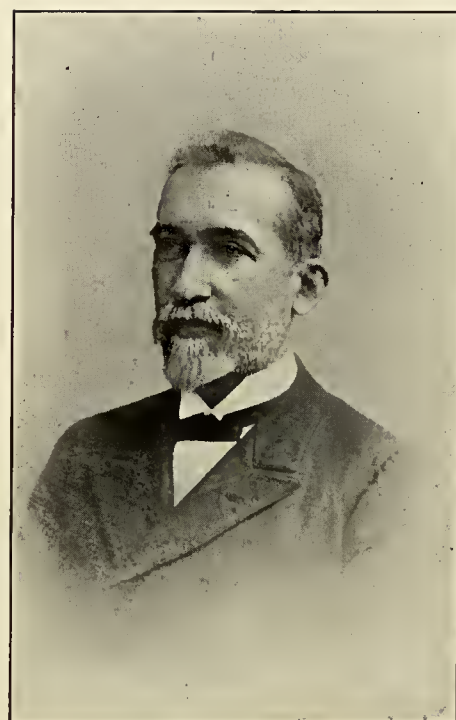
agricultural development, introducing, as previously stated, the culture of sugar-cane early in the sixteenth century. The history of the State is remarkable, not only from the singular circumstances surrounding its growth and development, but also through the unparalleled records of distinguished valor that fill the annals of its past. The unyielding resistance to the Dutch invasion, especially, under conditions that seemed absolutely hopeless, affords proof of a spirit of the proudest independence; instances related of splendid courage and sublime patriotism exhibited by the leaders of the Pernambucan forces during that time rival the most thrilling accounts of ancient heroism. The famous retreat of Xenophon was not more remarkable than the consummate tact and coolness of the Indian Camarão under



GOVERNOR'S PALACE, PERNAMBUCO.

similar overwhelming odds; the brave Henrique Dias has few equals even among the world's greatest heroes; the daring of the Spartan Leonidas was not more reckless than the indomitable courage of those intrepid soldiers, Pedro de Albuquerque, Agostinho Nunes, and Salvador de Azevedo; in generalship, Miltiades was scarcely superior to the invincible Pernambucan leaders Vidal de Negreiros and Mathias de Albuquerque; and the mother of the Gracchi might have learned a lesson in self-sacrifice and patriotism from the Brazilian matron, Dona Maria de Souza, who, after having lost her three eldest sons in the war, called to her side her two remaining boys, both less than fifteen years of age, and in a voice choked by emotion, but firm with determination, said to them: "My sons, I have

just received news of the death of your three brothers, who have fallen in battle. What duty demands of you is to imitate their example in patriotism. Go, my children, take your swords, and, if need be, offer up your lives in defence of your country and your king!" The sturdy resistance opposed to the forces of the imperial government which were sent to demolish the "Federation of the Equator" was another evidence of the unbending resolution of these lovers of liberty. And in later years, when the Voluntarios da Patria were called out to fight in the Paraguayan war, the "Leões do Norte" [Lions of the North], as the Pernambuco troops were named, responded with amazing readiness, appearing among the first on the scene of battle, with the letters "V. P." worked in gold on their coat-sleeves, which were interpreted, according to the sentiment of the hour, to signify "*Voluntarios da Patria*," "*Vamos Partir!*" [Let us go forward!] "*Viva Pernambuco!*" "*Valor e Patriotismo!*" "*Vingança, Perversos!*" [Vengeance, Villains!] or "*Victoria, Patricios!*" [Victory, Countrymen!] The distinguished services rendered by these soldiers are remembered with gratitude by the whole Brazilian nation. In peace, as well as in war, the honor of Pernambuco has been worthily upheld by its loyal and devoted people. Socially, there are few States of the union that have enjoyed similar advantages. Previous to the Dutch conquest, the city of Olinda, which is now the principal suburb of the State capital, was the centre of wealth and fashion in



DR. SIGISMUNDO ANTONIÔ GONÇALVES,
GOVERNOR OF PERNAMBUCO.



PONTE DE BOA VISTA, PERNAMBUCO.

Brazil, and its university was the chief seat of learning in America. The Dutch invaders destroyed this city, though their governor, Maurice de Nassau, who established his colonial capital at Recife, devoted particular attention to the intellectual development of the country, inviting the leading scholars and artists of Europe to visit his Brazilian possessions, and bestowing liberal patronage upon institutions for educational advancement. The influence of Maurice de Nassau's government

was beneficial from this standpoint, and has no doubt contributed to make Pernambuco the progressive State that it is, and always has been, intellectually. The University of Olinda has been removed to Recife, where it is celebrated as one of the best educational institutions in Brazil. In addition, the State supports an excellent Normal School, the Collegio de Artes, the Gymnasio, about six hundred primary and secondary schools, and numerous charity asylums. A very important collection of volumes is preserved in the library of the Instituto Archeologico e Geographico, which occupies one of the handsomest buildings of the State capital, and contains complete records of the history of Pernambuco in the form of documents, historical paintings, and interesting relics.



DERBY MARKET, PERNAMBUCO.

But while the social and educational development of the State has received special attention, the commercial interests have not been neglected. In some respects, Pernambuco is the most important State of northern Brazil. Although not the largest, it covers a territory of fifty thousand square miles in the most fertile region of the tropics; its sea-port is visited by the ships of all nations, which are freighted from the rich stores of the country with sugar, cotton, tobacco, and hides; the harbor, which is formed by a coralline reef, is among the wonders of the world. The coast country, which is low and flat, is adapted to the culture of rice and sugar; about fifteen miles inland the land becomes hilly, and is especially suitable for the growth of tobacco, coffee, and cotton; on the extensive table-lands that cover the remote interior, cattle-raising is the chief industry. Sugar is the most important source of revenue to the State. At one time, it constituted the principal article of export from Brazil, though it has since been superseded in value, commercially, by coffee and

rubber. The outlook is very favorable for the sugar-product, however, as the home market is constantly increasing the demand, and a high protective tariff prevents foreign competition. Extensive cotton-fields are under cultivation throughout the State, and the cotton export trade is very large, though the southern States of North America are strong competitors in the European cotton market. Rice is still in the early stages of development as a commercial product, though the crop is growing each year, and will, without doubt, be one of the most important articles of export in the near future, the climate and soil favoring its cultivation to an unlimited extent. Tobacco is grown in many localities, principally on the



STREET SCENE IN PERNAMBUCO.

table-lands, although its culture has declined since cotton-growing has become popular, owing, possibly, to the less amount of labor required in the cultivation of cotton, to its immediate sale, and to the better price it brings in the market. Indigo was formerly exported in large quantities, also cinnamon; other exotic plants, which were propagated from the specimens grown in the Botanical Garden of Olinda during the eighteenth century, are cultivated to a sufficient extent to form important articles of export. From the same source originated many of the fruits that are now shipped from Pernambuco. The pineapple of this region is particularly noted for its delicious flavor, which is superior to that of any other locality. The mango is also found here in excellent quality, equal to that of Bahia, which



RESIDENCE AT DERBY, PERNAMBUCO.

is the largest mango-producing State in Brazil. The mango is not a fruit that lends itself readily to æsthetic preparation by the fastidious, presenting many difficulties in the process of paring and eating its juicy, fibrous, cling-stone conglomerate. Fortunately, there are forks manufactured exclusively for use in this process which would else offer a problem to table manners and dignity. Oranges, bananas, grapes, and cajú also

comprise fruits in the production of which the State has acquired an enviable celebrity. Itamaracá, separated from the mainland by a narrow strait, and lying a few miles north of Recife, is famous for the abundance and fine flavor of its mangoes. Off the northwestern coast, the island of Fernando de Noronha is situated, about a hundred miles from the capital. It is a national penal settlement, and is a source of revenue to the government through its important phosphate deposits. On the island are also fortresses and heavy guns for protective purposes.

The customs' receipts at the port of Pernambuco amount annually to about four million dollars. The greatest activity is noticeable in the capital city, which is also the chief seaport, during the shipment of the sugar crop. The streets of the city proper—that is, of the Recife section, there being four sections in all—are crowded with *carregadôrs* and carts unloading and loading sacks of sugar. "Recife" is the name given to the commercial part of the city, which is divided from the other three by the channels of the Beberibe and Capibaribe rivers, which further divide the two sections of Santo Antonio and São José, on the island of Antonio Vaz, from the quarter of Boa Vista on the mainland.

The different parts of the city are connected by handsome bridges which give it an attractiveness that is entirely distinct from the character of other Brazilian cities. In addition to the commercial features of the Recife section, there are several fine old churches and a number of *praças* that beautify it. The Praça do Comércio, on the "Lingueta," as the extreme end of the peninsula is called, is particularly interesting in appearance and general character. It is the Wall Street of the stock-brokers and capitalists; the market of hucksters; the favorite stamping-ground of traders; the resort of idlers, and the popular haunt of political aspirants. Nothing is either of too great or too little importance for a place on the Lingueta, whether it be the arrival of a world-wide celebrity or the final escape of an abused cur; the loss of money, jewels, children, or friends is never an assured fact until a barren search of the Lingueta proves it to be so. In the beautiful quarter of Santo

Antonio, formerly Mauritzstadt, is situated the Governor's Palace, overlooking a beautiful park. At a short distance away are the handsome buildings of the Municipal Chambers, the theatre, the Archæological and Geographical Institute, the Normal School and the Lyceum, the Casa da Misericórdia, and the war arsenal, a number of magnificent churches and schools, and the umbrageous gardens of the Campo das Princesas and Praça Dom Pedro II.



RECIFE LIGHTHOUSE, PERNAMBUCO.

The Lyceum is especially worthy of note, the courses in art and sculpture being advanced and thorough. In São José are many of the public works, railroad stations, the public market, and several historic churches. Boa Vista is the favorite residence quarter of the capital, and the location of the higher colleges, hospitals, and asylums. The population of the city is about two hundred thousand. It is a railway centre of importance, and a municipality blessed by the advantages of such modern improvements as electric and gas lighting facilities, good water-works system, drainage, street-car service, and telegraph and telephone communication. The cable service of Pernambuco is exceptionally fine, connecting the cities of South America with every part of the world. It has no less than ten cable lines to foreign parts. A few miles from the city, in a mountainous district, watered by the Beberibe River, and connected with the capital by a railroad, lies the picturesque old city of Olinda, "the beautiful," as the name implies. Once the

gay and wealthy metropolis of the State, it is now nothing more than a beautiful suburb of Recife, a favorite resort, during the disagreeable season, for residents of the city. There are many prosperous small towns scattered throughout the State, ranging in population from five to ten thousand citizens.

The government of the State, under the wise administration of Dr. Sigismundo António Gonçalves, is progressing favorably in all social, educational, and



PRAÇA MANOEL PINHEIRO, PERNAMBUCO.

commercial affairs. This distinguished governor is a native of the State of Piauh, though an alumnus of the celebrated School of Law at Pernambuco. After graduation, he was appointed a magistrate of Pernambuco, and received the office of chief judge of the tribunal of Pernambuco. During his political career, Dr. Gonçalves has represented the States of Pernambuco and Goyaz in the National Congress, and the State of Pernambuco in the Senate. A prominent journalist, he has been the chief editor of the *Jornal do Recife* ever since his college days. During the presidency of Dr. Prudente Moraes, he was offered the portfolio of Agriculture, which he declined, as well as the office of Director of the Law College of Pernambuco. He is esteemed and honored as an eminent leader.



OA VISTA, CITY OF PERNAMBUCO.

The intellectual advancement of the State is due not only to the liberal methods of the administration, but also to the public-spirited efforts of its leading scholars. In this respect, various educational institutions owe a great measure of their success to the present vice-president of the Municipal Council of Recife, Dr. Francisco Augusto Pereira da Costa, a native Pernambucan, and a graduate of the Law School of Recife. The learned doctor has held several important offices since the beginning of his professional career, having been secretary of the government of Piauh, director of the Lyceum of Pernambuco, director of the Secretaria of the Chamber of Deputies of Pernambuco, a member of the Historical and Geographical Institute of Brazil, the Archæological and Geographical Institute of Pernambuco, and similar societies in Bahia, Rio, Alagoas, and other cities. At the Paris

Exposition of 1889, he was awarded a medal for important scientific exhibits. Numerous works of literary and historical value have been the product of his prolific pen. His book *Selecta Pernambucana* is filled with historical and romantic incidents relative to his native State that are of absorbing interest. Another writer of note is Dr. Oliveira Lima, author of *Pernambuco e Seu Desenvolvimento Historico*, a concise and accurate description of the historical development of the country. Of the prominent statesmen of Brazil, two members of the Federal cabinet are Pernambucans,—Dr. Rosa e Silva, the Vice-President, and Dr. Epitacio Pessoa, Minister of Justice. Not only among the leading scholars and statesmen of the present day are there to be counted many Pernambucans, but in the past history of the country some of the most illustrious names recorded in the annals of Brazilian



THEATRE, PERNAMBUCO.

politics, as well as of military glory, belong to natives of this progressive and cultured community: the Marquis de Olinda, several times minister of the empire; José Ignacio de Abreu Lima, a fearless advocate of constitutional reform under the first emperor, who suffered death for his imprudence; the noble young hero of the Paraguayan war, Antonio Augusto de Araujo Torreão, who, like his young countryman, Joaquim Rodrigues Torres, of Itaborahy, gave up his life in defence of his native land, falling under the enemy's fire at the battle of Riachuelo before the hour of victory came for the Brazilian fleet.

The Pernambucan is the proudest of Brazilians, and with reason. Courage and patriotism have been dominant traits of his character from the earliest days of Brazilian history, and in all that has contributed to the country's advancement educationally and politically this State has exercised an important and beneficent influence. Geographically, the position

of its sea-port gives it the greatest strategic importance as the most easterly point of South America. In the development of trade relations between South America and other countries, it cannot fail to play an important part, even aside from the commerce of its own State.

Many foreigners visit the port of Pernambuco every year, and it is not unusual to see half a dozen nationalities represented in the hotels of its attractive suburbs, especially at Derby, which is one of the most picturesque places imaginable, with pretty villas, shaded groves, rippling streams, artistic little bridges half buried in a bower of green, and gaily painted canoes skimming the water's surface. This suburb enjoys the distinction of possessing one of the best hotels in South America; the Derby Hotel is thoroughly modern in every respect, and conducted upon a metropolitan plan in regard to service. The Derby market is one of the most extensive establishments of this kind in Brazil, and is well equipped for the large business that is daily transacted. The suburb owes its attractiveness to the enterprise of a very progressive citizen, Senhor Delmiro Gouveia, the owner, who has personally directed everything in connection with its development. He lives in a handsome residence which he has built on one of Derby's many beautiful avenues. Celebrated travellers who have visited Pernambuco have been charmed with the hospitality of the people, their cosmopolitan interests, and the many pleasing features of their social customs. Life is not such a "rough-and-tumble" fight for the necessities as it is in less favored climates, and consequently there is more leisure for real enjoyment in the observance of social amenities. The foreign resident soon learns the art of gaining leisure, and loses a great deal of the bustling, restless activity that is characteristic of the Anglo-Saxon especially; while the new arrival will speedily succeed in realizing for himself some of that genuine enjoyment in living which is the divine privilege of every Pernambucan.



HOTEL DERBY, PERNAMBUCO.



NATIVE FAMILY.

CHAPTER XXIII

PARAHYBA, RIO GRANDE DO NORTE, AND PIAUHY



NORTH of Pernambuco the two States of Parahyba and Rio Grande do Norte lie bordering on the Atlantic, marking the extreme northwestern limit of the South American continent; and along the western Pernambucan boundary extends the State of Piauhly, which reaches the northern border of Bahia, touches the eastern part of Goyaz, and constitutes the whole of the western boundary of Ceará and of the eastern boundary of Maranhão. In some respects, the history of the development of these three States is similar, though they also differ in climate and natural resources. The general climate of the State of Parahyba is hot and dry, though tempered by sea-breezes. In the interior the conditions are favorable for cattle-raising, and, near the coast, cotton, sugar, and cereals are extensively grown. It is, in fact, one of the principal cotton-growing States of Brazil. The southern part of the State is watered by the river Parahyba do Norte, and the western section by the Rio das Piranhas and its tributaries. The Serra da Borborema divides the river basins of these water ways. The capital city, Parahyba, is situated on a hill overlooking the estuary of the Parahyba River, and connected with its sea-port, Cabedello, by railway. It has several attractive public buildings, among others the State president's palace, municipal buildings, and many churches. The heavily thatched straw huts of Cabedello give this little port a distinctively tropical appearance. The president of the State of Parahyba is Dr. Antonio Alfredo da Gama e Mello.

Rio Grande do-Norte, bounded on the north and east by the Atlantic Ocean, is favored by a salubrious climate and a fertile soil, though its sea-ports are difficult of access owing to the turbulent surf that dashes over all barriers and makes disembarkation during some parts of the year almost an impossibility. The chief products of the State are cotton, sugar, cereals, tobacco, and hides. Few States of Brazil offer greater inducement for development; the soil is so remarkably fertile, especially in the valley of the Ceará-mirim River, in the northeast, that abundant harvests are gathered with scarcely any labor of cultivation. If a railway could be made to connect this State with the larger sea-ports and thus ameliorate the



SCENE IN PIAUHY.

in all Brazilian cities, Natal has an important commercial society for the promotion of agriculture and other industries. Spinning and cotton mills are established in the capital and in several other towns. The city also contains seven churches, two theatres, and an excellent hospital, the Casa da Misericordia. Natal has a population of fifteen thousand inhabitants. In addition to the products previously mentioned, the State exports lumber, oils, resins, cheese, and the wood of the *carnahuba*, which grows abundantly in this region of Brazil. Under the progressive administration of the present governor, Dr. Joaquim Ferreira Chaves, the State enjoys every advantage for the promotion of its welfare.

The most important of the three States, commercially, is that of Piauh, extending north and south from the third to the twelfth degree south latitude, and embracing a territory renowned for its advantages as a cattle-raising region. The climate is generally healthful, remarkably so in some localities, as that of Jaicós, in the east, where, according to statistics filed in Rio de Janeiro in 1888, there were at that time eight men ranging from one hundred and ten years of age upward, and many more who were

conditions of transportation, it would, without doubt, greatly improve its commercial development. The capital and chief seaport of Rio Grande do Norte is Natal, situated near the mouth of the river Potenay. It was founded during the sixteenth century, by Jeronimo de Albuquerque. Besides the usual educational and charitable institutions that are found



THE MONJOLO [PRIMITIVE GRIST-MILL].

centenarians. The cattle industry, which promises to be a source of great wealth to the State, is not yet developed to the extent which the conditions of climate and soil favor for its growth. There is no apparent reason why the vast plateaus that rival in natural advantages the celebrated sheep-farms of Australia should not support the cattle and sheep industry sufficiently to make this region of Brazil one of the strongest competitors in this branch of the world's trade. During the first part of the eighteenth century, the cattle-farms were in a flourishing condition, the Jesuits having more than four thousand square leagues of land in use for cattle-raising for the labor of which they employed six hundred slaves and twice as many Indians. When the order was expelled, the crown of Portugal took possession of these farms, which have gradually passed again into the ownership of the State or of private proprietors. The great demand of the State is for immigrant colonies to utilize its valuable resources. The agricultural industries are developed only to a moderate degree, owing largely to the difficulties of transportation, railway communication not having been established in this State to a considerable extent. An additional disadvantage exists in the limited length of sea-coast, less than twenty miles, and the comparative insignificance of its chief sea-port, Parnahyba, on the Iguarassú branch of the Parnahyba River. This river constitutes the dividing-line between Piauhly and Maranhão, and is the main artery of traffic in the western part of the State, its tributaries draining the entire territory in their descent from the *serras* that mark the eastern and southern boundaries. Cotton and tobacco are exported in considerable quantities, and the cultivation of cereals, sugar, rice, and mandioca receives increasing attention. Valuable medicinal plants, dyewoods, oils, essences, and resins are found in the interior, which produces large quantities of the *carnahuba* fibre, herons' plumes, mangabeira rubber, and other important articles of commerce. Extensive deposits of iron, copperas, alum, potash, and saltpetre are found in various parts of the State, which is also rich in stone quarries of superior quality, and is known to possess the more tempting minerals, gold and silver. All these natural products require the labor of a large population of energetic and active people; the population of Piauhly is scarcely half a million, though the territory throughout which the inhabitants are scattered covers nearly a hundred thousand square miles.

The capital of Piauhly is Therezina, situated on the right bank of the river Parnahyba, opposite the town of Cajazeiras, in Maranhão. It was founded in 1852, and at first received the name of *Chapada do Corisco* [stroke of lightning], from the frequent electrical storms of this locality. The city has several beautiful parks, the principal one being the Praça da Constituição, in the centre of which a handsome marble monument has been placed in honor of Senator Saraiva, by whom the site of the capital was chosen. The city was named for the wife of the second emperor. It is well built, having fifteen broad and regular streets, well shaded and bordered by modern buildings for residence or business purposes. The population is about thirty thousand. The Governor's Palace, a two-story building of attractive architectural design and commodious capacity, is one of the principal public buildings of the city, which has also three churches, a lyceum attended by one hundred

and fifty students, a hospital, an official printing-office, a fine theatre and public market, as well as a post-office and telegraph office. Among the manufacturing industries are a large factory for making cotton and thread, operated by steam, with more than a hundred looms; an iron foundry, employing a large number of workmen; a soap factory; and machines for assorting and pressing cotton. A navigation company controlling five steamers, and insurance companies for maritime security, are among the important enterprises of Therezina. The city is connected by telegraph with the Federal capital.

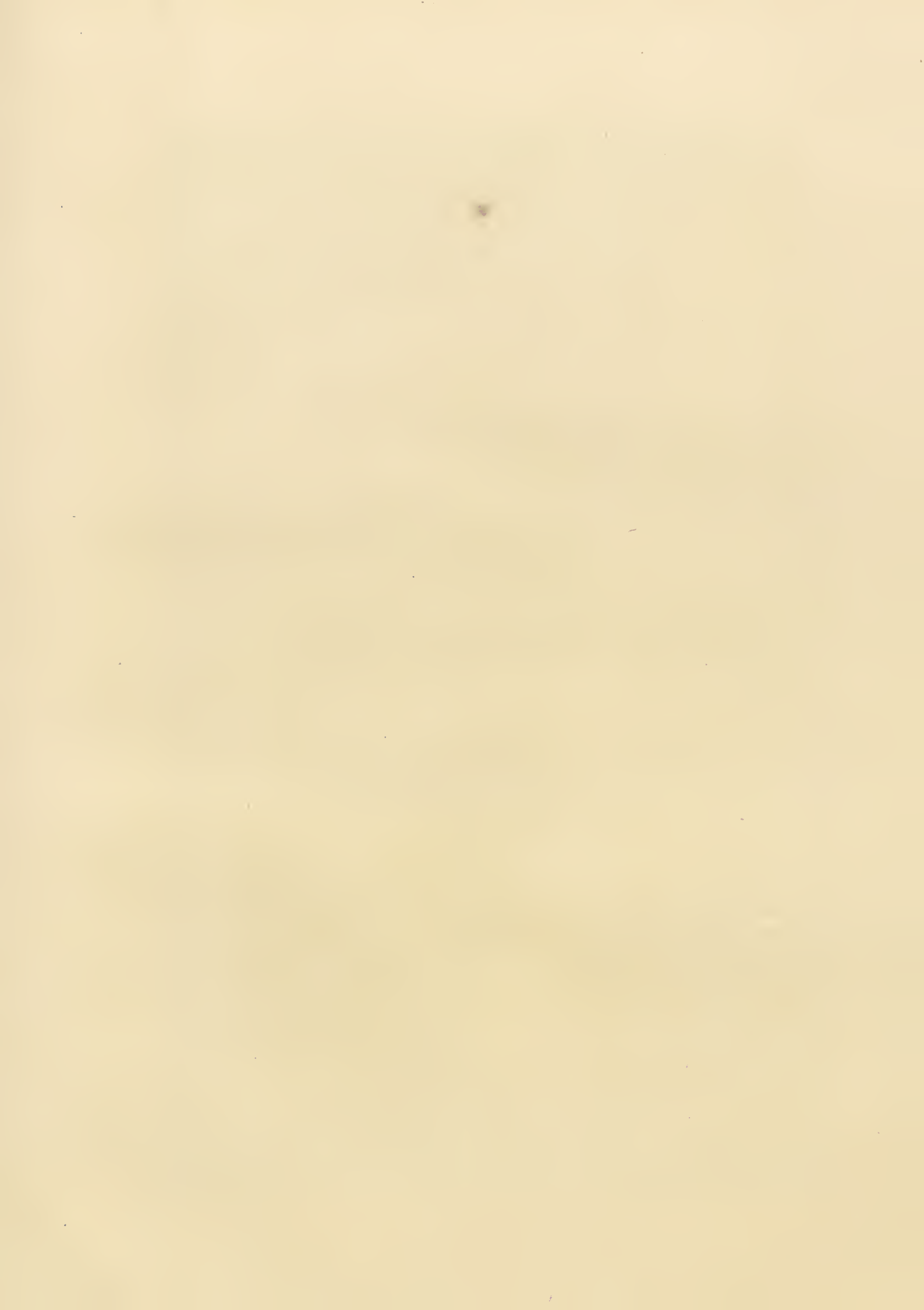
The second city in importance is Parnahyba, about two hundred miles down the river from the capital. It is the commercial port, and the site of the custom-house and its dependencies. Dividing the Parnahyba from the Iguarassú is the island of Ilha Grande, on the northern extremity of which rises the majestic rock Pedra do Sal, a favorite resort because of its excellent climate. Other cities of the State are Amarante, a town of twenty thousand inhabitants, and Oeiras, the ancient capital, in the interior of the State, the birth-place of the distinguished statesman José Furtado.

The governor of Piauhya, Dr. Raymundo Arthur de Vasconcellos, is desirous of improving, in every possible way, the facilities for advancing the trade of the State and developing its latent resources. The State is nearly six hundred miles in length from north to south, having the benefit of a diversified climate, influenced by the sea-breezes on the coast and the altitude of the interior. It is tropical, but many Europeans find it agreeable, and the outlook is most promising for immigration and investment.

The States of Parahyba, Rio Grande do Norte, and Piauhya are all suitable for the cultivation of cotton and cereals, and, in the interior districts, for the raising of live stock. With a larger population, the products of the States would rapidly multiply and the greatest prosperity result, not only to the States themselves, but to the country at large.



OX-TEAM, PIAUHY.





IMMIGRANTS AT HOSPEDARIA, STATE OF SÃO PAULO.

CHAPTER XXIV

AGRICULTURE AND IMMIGRATION



WHATEVER fruits in different climes are found,
That proudly rise or humbly court the ground,—
Whatever blooms in torrid tracts appear,
Whose bright succession decks the varied year,—
Whatever sweets salute the northern sky
With vernal lives that blossom but to die,—
These here disporting own their kindred soil,
Nor ask luxuriance from the planter's toil :
While sea-born gales their gelid wings expand,
To winnow fragrance round the smiling land.

GOLDSMITH : *The Traveller.*

Farm-life in Brazil presents many inviting aspects. The arduous and unremitting labor that is necessary to ensure a satisfactory harvest in less favored zones is unknown to the *fazendeiro* of this "smiling land." On the other hand, there are few Brazilian plantations that have been made to yield the abundance of which their fertility is capable, since the spontaneous growth of everything that is planted tends to foster an indifference to the aid of the artificial means employed in northern countries to "force a churlish soil." The farming implements and machinery used so extensively throughout Europe and North America are unknown in many agricultural districts of Brazil, which are cultivated in the most primitive fashion, though with such happy results that one cannot help speculating upon the enormous possibilities that lie in the introduction of more modern methods. Undoubtedly, the greatest success would follow the systematic development of the soil according to its particular quality and adaptability; the cultivation of a variety of crops on the farms, rather than the exclusive growth of one favorite product; the use of modern machinery and implements for facilitating farm-work and saving valuable time. The greatest progress in agriculture has been made in the southern and central coast States, particularly in Rio Grande do Sul, Santa Catharina, Paraná, São Paulo, Rio, and Minas Geraes. The

last-named, although separated from the sea-coast by a narrow strip of land, has the soil and climate of the coast States, except in the extreme west, where the conditions are similar to those governing the other interior States, Goyaz and Matto Grosso.

Rio Grande do Sul is one of the most prosperous farming States in Brazil. Immigration has been the means of establishing thriving communities of Germans, Italians, Austrians, and people of other nationalities, engaged in the cultivation of the various cereals, fruits, and vegetables that grow in abundance in this territory. Every month of the year has its particular routine of farm labor, as in all agricultural sections: January is the usual time for harvesting wheat, barley, rye, and similar products; for sowing millet, *feijão*, and



A CHEERFUL GROUP AT THE HOSPEDARIA.

sweet potatoes; for planting beets, artichokes, celery, pease, onions, cabbage, cauliflower, spinach, lettuce, turnips, beans, parsley, mustard, and radishes; also for grafting, especially after heavy rains. In February, new ground is ploughed, and the fields from which the harvest of the previous month has been gathered are prepared for the winter and spring crops. During this month, also, the grapes are gathered, and the manufacture of wine begins. In March, the farmer sometimes plants pease, mixed with other products, which, while they are growing, serve as a prop to the pea-vines; the last of the season's grapes are usually gathered in this month. April is the month for harvesting millet, rice, potatoes, and tobacco, and for sowing barley, oats, and pease. In May, wheat is planted, and the

transplanting of young trees is effected, this being also the best month for fertilizing the vineyards. June finds the busy farmer at work with his pruning-knife, also giving close attention to any signs of insects molesting his vines or trees; and in July he cuts the shoots intended for grafting the next month. Annuals and bulbous plants are sown in July. The month of August is particularly a busy time, as it is the season for sowing wheat, rye, barley, and, on the higher lands, millet, *feijão*, etc.; tobacco is sown, to be transplanted in October. Rice, mandioca, and *feijão* may be planted in October, and in November and December, sweet potatoes; December marks the beginning of the harvesting of wheat, barley, rye, etc., and in many localities this is the best month for planting sweet potatoes.



DISSEMBARKING OF IMMIGRANTS FROM STEAMER AT PARÁ.

Although this rule may not be followed exactly, it represents the order of work observed by the majority of southern Brazilian farmers. In the coast States of central Brazil many products of a more tropical nature are cultivated, while some that appear in the above list are not suited to the soil and climate of such States as Bahia, Pernambuco, and Pará.

The facilities for farm labor are not so complete in the more tropical States, where Nature has done most of the work connected with the harvest, and the farmer has been content with the simple task of dropping the seed and gathering the fruit. In the growth of cacao, which thrives at its best in southern Bahia, it is only necessary, as stated elsewhere, to have a special soil. The cotton plantations require little attention, but with even



POLISH COLONIST'S HOUSE IN PARANÁ.

moderate cultivation they yield enormous harvests. Tobacco ripens in three months, and when properly cared for it is a well-paying product, yielding three crops annually. Sugar-cane, so prolific in the northern coast States, receives scarcely any attention, so spontaneous is its growth. But enough has been previously said to give an idea of the riches of the agri-

cultural lands of Brazil. Everything points to great possibilities of expansion and prosperity. The government is desirous of advancing these possibilities by immigration and the encouragement of foreign investment, though, naturally, at the same time, careful not to imperil the highest good of the people or to embarrass an independent and growing nation by too liberal a foreign policy. The climate and soil offer advantages that cannot fail to attract foreign colonies and foreign capital, when once known and appreciated. The facilities for transportation are good, and efforts are constantly being made for their improvement; excellent sea-ports meet the growing needs of a large export trade; prejudices of race and religion do not exist in Brazil to the same extent as in some other countries, and the foreigner is treated with consideration whether his native land be Germany, England, Italy, Russia, France, or North America, all these countries being represented in Brazil. The people are not subject to such disturbed political conditions as exist in many Latin republics, and the questions of taxation and a fluctuating currency are not beyond the possibilities of satisfactory solution. Every successive administration seeks to improve the laws that are designed to benefit the farmer, and to increase the land values of the country. Although the imposition of interstate import and export taxes is regarded by some economists as inimical to the best interests of industrial enterprise, there are many who commend the system, and believe that it does not lessen the opportunities for good investments in this field. The tendency of present legislation is so decidedly in favor of modern reforms, that no law will remain long on the statute books unless proving a national advantage.

For the benefit of foreign trade and the convenience of foreign residents, there are several banks in different cities of Brazil under the ownership and management of foreign companies. The principal English banks are the London and River Plate and the London and Brazilian, with branches in all the large cities; German banks are numerous in Rio and in southern Brazil; there are no American banks in Brazil.

In regard to the healthfulness of the country, enough has been said to dispel the popular error among foreigners, that the climate in general is unfavorable to immigration. As

a matter of fact, the vital statistics prove that even in Rio de Janeiro, which is supposed to be one of the worst fever-stricken cities in Brazil, the average death-rate is only two and four-fifths per cent. of the population, while that of Santos, as well as of other much maligned sea-ports, is still lower. Foreign residents in Brazil do not complain of the climate.

In proof of the earnest desire of the government to add to the agricultural population by encouraging foreign immigration, it is only necessary to follow the efforts made in this direction and to read the record of national expenditures for this purpose. Under the administration of the Department of Industry and Public Works, this branch of government affairs has received special attention through the establishment of an immigration bureau in connection with the Directoria Geral de Industria, of which Dr. Thomaz Cochrane, Secretary of the Presidency, is the director. The immigrant station on the Ilha das Flores, in the harbor of Rio, is a feature of this institution, and throughout the Union numerous similar *hospedarias de imigrantes* are conducted upon the same principle under State control. When the immigrants arrive, they are given board and lodging at the hospedaria until ready to go to their destination, whither they are conveyed at the government's expense. A superintendent takes the names of all new arrivals and the place to which they desire to be sent, answers all questions regarding the country, wages, climate, etc.,

and attends to the comfort of the strangers. An agent of the Inspector of Lands and Colonization, who speaks the language of the immigrants, receives them as they land, extending, in the name of the government, the hospitality of the island, while another official directs them to their temporary lodgings, and explains the rules of the establishment. In Pará the immigrant station is a model of neatness, and the State's inducements offered to foreign settlers are liberal in the extreme. Everything



TYPICAL BLUMENAU COTTAGE.



AMAZON RIVER SCENE.

is done to give the newly arrived colonist an opportunity to establish himself, and even the luxury of tobacco is furnished to him free of cost for the first year, in addition to the necessities of life, which are provided without restriction. Dr. Mendonça, who has charge of this establishment, has succeeded in settling large colonies in various parts of the State from this station. In Pernambuco, Bahia, Juiz de Fóra, São Paulo, and in all the southern States these stations are supported by the government, which has spent many millions of dollars in this enterprise. In the States of northern Brazil the more successful colonies have been those brought from southern Europe, the natives of colder climates finding the equatorial region more enervating than southern Brazil, to which they have in consequence given the preference. On the other hand, twelve thousand persons removed to Pará from other parts of Brazil in 1898. The present tendency of Brazilian immigration is from southern Europe to northern Brazil, and from northern Europe to southern Brazil. The Germans and the Italians constitute the largest foreign population. The population of the State of Paraná numbers about a hundred thousand foreign settlers, including fifty thousand Poles, principally settled in the valley of the Iguassú in the communities of São Matheos and Rio Claro, though other Polish colonies of growing importance have been established at Thomaz Coelho, Lamenha Lins, and Abranches, near Curytiba; at Lucena and Antonio Olintho, near the Rio Negro, and at Prudentopolis, on the Guarapuava road; numerically, the Polish colonies are the most important in this State and, next, the Italian colonies, with a population of twenty-five thousand, established near Curytiba; the Germans are comparatively few in Paraná, about ten thousand, principally engaged in mercantile business; and of the English, Russian, French, and other nationalities besides those previously named, the number is limited, though additions to the English colonies have been made since the improved railway facilities of the State and the promising outlook of the yerba-maté and other industries. Santa Catharina has the most prosperous German colony in

Brazil, at Blumenau, which was named in honor of the founder, who established it in the year 1851; its present population is fifty thousand, and its exports amount to large sums annually, the production of tobacco and cigars being one of the important industries, and supplying principally the markets of Hamburg and Bremen; about ten million cigars are manufactured yearly, and five hundred tons of butter are exported, besides fruits, hams, cheese, etc.



FIRST GLIMPSE OF THEIR ADOPTED LAND.

The first foreign colony in Brazil, founded at Nova Friburgo by the king, in 1819, was composed of Swiss farmers, who were reinforced by the arrival of a number of German immigrants in 1824; and the same year the German colony of São Leopoldo, in Rio Grande do Sul, was founded, which is now a large and prosperous community of about ten thousand inhabitants, with churches, schools, and manufacturing interests. Several thousand Italian, Belgian, and French immigrants arrived during the same year and settled the colonies of Santo Amaro, in São Paulo, and Rio Negro, in Paraná. São Paulo was rapidly colonized, and as early as 1860 numbered forty-five German settlements. Almost simultaneously with the founding of the Blumenau colony, and in the same State, the Duke de Joinville, who had married Princess Dona Francisca, the sister of the second emperor, settled a colony on a tract of land set aside for this purpose out of the princess's marriage *dot*. From the year 1873, immigration increased annually, the government offering every encouragement, especially in São Paulo, where immigrant stations were established, after the abolition of slavery, for the accommodation of foreign colonists, with capacity to board and lodge four thousand persons for a week. It was at this time that the hospedarias of the Ilha das Flores and other immigration head-quarters were established. In the year 1891, nearly a quarter of a million European colonists landed in the three ports of Rio, Santos, and Florianopolis, of which the greater number were Italians; in 1893, the Italians in Brazil numbered more than half a million. The Germans constitute the chief foreign population of southern Brazil. This source of immigration was checked for a time by the promulgation of the Von der Heydt law, which prohibited Prussian emigration to Brazil, though its repeal in 1896 resulted in a revival of the exodus. Of the five hundred thousand, or more, Germans now living in Brazil, less than five hundred owe allegiance to Germany, nearly all having become Brazilian citizens, devoted to their adopted country. Immigration during the present century will no doubt be greatly stimulated by the progressive policy of a government that is seeking not only to fill its territory with an energetic and enterprising foreign population, but also so to frame its laws and administer its economic affairs as to attract to its shores the most desirable class of citizens, both as immigrants and investors. There is plenty of room for colonization purposes. Though, as yet, few North American colonies have settled



PUBLIC BUILDING IN BLUMENAU.

here, except those of Santarem, in Pará, and Santa Barbara, in São Paulo, which were formed just after the war of the Confederacy, the interests of immigration from this source are receiving every attention by the Brazilian Consul-General to the United States, Senhor Fontoura Xavier, while American interests in Brazil are assured of the very best protection from the United States Consul-General to Brazil, Mr. Eugene Seeger. With a population as thickly settled as that of Portugal, Brazil could accommodate five hundred million people, and with the same population to the square mile as Belgium, there would be capacity for more than a billion. The valley of the Amazon alone, according to Agassiz, could comfortably shelter three hundred millions. There is no immediate danger, therefore, of crowding



THE LATEST ARRIVALS FROM OVER THE SEA.

Brazil, and there is every reason why the country should have the benefit of a vast population in the process of developing her boundless resources and solving other problems of a great nation's advancement. There are special evidences of her willingness to encourage the enterprises that benefit a rural population. In the year 1900, the expenditure of the Department of Agriculture of the State of São Paulo exceeded a million dollars gold; the State of Minas Geraes has for some time given special attention to favorable measures of taxation; steps have been taken in Pernambuco for the founding of a new agricultural bank; in a recent message, the president of Rio Grande do Sul urged the introduction of a variety of agricultural products to which the climate and soil are especially suitable, at the

same time calling attention to the excellent results that have followed the liberal distribution of plants and seeds furnished by the government, and referring, in terms of satisfaction, to the great progress made in viticulture. The idea prevails among foreigners that only a few tropical commodities are grown in Brazil, but an examination of the shipping lists proves that such is not the case. Although the full possibilities of the country have not been developed, owing to the vast extent of territory in proportion to the limited population, yet the principal products of both the tropical and the temperate zone are cultivated, and, as the importance of raising a diversity of crops is more and more realized, the tendency is clearly improving in the right direction.

Apiculture is among the new enterprises of southern Brazil, and it is said that the output of honey since the inauguration of this industry has proved eminently satisfactory. Poultry farms have been established on a large scale in some sections, this trade offering



PANORAMA OF ALEMQUER, ON THE AMAZON RIVER.

exceptional opportunities for investment, as the English market furnishes an unlimited demand. A distinct advantage to the Brazilian farmer engaging in this enterprise is that during the months when the shipments are largest the prices in the European markets are highest, the difference in the seasons accounting for this feature of the trade. In Amazonas the government is seeking to encourage the cultivation of many products that should be grown there instead of imported from other States. Minas Geraes is constantly branching out in new fields, and, as an illustration of the success attending this effort, it is stated that the exportation of potatoes last year was more than a million kilos, and the shipment of dairy produce exceeded all previous records.

It is not to be inferred, from a statement of the superior natural advantages of Brazil, that unlimited wealth is to be secured by any and every foreigner who may seek his fortune there; the usual difficulties that hamper the progress of a stranger, especially if

unacquainted with the language and customs of the country, will be found no less trying in Brazil than in other foreign countries; but the enterprising spirit that is able to surmount obstacles of minor importance in a determination to accomplish the best possible results will not be deterred from investigating opportunities, whether with a view to commercial or agricultural investment. As political affairs always bear a close relation to the conditions surrounding foreign immigration, or the investment of foreign capital, it is important to know that the present government favors the adoption of every measure that will promote the best foreign relations. Within a short period the national finances have been so greatly improved that, instead of the deficit which for years appeared in the annual budget, the last returns show a substantial surplus of national receipts over national expenditure, most creditable to the administration, tending to increase confidence both at home and abroad, attracting the attention of capitalists and offering inducements to immigration.

The future prospects of the republic depend largely upon the ability to secure immigration of such a character that the results will justify the efforts made in this direction. The prime necessity of all the Brazilian States is a greater population to work their mines, cut down their impenetrable forests, cultivate their fertile lands, and increase the amount and variety of their manufactures. Whatever tends to invite capital and labor and thus to increase the means of developing any territory of Brazil is to be regarded with favor; for growth and prosperity can only come through the energetic work of many hands, united in ambitious and hopeful endeavor. But there is every indication that a few years will witness vast improvement in the facilities for developing this fruitful land.



STEAMER LANDING IMMIGRANTS IN SANTOS HARBOR.

CHAPTER XXV

CEARÁ



VENDOR OF CEBOLLAS.

RENOWNED as the great national health resort for consumptives, Ceará enjoys also the distinction of having developed in her people a character for energy and industry that is unsurpassed in northern Brazil. The *Cearenses*, as the natives of this State are called, have made much greater progress than some of their neighbors who have had the advantage of more favorable conditions. This quality has shown itself when they have made their home in other States, as was the case when Ceará was visited by a very dry season in 1879, and a great number emigrated to Pará and Amazonas, where their energy was felt in many improvements that followed their arrival: to their industry and intelligence was largely due the development of the great rubber interests of these States; they were the first to open up to traffic the Purús, Acre, Javary, and other rivers of the richest rubber regions.

Financially and industrially, Ceará is a prosperous State, its budget always showing a good surplus, and its sources of revenue constantly increasing. As the real home of the *Maniçoba* rubber-tree, which is next in value to the Pará rubber-tree, a future of unfailing prosperity is assured to the commercial interests of the State. Hundreds of thousands of these trees have been planted in various districts, and will be fit for tapping within two or three years. The extraction of this product offers fewer difficulties than are encountered in collecting Pará rubber, as it grows best on hill-sides, which are much more healthful and



STREAMLET IN CEARÁ.

easier of access than the swampy forests of the *Hevea brasiliensis*. Situated within the tenth degree of latitude south of the equator, the climate, though tropical, is generally salubrious, and the even temperature, dry atmosphere of the interior, and refreshing and invigorating nights contribute to make it an ideal resort for those who suffer from diseases of the respiratory organs. The area of Ceará is about five thousand square leagues, and the length of coast-line one hundred and twenty leagues. On the eastern boundary the State adjoins Rio Grande do Norte and

Parahyba; on the south it is bordered by Pernambuco; the western limit is marked by a chain of *serras* separating it from Piauhý. Three natural divisions of the State influence its climate and productions,—the coast land, the slopes of the *serras*, and the interior plateaus. The coast region, extending from ten to fifteen miles inland, is subject to moist sea-breezes, and the soil is particularly adapted to the cultivation of cotton, the fibre of which here possesses superior silky qualities, with singular flexibility and resistance. The introduction of the product dates from colonial days, when it was grown exclusively for domestic purposes, though at present it forms an important article of export, and thriving plantations extend along the whole course of the principal river, the Jaguaribe, and its tributaries. This part of the State is also suited to the cultivation of sugar-cane, which, in the valley of Aracape, between the capital and Baturité, reaches the extraordinary height of from twenty to thirty feet, measuring three inches in diameter; in some districts sugar plantations last ten years or more without being replanted, and the industry is still practically undeveloped, though a recent revival of interest in this direction has resulted in the adoption of measures for increasing the output of the commodity on some of the more important plantations. Corn and manioc, or mandioca, thrive in various kinds of soil, especially the former, which is planted with good results in the clayey covering of the rocks as well as in the soft sand, and produces enormous crops, growing most abundantly in the Serra Grande. It is said that in some years the harvests of corn are so much greater than the facilities for moving the crop, that immense quantities are abandoned to animals. Mandioca, which derives its best qualities from the conditions of soft, porous, and somewhat deep soils, humid and alkaline, warmed by the strongest rays of a tropical sun, is produced in the best qualities in Ceará. In the neighborhood of lagoons and marshes rice

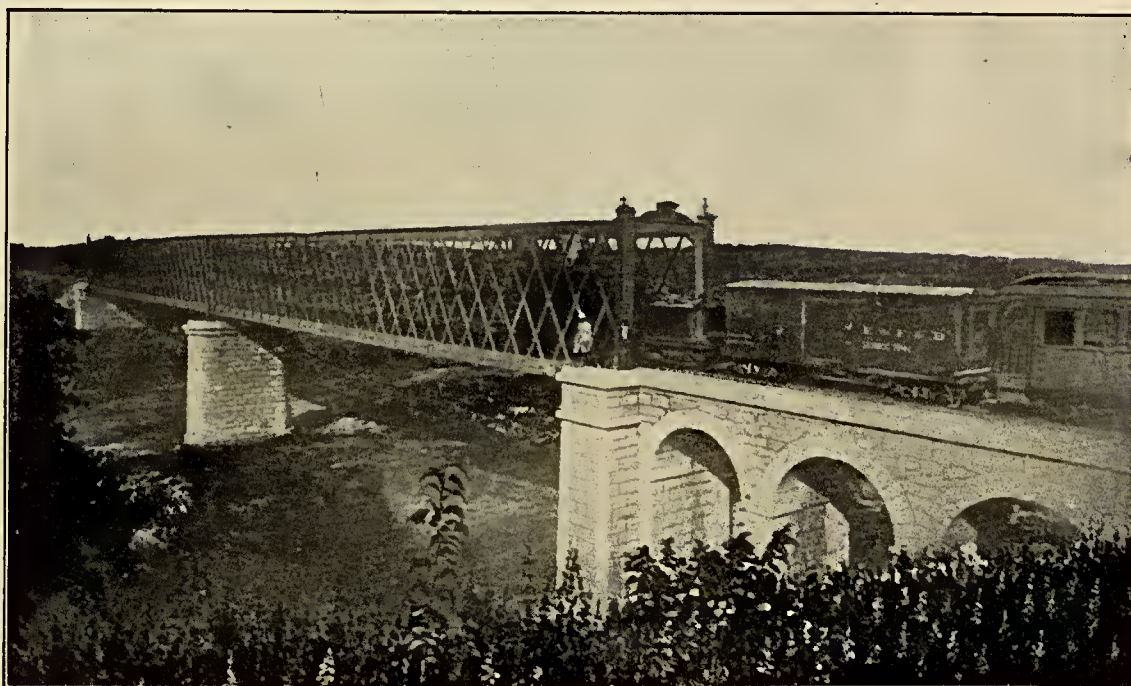
grows abundantly. The soil and climate of the *serras* are suited admirably to the needs of the coffee-plant, and tobacco grows in this State along the sandy borders of rivers where the land is just washed by the overflow; soil already exhausted by the cultivation of sugarcane will produce good tobacco. According to the most reliable authorities, the best tobacco is raised from seeds grown in the nursery, the young tree being transplanted to an appropriate soil after a month or two, and placed at intervals of about three feet, so that an acre of land may contain as many as from three to four thousand plants. Calculating that each plant will produce ten leaves, the crop would amount to about eight hundred pounds per acre, which, at a fair market price, certainly seems to warrant the extensive cultivation of the product. In the opinion of Dr. José Freire Bezerril Fontenelle, who has given the most careful study to the industrial possibilities of Ceará, the culture of tobacco offers great opportunities for very profitable development. The vegetation on the *serras* and extended interior table-lands is abundant, including the most valuable dyewoods, medicinal plants, woods for ornamental purposes, fibrous, resinous, oleaginous, and other varieties, constituting an important source of revenue. The carnahúba grows here in abundance, the extraction of carnahúba wax being one of the most prosperous industries.

The chief wealth of the interior districts of Ceará is derived from the cattle trade, which thrives wonderfully under the influences of a salubrious climate, an even temperature, and freedom from pestilential marshes. From the earliest days, this industry has been successfully engaged in, which no doubt accounts for the peculiar fact that the inland plateaus were settled long before the coast territory. The cattle are allowed to run absolutely at large, with scarcely any attention whatever; yet, in spite of this careless method, the trade flourishes. With improved conditions, the quality and price of Ceará cattle and hides would undoubtedly become more satisfactory. Sheep and goats thrive in this State, the latter especially bringing a high price in the market. The extent of the mineral wealth is unknown, but it is unquestionably great. The commerce of Ceará was restricted, in consequence of limited transportation facilities, until, in 1866, the establishment of direct lines of steamers between Fortaleza, the capital, and Liverpool,



RAILROAD BRIDGE OF ACARAHÚ, CEARÁ.

resulted in an immediate growth of its export and import trade. The Commercial Association of Ceará is a wide-awake and progressive organization, desirous of extending the foreign relations of the State by every possible means. Manufacturing interests are not neglected, there being several iron foundries, brick and tile works, wineries, and cotton-mills. Lacemaking is an important industry. The largest cotton factory of the State is that of Fortaleza, established in 1884, with a capital stock of about four hundred contos [one hundred thousand dollars gold], through the enterprise of the present honored State president, Dr. Antonio Pinto Nogueira Accioly, assisted by Dr. Antonio Pompeu de Souza Brazil and Dr. Thomaz Pompeu de Souza Brazil. During the first year, the factory produced two hundred thousand yards; now, the annual production is more than two million yards.

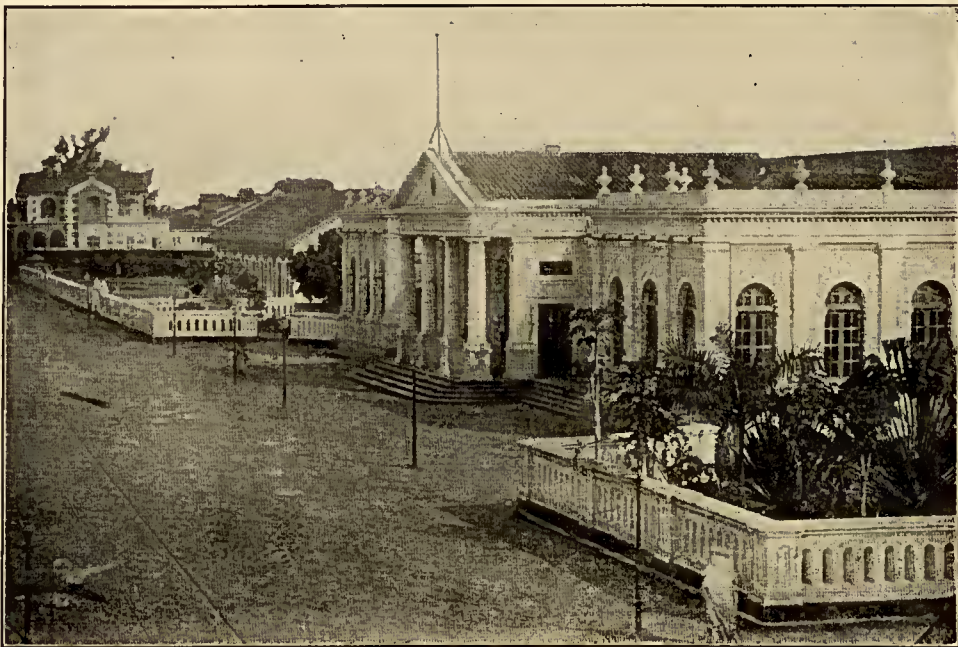


RAILROAD BRIDGE OF CHORÓ, CEARÁ.

Besides this cotton factory, there are three others of prominence, one of which was founded by Hollanda, Gurjão & Co., in 1889, with a capital of two hundred and fifty contos; another, in Baturité, belongs to a company with a capital of three hundred and fifty contos, and the third, devoted to the manufacture of hosiery, employs a capital of one hundred contos.

Education receives careful attention, and every town of importance is provided with free public reading-rooms and libraries, usually under the direction of literary societies. At Fortaleza, which, like other capitals of Brazil, is generally known by the name of the State, being called familiarly Ceará, the public library contains nearly ten thousand volumes. The chief scientific society of the State is the *Instituto Historico do Ceará*, which publishes a magazine devoted to scientific knowledge. The State maintains a normal school and four

Latin schools, a lyceum, reorganized since the establishment of the republic in accordance with the plan of instruction followed by the *Gymnasio Nacional* of the Federal capital, and more than three hundred primary and secondary schools. The census of 1890 gives to the State of Ceará a population of eight hundred thousand inhabitants. The largest city is Fortaleza, the capital, with a population of fifty thousand. It is built in regular blocks, though it is not so well paved as many other cities of the same population. Its water-supply and drainage facilities need improvement, and the ever-recurring problem of building a satisfactory breakwater is of the first importance. The city is connected by railway with the interior towns of Baturité and Quixadá; and the public works in the nature of viaducts, bridges, etc., constructed on the line of this, as well as other railroads, are most creditable



RAILROAD DEPOT, CEARÁ.

to the business enterprise of the government. The public buildings of the capital are attractive and commodious, solidly built, and centrally located. The Governor's Palace is constructed with a view to the needs of a tropical climate, with airy *salas* and an attractive *patio* surrounded by broad, cool verandas. The charity hospital, or *Casa da Misericórdia*, inaugurated, in 1862, by Senator Nunes Gonçalves, who was at that time the president of the province, is a handsome building, with capacity for five hundred patients. It has five infirmaries, three of which are for men and two for women patients. There is also an insane asylum, under State protection, as well as an asylum for mendicants. The college buildings are well equipped with necessary appurtenances, and the churches of the city present a creditable appearance. A street-car system, with trackage covering fifteen miles, is one of the city's flourishing enterprises; telegraph communication connects all the chief

towns of the State with the capital, and, through it, with every State of the Union; and a complete telephone system facilitates business throughout the city. Other important towns of the State are Baturité, the centre of a rich and salubrious region; Aracaty, on the eastern bank of the Jaguaribe River, a prosperous little city of thirty thousand inhabitants; Crato, Granja, Maranguape, Quixeramobim, and Sobral; Camocim, an excellent seaport, connected with Sobral by railway; and a number of smaller towns are rapidly growing in importance and population. Dr. Antonio Pinto Nogueira Accioly is the president of the State, a gentleman of distinguished ability; the vice-president is Dr. Ernesto Deocleciano de Albuquerque, one of the best known and most highly esteemed statesmen of Ceará. Dr. Thomaz Pompeu de Souza Brazil is the president of the chief educational institution of the State, the Academia Cearense, which owes to his intellectual efforts a great measure of its success. The little town of Mecejana, about ten miles from the State capital, is especially honored as having been the birthplace of the great Brazilian dramatist and romancist, José de Alencar.

Politically, Ceará has always maintained an attitude of fearless independence. In 1824, republican principles triumphed for a brief moment, though crushed by the superior force of the imperial government; in 1888, Ceará set the example to all Brazil by freeing her slaves. To-day, as in former times, this State is among the leaders of political enterprise and progress.



DAM OF QUIXADÁ, CEARÁ.

CHAPTER XXVI

MARANHÃO



MARANHÃO has a history that reveals in bright colors the brave spirit and unwavering patriotism of a people who have given to Brazil some of its most distinguished leaders, and to whom is due the successful issue of many of its severest struggles against invasion and oppression in the early days of its history. The territory of Maranhão was originally bestowed on the great Portuguese historian and statesman, João de Barros, in 1534; but two expeditions sent out by him to colonize the capitania were shipwrecked, and the attempt was abandoned. The first successful effort to establish a settlement was made by the French under the direction of La Ravardière, in 1612, on the island of São Luiz, where the present State capital is situated, named São Luiz in honor of King Louis XIII. of France, though it has always been more commonly known as Maranhão. The French were expelled a few years later by the intrepid Brazilian warrior, Jeronymo de Albuquerque Maranhão, a nephew of Duarte Coelho, of Pernambuco. In recognition of his services, the brave soldier was appointed *capitão-mór* by the Portuguese governor-general Alexandre de Moura, under whose administration the division of the Brazilian government into the two States of Maranhão and Brazil was made in 1624, during the union of the Spanish and Portuguese crowns. This division was still in effect, as stated elsewhere, when the kingdoms were separated, though the State of Brazil was made a vice-royalty the same year, 1640, and in 1775 the two were united under the name of Brazil during the administration of Marquis de Lavradio. The governor-general of the State of Maranhão, which comprised the capitanias of Ceará, Piauhy, Pará, and other north Brazilian provinces, had removed his residence, many years before, to Pará, leaving the *capitão-mór* to govern in Maranhão, until, in 1754, subordinate governors were appointed under a *capitão general*, and the subsequent separation of the States, as above mentioned, was followed by the division of the whole country into provinces, a system which remained in force throughout the imperial régime. During the Dutch invasion, Maranhão was the scene of many heroic conflicts, one of her greatest leaders in this war being the brave captain Antonio Teixeira de Mello, whose memory is still honored in the annals of Maranhão.

The social and industrial progress of the State has been as creditable as the record of its political advancement. The climate is healthful, except in some of the low lands, where intermittent fevers are prevalent during the rainy season. The soil is fertile and yields profitable harvests of cotton, sugar-cane, tobacco, coffee, and cereals. Cattle-raising flourishes on the plateaus of the interior. The State is mountainous in the southern part, gradually sloping northward, and forming extensive plains along the sea-coast. Several large rivers drain the territory. The eastern boundary is defined by the Parnahyba, which takes its rise in the Tabatinga Mountains at the junction of the four States of Goyaz, Bahia, Piauhy, and



MUNICIPAL PALACE, MARANHÃO.

Maranhão; the western border is marked partly by the Tocantins and partly by the Gurupy. In the interior of the State the chief rivers are the Mearim, navigable in winter for two hundred miles, with several important tributaries; the Itapicurú, navigable for five hundred miles; the Moñim, Tury-assú, Urú, and Cururupú. The most populous sections of the State are along the coast and in the vicinity of the navigable rivers, the reason being apparent in the greater facilities provided in these districts for the transportation of products. The population of Maranhão is about half a million, the capital city of São Luiz having forty thousand inhabitants. The city is located on the island of São Luiz, and is one of the most attractive in northern Brazil. It has been called "a city of little palaces," from the modest size but solid

structure of its edifices, which are remarkable rather for their substantial appearance than for any architectural magnificence. The most ambitious attempt at architectural grandeur is seen in an unfinished palace known as the *Palacio de Lagrimas* [Palace of Tears], from the sad incidents connected with its history. Tradition says that

the foundation was laid hundreds of years ago; and its story has been handed down for generations to the residents of the city. It is related that the land on which the crumbling pile of masonry now stands was originally the property of a widow and her beautiful daughter, though mortgaged to the chief Shylock of the place, who answered the mother's agonizing appeal for leniency by naming a price which honor forbade her to consider, and



CASA DA PRAÇA, MARANHÃO.



LARGO DO CARMO, MARANHÃO.

to which she replied with a bitter curse upon the wicked usurer. As a result, she was forced to give up her home, and, in consequence, suffered untold privations, which unbalanced her mind and led to her daughter's suicide. The old miser began at once to build the stately palace which was to replace the widow's cherished home; but fatality followed fatality, until, in sheer superstition, the work was abandoned, the owner himself succumbing to mortal illness and dying in terrible agony. At various subsequent periods, the attempt to build the palace has been renewed, but with such disastrous results that it has never reached completion, and now there is not even to be found a purchaser for the land, nor any one who is willing to take the slightest responsibility touching the final disposition of



COTTON-MILLS, MARANHÃO.

the property, which remains a gruesome warning to all misers and immoral usurers. The city is beautified by broad, shaded streets and many praças, of which the handsomest is that of Carmo, the site of the celebrated church and convent of Nossa Senhora do Carmo, superior in size to the church of Carmo in Rio de Janeiro, honored as the last resting-place of the distinguished journalist, João Francisco Lisboa, who, as the editor of the *Jornal de Timon*, won national fame among the political writers of his time. The Praça do Palacio, in which are situated the palace of the president, the bishop's palace, the municipal buildings, and other legislative offices, overlooks the old fort of São Luiz, better known as the *baluarte*, or great bastion, divided into two parts, named respectively São Cosme and São Damião.

In the Praça dos Remédios stands a handsome monument, erected to the memory of one of Maranhão's most illustrious sons, the great lyric poet of Brazil, Antonio Gonçalves Dias. It is a marble column representing the palm-tree, which the poet loved so well, the capital of the column carrying out the design in a tuft of palm-leaves wrought in the sculptor's best art; the height of the monument is about



LARGO DOS REMEDIOS, MARANHÃO.

seventy-five feet. On the four sides of the pedestal are medallions of the famous Maranhenses, João Lisboa, Sotero dos Reis, Gomes de Souza, and Odorico Mendes. Near the Praia da Trindade stands the cathedral, one of the largest in Brazil, in the crypt of which lie buried all the past bishops of Maranhão and many of the presidents; the convent of Santo Antonio, situated near the cathedral, is famous as having been the scene of the



GAZOMETRO, MARANHÃO.

inspired offices of many noted friars, and is honored as the last resting-place of the renowned botanist Dr. Corrêa de Lacerda. Near the Largo Fonte das Pedras the gas company has its chief establishment, the *Gazometro*, constituting one of the most conspicuous evidences of modern enterprise in the capital. The educational and charitable institutions are numerous, among the most important being the Escola Popular Onze de Agosto, the Lyceu Maranhense, Casa da Misericórdia, Asylo de Meninas Desvalidas [orphans' asylum], Hospital Beneficencia Portuguesa, and numerous seminaries. The manufacturing interests of the capital are various, the most important being the cotton-mill of Santa Izabel, organized by Senhore Carlos Ferreira Coelho, Crispim Alves dos Santos, Apolinario Jansen Ferreira, and Candido José Ribeiro, the present director of the enterprise being Senhor Alves dos Santos. The factory has five hundred looms, and employment is furnished for a thousand operatives.

The second city of the State in importance is Caxias, the birthplace of Gonçalves Dias, a prosperous city of thirty thousand inhabitants. Situated on the banks of the Itapicurú River, and commanding a large share of the commerce of the interior, especially in cotton, tropical plants, and cattle, Alcantara, a city of twenty thousand inhabitants, lies on the northwestern shore of the bay of São José, which separates the island of São Luiz from the mainland. It is a sea-port, and is especially famous for the exportation of fine cocoanuts.

Monção, on the river Pindaré, is a thriving market for the cattle brought in from the interior plateaus, and even from the valley of the Tocantins. Itapicurú-mirim is also a growing cattle-market. The port of Bareirinhas, in the eastern part of the State, is gaining importance through the extensive manufacture of brandies. Vianna is a rich agricultural centre.

The president of Maranhão is Dr. João Gualberto Torreão da Costa, under whose judicious administration the affairs of the State have progressed with gratifying success.



PIER AT MARANHÃO.



PRAÇA VISCONDE DE RIO-BRANCO, PARÁ.

CHAPTER XXVII

PARÁ



DR. AUGUSTO MONTENEGRO,
GOVERNOR OF PARÁ.

LITTLE did the early discoverers of Brazil realize the full significance or appropriateness of bestowing the name of one of her forest products upon a country destined to eclipse all competitors in the wealth derived from her trees. No other country named in honor of its natural resources has made its name so conspicuously known through the abundance of Nature's gifts. No language could be deemed extravagant in extolling the splendor of the Brazilian forest; the magnificent woods, venerable trees, saplings, vines, parasites, orchids, and ferns—from the tiny spire of grass to the giant branching monarch—are here grouped, massed, and interwoven in a bewildering picture of beauty that is almost without parallel! The latest claim to

universal attention was established a few years ago when the increasing commercial value of Pará rubber made this region of the vast Brazilian territory a great emporium of trade, sought by eager purchasers from all parts of the world. The State of Pará was among the last to receive the attention of the Portuguese government, which permitted the French to establish settlements in all the northern ports until about the year 1615, when Alexandre de Moura was sent to govern this territory. He drove out the French from Maranhão, at the same time sending Castello Branco as commander-in-chief of the government forces to Pará, where he was successful in gaining possession of the forts, and soon afterward laid the foundation of the present capital city of the State, which is familiarly called Belém, or Pará, though the correct title is Santa Maria de Nazareth de Belém do Grão Pará, in honor of the patron saint, Our Lady of Nazareth. Following Castello Branco, the most notable of the early governors was Pedro Teixeira, to whom belongs the great honor of having extended the limits of Portuguese possessions in Brazil to the river Napo, one of the remote tributaries of the Amazon, and also the distinction of giving to science the first geographical map



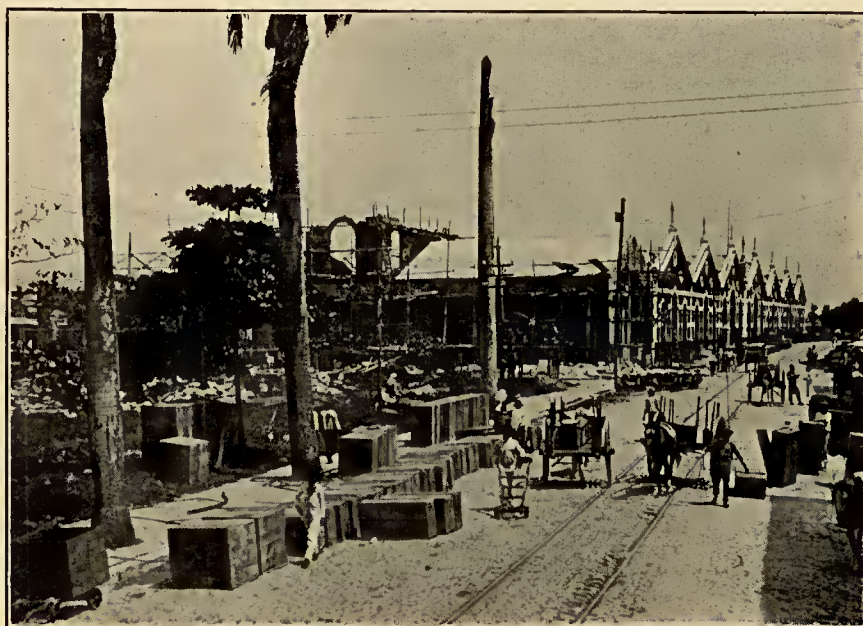
ESTRADA DE NAZARETH, PARÁ.

of the Amazon region, with scientific notes of the great river. The voyage was begun in 1637, lasting two years, and after the return of the expedition Teixeira took charge of the government, in 1640. Expeditions up the Amazon during the eighteenth century brought many scientific celebrities to Pará, whose writings are filled with enthusiastic praise of this wonderful country. La Condamine, who made the voyage in 1741, returned to his native land and wrote important scientific works concerning this region, giving the first information to European countries regarding its most important natural products, including rubber. Gaspar de Lima discovered quinine in the country about this time, and gold was found in the Tapajós River; João de Azevedo explored the Tapajós River from Matto Grosso, thus establishing communication between the two States. A few years later, under the administration of Governor Mendonça Furtado, who was a brother of the Marquis de Pombal, a system of military colonization was introduced, and the military settlements Araguaya and Araguay were established. The handsome palace of the governor, among the finest public buildings in Brazil, was constructed from the design of the celebrated architect, Lande; and the first industrial establishments of the State were founded. As early as 1760, arrangements were completed for constructing the navy-yard, in which, during recent years, have been built some of Brazil's best men-of-war and gun-boats, among others the gun-boat *Manãos*, which is doing good service. The first census was taken in 1800, showing a population of eighty thousand inhabitants, of which twelve thousand belonged to the capital city; the present population of the State is six hundred thousand, and the capital has more than one hundred thousand inhabitants. The inauguration of steam navigation on the Amazon River in 1852 and the opening of the Amazon to ships of all nations in 1867 were powerful influences in the development of the State. When the republic was formally proclaimed in 1889, Pará was among the first to accept the situation; a governmental junta, composed of Dr. Justo Chermont, Colonel Bento Fernandes, and Commander Nascimento, was proclaimed, and Pará was declared a Federal State. Dr. Justo Chermont was appointed governor in December, 1889, remaining in office until January, 1891, when he was appointed Minister of Foreign Affairs in the cabinet of President Deodoro da Fonseca. Senator Justo Chermont is one of the principal political leaders of Pará, and has been honored with many high official positions both in the State and the national governments. The family of Chermont is one of the best known in

Brazil, and all the brothers have been prominently identified with the political and commercial progress of their native State, Pará. Dr. Pedro Chermont is a Federal Deputy and a very successful lawyer; Col. Theodosio Chermont, a graduate of Cornell University, New York, is at the head of important commercial enterprises, and has a law practice that extends to various foreign countries; Dr. Antonio Chermont, an editor and journalist of ability, wields an important influence through his newspaper, which is one of the most popular in the State.

The new Constitution of the State was promulgated June 23, 1891, and the following day Dr. Lauro Sodré was elected governor. Dr. Sodré is especially esteemed as one of the foremost promoters of education in the State, to whose energy are largely due the splendid educational institutions of which Pará is deservedly proud; the Lauro Sodré Institute is only one of many excellent schools founded during his official term. As president of a committee for increasing immigration, Dr. Sodré was also identified with the important progress which has been made recently in this direction. In February, 1897, Dr. Lauro Sodré was succeeded in the office of governor of the State by Dr. José Paes de Carvalho, under whose administration both foreign trade relations and the internal development were constantly advanced. One of his most important measures was the placing of the State budget on a gold basis, whilst formerly it had been computed in currency. He was also most assiduous in his efforts to promote immigration and to encourage the agricultural development of the State. Socially as well as politically Dr. Carvalho enjoys a high place among his countrymen; he is a polished and courteous gentleman, of distinguished mental gifts and superior conversational ability, and is greatly admired not only among his own people, but in foreign countries; he is an accomplished linguist, speaking English, French, German, and Spanish with equal facility.

The present governor of Pará is Dr. Augusto Montenegro, one of the leading statesmen of Brazil, an orator of convincing power and a logician of unfailing resource. He is progressive in his ideas, and is desirous of advancing the best interests of his State by a judicious and careful administration of its government. Dr. Montenegro entered upon his present



THE CUSTOM-HOUSE, PARÁ.

official duties at the beginning of the new century, an auspicious opportunity for the inauguration of an era of great prosperity such as Pará is certain to enjoy, not only during the present government, but through every year of the century upon which it enters with so much promise. Dr. Montenegro has been a prominent figure in political life from the first days of his public career, and, as he is still a young man, the future offers particularly brilliant prospects for the realization of his highest ambitions. No other arena of activity presents better advantages for the fulfilment of high aims and the reward of earnest endeavor than are to be found by the youth of Pará in their native State, which has already given to Brazil many of her great scientists, statesmen, orators, and journalists.



ESTRADA SÃO JERONYMO, PARÁ.

Situated in the heart of a rich territory, watered by that great inland sea, the Amazon, and nurtured under the sunniest of skies, Pará must inevitably grow and flourish, especially under the influence of the twentieth-century enterprise which will be engaged in its development. The State is the third largest of Brazil, being exceeded in extent only by Amazonas and Matto Grosso; it covers more than a million square kilometres, or a territory sufficient to accommodate more than half the population of Europe. By the recent settlement of the Guiana boundary question, the area of the State has been greatly increased. It is bounded on the north by the Atlantic Ocean, being separated from the Guianas by the Oyapoc River,

the Serra do Tumuc-Humac, and the Serra do Acarahy; on the east by the States of Maranhão and Goyaz; on the south by Matto Grosso, and on the west by Amazonas. In the south-eastern part of the State are the highlands belonging to the great central table-land of Brazil; here the climate is temperate, while in the low and marshy lands there is great heat and humidity. According to Humboldt, the climate is "more equable than that of any other observed part of the New World." The temperature varies but few degrees



FOYER OF LA PAZ THEATRE, PARÁ.

from 25° centigrade; the trade-winds and the rains cool the atmosphere, making the nights very pleasant all the year round.

The State is watered by innumerable rivers and small streams [*igarapés*] that find an outlet in the great Amazon. One of the most important of these is the Trombetas, which rises in the Serra do Acarahy, in Guiana, and enters the Amazon near the western boundary of the State, at a place called Obydos, a flourishing port and the centre of a rich agricultural section; the Trombetas is navigable for a hundred and fifty miles, and has several tributaries, of which the most important are the Jamundá, marking part of the boundary-line



BOSQUE MUNICIPAL, PARÁ.

between the States of Pará and Amazonas, and the Cuminan, which comes from the highlands of Brazilian Guiana and dashes down over the highest cataracts found in this region. The rivers Tapajós, Xingú, and Tocantins, which flow into the Amazon from the south, water the entire southern portion of the State, as well as Goyaz and Matto Grosso, where they take their rise. All of them are obstructed by rapids in the higher courses, though navigable at intervals almost throughout their whole extent. The Tocantins, with a length of sixteen hundred miles, is the most important of the three as a highway for traffic; it is fringed with forests of castanha-trees, and the

cacao and rubber industries are extensively carried on in this region. In the upper courses of the river the climate is particularly delightful, and the mineral wealth is said to be abundant. The Xingú frequently widens in its course, forming great lakes, and in the upper waters it doubles back on itself in a huge curve, forming rapids and cataracts that interrupt navigation at this point. This river is much shorter than either the Tapajós or the Tocantins, though the extent of navigable distance, excepting the falls, just referred to, is greater. The Tapajós enters the Amazon a few miles below the mouth of the Trombetas, at the port of Santarem, a prosperous shipping centre and the residence of many North Americans who settled there after the war of the Confederacy. The Xingú forms, at its mouth, part of the estuary of the Amazon, and the Tocantins enters the Pará River south of Marajó Island, forming, according to some authorities, a river system entirely separate from that of the Amazon and its tributaries. Marajó Island covers an area of more than forty thousand square kilometres, the distance from east to west being one hundred

and thirty miles, and from north to south one hundred miles; it contains a number of towns and villages, its pasture-lands support three hundred cattle ranches, and from its forests are taken some of the best qualities of Pará rubber, though its rubber-trees have been overworked because of their easy accessibility to the shipping port.

Of all the Brazilian States, Pará has the greatest extent of sea-coast, nearly seven hundred miles. Numerous lighthouses along the coast and on the river-bars protect the pilots in these waters. It is said that only the most experienced river pilot, and one who has been especially trained for this particular river, can safely be relied upon to manage the course of a steamer on the Amazon, in consequence of the constantly shifting river-bed, the islands that form and disappear mysteriously, and the unaccountable frequency of the sand-banks, especially at low tide. Through its geographical position, and the extent of its navigable rivers, the State of Pará affords an outlet for a great deal of the trade of northern Brazil, and also of the republics of Bolivia, Peru, and Venezuela. The commerce passing through the port of Pará, according to navigation statistics, shows an increase within the last quarter of a century at the rate of nearly three hundred per cent., no other country having shown such remarkable progress except the United States of America. The revenue of the State government is nearly five million dollars annually. Rubber alone contributes to



THEATRO DA PAZ, PARÁ.



PUBLIC GARDEN, PARÁ.

the State and municipal incomes nearly twenty-five per cent. of their total, the annual rubber shipment through this port amounting to twenty-five thousand tons. Next to rubber, the culture of cacao is one of the most important sources of revenue. Along the margins of the Amazon and the Tocantins the cacao crops are most abundant; the development of the product offers peculiar inducements, as the planting is easy, and in this region the tree

bears fruit after three years' growth, continuing to produce, for fifty years or more, two crops annually, if kept clean. The annual export of cacao averages thousands of tons. Brazil-nuts are exported in large quantities, and the supply is practically unlimited. Mandioca is cultivated in every part of the State, the farinha constituting an important article of food; from Pará it is shipped to Amazonas, where the products of agriculture have heretofore received comparatively little attention in consequence of the great wealth of the rubber trade, which has absorbed every other interest. From the forests of Pará many of the finest qualities of hardwood are exported for cabinet purposes, and this industry is still in its infancy; the abundance and variety of this product must sooner or later attract the attention of commerce to the extent of increasing the demand and providing ways and means to introduce it on a more extensive scale to the markets of the world. From the palms that abound here, delicate fibres that are as fine as silk and stronger than linen are extracted, and used for hammocks, mats, baskets, and hats, though the full range of their usefulness has never been measured. The medicinal plants, dyewoods, gums, and oils found in the State are sufficient to meet the greatest demand. Clays of beautiful and varied colors, suitable for fine pottery, are found throughout the Amazon district. Cattle-raising is an increasing source of revenue, especially in the southeast of the State. Gold and precious stones have been found in the high land, also marble, slate, and clays fitted for ornamental purposes. The manufacturing industries of Pará include sugar-refineries, saw-mills, brick-yards, soap-works, etc.

The social, educational, and commercial centre of the State is its capital city, Belém, or as it is more generally called, especially by foreigners, Pará. There is an alliterative proverb with respect to Pará indicative of the fascinating charm which the city possesses for strangers: "*Quem vai para Pará para,*" which is interpreted: "Who goes to Pará stays there." Another version of the same saying signifies: "Who comes to Pará is glad to

stay; who drinks *assaí* goes never away." The *assaí* is a native beverage made from the fruit of the *assaí* palm, producing large black berries which resemble grapes; it is very refreshing, and is one of the most popular drinks of this region.

This picturesque and charming city offers many attractions to the foreign visitor, in its beautiful tropical gardens, broad avenues shaded by trees of apparently impenetrable foliage; the delight of its spacious bay fanned by cool breezes most inviting to the beach or the boating party makes life very pleasant in this rich equatorial city. The wealth that has poured into Pará within recent years has resulted in changing it within a decade from a quiet little city of fifty thousand to a modern metropolis of more than twice that number of inhabitants. It is one of the most delightful places of residence in northern Brazil; the mean annual temperature is about 80° Fahrenheit, and it is an agreeable fact that during the time of day when the heat is greatest the cooling sea-breeze is strongest; also, during the hottest months of the year there are afternoon showers, lasting about an hour, that cool the atmosphere. During the day, the parks, avenues, and drives are deserted, and the only evidence of activity is seen in the commercial streets and along the docks and wharves; but in the evening the city puts on holiday dress, and all is gaiety and pleasure. In the *Praça da Republica*, which is one of many beautiful parks ornamenting the city, an orchestra plays two or three evenings a week. The leading opera-house, *Theatro da Paz*, which is one of the finest in South America, overlooks the *praça*; large and fashionable audiences attend nightly, and excellent European companies are engaged every season by the government to give a series of operas, the Italian being the favorite school. Handsomely dressed women may be seen promenading in company with their escorts, who are always relatives, and a long line of elegant carriages stands every evening for hours in front of the fashionable social clubs, one of which is the "Sport Club," situated in the most attractive section of the city, while the members pass away the evening at billiards, bowling, gymnastics, fencing, or the more restful entertainment of cards or books. On the ladies' evenings the club-rooms are transformed into reception-rooms, decorated with flowers and vines, and a programme of music usually takes the place of more athletic pastimes. In the library and reading room the principal foreign as well as Brazilian magazines and newspapers are on file. For visitors there is a unique attraction



SENATOR JUSTO CHERMONT, PARÁ.

in the museum and the botanical garden, which differ in many respects from similar institutions elsewhere, particularly in the great variety of rare specimens which belong exclusively to the Amazon regions, especially of the animal world. Nowhere are to be seen reptiles larger or of more variegated coloring; and it is impossible to imagine anything more gorgeous than the plumage of the araras, toucans, and parrots that are as much at home here as in the freedom of their forest haunts; the luxuriance and brilliant coloring of foliage and blossoms seen in the botanical garden are typical of the prodigality of Nature in everything that grows in this favored zone.



THE PALACE, PARÁ.

In the public buildings, as well as other government improvements, the city gives proof of large expenditure, but at the same time judicious investment; some of the handsomest structures have been erected for educational purposes. Public instruction comprises primary, secondary, normal, technical, and professional courses. The first is given in five hundred elementary and primary schools, in the Amparo Orphan Asylum for girls, and in the lowest grade of the Institute of Mechanical Arts; secondary instruction is given at the Pará Lyceum, in three courses, including a course organized according to the plan of instruction of the *Gymnasio Nacional*, a course of surveying, and a commercial course; technical and professional instruction is given in the Pará Institute of Mechanical Arts, which is a free boarding-school for minors, under military conditions, where gratuitous instruction in

mechanical arts is given. There are five workshops in connection with the Institute, equipped respectively for the work of carpenters, blacksmiths, tailors, tinsmiths, and, under one roof, shoemakers, curriers, and tanners. When the pupil's education is finished, he serves a term in the State militia, after which he obtains his discharge or promotion. The school buildings are creditable to the city, and several are particularly handsome establishments. The old palace of the governor, built during Pombal's time; is still one of the attractive edifices of the city, though the new palace adjoining it, and used by the legislative assembly and the municipal officials, is also an ornament to the capital. The Alfandega, or custom-house, one of the modern additions to the commercial quarter of the city, presents



AVENIDA DA REPUBLICA. PARÁ.

a favorable aspect from the bay. The churches and hospitals are worthy of especial mention, particularly the old cathedral, and the hospitals Caridade and Beneficiencia Portugueza; the last-named takes care of about two hundred patients on an average, and is one of the model institutions of the kind. Tramways connect every part of the city, which is lighted by electricity, has complete telephonic and telegraphic communication, and is well provided with newspapers, of which there are five dailies and numerous weeklies. The city has eight banks. A splendid public library containing ten thousand volumes, some of which are in French, English, and German, as well as in Portuguese, ranks among the community's intellectual attractions. A charming feature of the city of Pará is the magnificence of the

vegetation in the tropical forests which surround it, and the picturesque view that stretches out before it in the broad open harbor with its busy traffic. The city lies on flat land, and seen for the first time from the steamer entering the harbor the impression predominating is one of color rather than form; it is "the white city" before one has had time to decide whether it is large or small, old-fashioned or modern. A nearer view modifies this impression, and reveals a busy commercial sea-port, with the evidences of Portuguese occupancy in the narrow streets and houses decorated with ornamental tiles. The spacious praças, and the towering trees that ornament the broader and more modern avenues of the city, heighten the picturesque general effectiveness.

Besides the capital, and the thriving ports on the Amazon, Santarem and Obydos, the State has a number of growing cities. Bragança, connected with the capital by railway, is a prosperous town of twenty thousand people; Cametá, near the mouth of the Tocantins, has an important trade in castanha-nuts, cacao, and other products; Monte Alegre is noted for the salubrity of its climate; Pinheiro is a favorite suburb of Belém, with which it is to be connected by railway, and there are many other towns of rising importance. The immigration bureau of the State is making every effort to attract foreign colonies, and the outlook for the future in this respect is favorable. Apropos of this subject, one is doubtless justified in introducing the incisive and eloquent language of Coudreau: "Progress is indefinite; no race is its perpetual keeper. It is like a legacy, bequeathed by the race which disappears to the one which succeeds. Its course is onward; it has already moved westward toward Europe; it has already actually moved from Europe to America. Why should not centuries to come see upon the banks of the Amazon their most magnificent flourishing, as early centuries saw their manifestations upon the banks of the rivers of Egypt and India?"



DOCKS, PARÁ.



TABATINGA, THE LAST MILITARY POST OF BRAZIL ON THE PERUVIAN FRONTIER, ESTABLISHED 1766.

CHAPTER XXVIII

THE RUBBER INDUSTRY



NOT until 1736, when the famous scientist La Condamine introduced rubber into Europe, was this product of the Amazon forest known to the civilized world, and about thirty years later it was first put into practical use by one of the great artists of England. For half a century its sphere of usefulness was limited to the erasure of pencil-marks, from which it took the name "rubber"; until the celebrated invention of Mackintosh marked the beginning of a new era in its history, which Goodyear's discovery of the vulcanizing process, in 1843, has since made one of unlimited importance. It may now be regarded as of universal necessity, and indispensable to the comfort of millions of people, so quickly and to so many purposes have its advantages been applied in the course of modern invention. A failure of the rubber crop would be one of the greatest disasters that could overtake the commercial world, and yet, only half a century ago, rubber was counted among the luxuries, outside of Brazil. Long before the civilized people of Europe and America knew anything of the uses of rubber, especially of its water-tight properties, the Amazon Indians employed it to make bottles and other vessels for holding liquids, as the names *seringa* and *borracha*, by which rubber is called in the Amazon country, indicate; though *borracha*, meaning a bottle, is said also to refer to the shape in which it is exported. The rubber-trees are known to the natives as *seringueiras*, and rubber-gatherers are popularly called *seringueiros*. The botanical name *Hevea guianensis* was given to the plant, in 1775, by the French scientist Aublet, who studied it in Guiana, reporting that the natives there knew it by the name *hévê*, the Indians of other sections calling it *seringa* and *caout-chouc*. About the beginning of the nineteenth century, the English and German botanists gave the name *siphonia* to the rubber-trees of Pará, though the present botanical appellation is *Hevea brasiliensis*.

In general appearance, the rubber-tree of the Amazon forest is altogether different from the *Ficus elastica* of India, with its glossy dark-green leaves, and resembles rather the



HUT OF A SERINGUEIRO.

European ash in both bark and foliage. It grows to a height ranging from fifty to a hundred feet, and has an average girth, at a metre above the ground, of about five feet, the trunk being free from branches for almost half its height. The blossoming season is August, and in December and January the seeds ripen and fall, earlier in the case of old than of young trees. The seeds grow, sometimes three or four together, in a hard

shell that hangs by a short stalk from the upper and outer branches and explodes with a loud noise when ripe, scattering its contents in all directions. Of the many varieties of the *seringueira*, the most valuable to commerce is known in rubber districts as *casca preta* [black bark], and grows in those forests that are neither permanently flooded nor yet on high land, but where a certain amount of drainage exists, as along the periodically inundated banks of the Amazon tributaries, especially in the south, where are found the richest rubber-producing regions at present known. On the river Acre, one of the branches of the Purús, the trees are so prolific that one hundred of them will furnish as much as a ton of rubber per annum. North of the Amazon, the Rio Negro and Rio Branco tributaries yield a considerable quantity. The territory at present known to produce "Pará rubber" covers over a million square miles, and it is believed that further exploration will prove this estimate to be far below the actual area. With such an extensive field to draw from, it is not likely that much will be done for some time toward planting and cultivating rubber, particularly as the tree requires from fifteen to twenty years to reach maturity, which is a long time for capital to lie idle; although it is said that companies have already been formed with such a project in view. In its wild state the rubber-tree grows among other trees of the forest promiscuously, not in clusters or groves of its own. One of its peculiarities is that it will not grow satisfactorily on cleared and open ground, as it requires the shade of other trees and the still air from the time its growth begins until it is an adult tree. Not only is the quality of the milk affected by a lack of these advantages, but the tree itself has been known to die soon after a clearing of the ground around it.

According to some authorities, the milk, or, as it is scientifically known, the *latex*, is quite different from the *sap*, and is only of nutritive value when used as a reserve of water in cases of drought, its extraction not being in any way harmful to the life of the tree, as is sometimes reported. If allowed to rest a few years, even a completely exhausted tree will recover itself, and instances are known where trees that have been tapped at intervals for fifty years still yield an abundance of milk. The rubber is collected in the dry season, between July and January, the processes of extraction and curing being more than ordinarily interesting because of their very primitive character. The "tapping" of the tree marks the beginning of the *seringueiro's* work. Having built his little hut and equipped himself with the necessary utensils, consisting of an axe, a knife, cups, clay, and a calabash, he starts out for the rubber-tree, sometimes cutting his way through dense undergrowth and again sinking knee-deep in mud or up to his waist in water. Arrived at his destination, he attaches the cup to the tree, and with his axe makes a gash in the bark, being careful not to penetrate the wood. The axe used for this purpose is very small, less than an inch wide, and wedge-shaped in order to prevent its making too deep a cut in the tree; usually an upward blow is given, making an oblique incision about six feet above the base of the trunk. This operation is repeated at intervals of about a foot in a line all round the tree until five or six cups have been placed, into which the milk flows slowly. The next day a row of incisions is made just below the first, and so



RUBBER-TREE.

on day by day until the ground is reached, when the same programme is begun again, this time between the former rows. A good tree will yield to a height of twenty feet or more. Each day an experienced *seringueiro* can tap as many as a hundred trees, providing they are comparatively close together. Some gatherers tap in the morning and return to collect the milk in the evening, while others tap in the evening and collect in the morning. An expert collector will gather as much as seven pounds of rubber a day in the lower Amazon region, but about three times that amount in the richest districts of the upper Amazon. Rubber-trees differ greatly in their yielding capacity, some being very quickly exhausted, while others continue to produce for many years; from some the daily yield is much greater than from others, and some do not yield to their full capacity when first tapped. A systematic division of labor is made on all the great rubber estates by which each collector has his hut and utensils provided and a given territory to work, the trees being connected by paths, or *estradas*, which pass a hundred *heveas* or more, forming a loop that takes the collector back to his starting-point when his allotted share of the day's tapping is finished. As the *latex* exudes from the tree, it resembles milk both in color and consistency, the caoutchouc corresponding to the butter properties in milk; the fluid part of it consists of water with very small quantities of albuminous matter, organic acids, and phosphates in solution. The *seringueiro* usually begins tapping about day-break, after a cup of coffee, which serves his needs until nine or ten o'clock, when this part of his work is done and he is ready for breakfast. After breakfast, he returns to his estrada, taking with him a bucket into which he empties the cups from each tree, getting back again to his hut about noon or a little later, when he proceeds to prepare his day's collection for the market by a process of evaporation which, though primitive, has been proved to be the best and least expensive yet discovered for freeing the rubber from those elements that, if allowed to remain, would cause putrefaction and destroy its elastic properties, making it worthless as an article of commerce. Even if the *latex* is left standing over night, it loses some of its value by fermentation and has to be sold as second-class, so that it is a regular part of the day's work to smoke the rubber each day as it is collected. A fire is built of palm-nuts, the *urucuri* being the best for the purpose, though if the nuts are not obtainable ordinary wood chips are made to serve instead; a funnel-shaped chimney is then placed over the fire, through which the hot smoke rises in a dense column, and the operator, seating himself beside a bucketful of the *latex*, pours some of it over a paddle-shaped stick which he then holds in the smoke, turning it round and round until it dries, repeating the operation until a large ball has been formed. Sometimes a pivot is arranged and a rotary motion secured which does faster work than the operator in smoking the balls; but the paddle-smoked rubber is preferred because it is usually more thoroughly dried and cured, although this method is very injurious to the eyes, total blindness being known to result from it in some cases. An expert man will be able to work two estradas a day, having four estradas in his territory which he works on alternate days; it is said that such a workman can collect as much as a ton of rubber a year. The season for collecting rubber lasts only about five

or six months at the longest, though during the intervening months employment may be secured in gathering brazil-nuts, sarsaparilla, and other products of the forest, that are marketed during this time. The most of these laborers, however, spend in the winter what they make in the summer. It is not an uncommon sight on the steamers plying up and down the Amazon to find a *seringueiro* transformed after a few months' work into "a gentleman of means," though half a year later will usually find him again penniless on his way to the rubber camp, so improvident are these hard-working children of the forest. No doubt the irresistible attractions of the city, long denied, prove too much even



RUBBER-GATHERERS IN THE AMAZON COUNTRY.

for the stoutest purse, and, like their sea-faring brethren after a long absence from port, they fall easy victims to the sharpers who are constantly on the lookout for such prey, and part with their hard-earned money before appreciating the value of Poor Richard's warning against paying too dearly for their whistle. On the other hand, instances are related of poor laborers going into the rubber district without a penny and earning enough in the course of time to enable them to purchase property and establish themselves in business. So much depends upon the man in any sphere of life. The demand for labor is so far in excess of the supply in these regions, that the proprietors of large estates find great difficulty in filling the requirements of the market.

There are usually three distinct qualities of rubber sold to commerce: the *fine*, which has been thoroughly dried and smoked and is free from putrefaction; the *medium*, or *entre-fine*, which has either been burnt during the smoking process or has been insufficiently smoked and in consequence has putrefied; and the *sernambi*, which consists of scraps mixed with peelings from the bark of the tree and miscellaneous *sorts*. The raw rubber is subject to a loss of weight during its transportation that is frequently a source of annoyance to shippers. This loss is so variable that no exact figures can be made a reliable basis of calculation, and unless the consignor and consignee have perfect faith in each other's integrity, there is often occasion for doubt regarding the actual weight of the shipment, which is sure to be different from the invoiced statement of the amount as it left the shipper's hands. Rubber that is kept in the camps in remote sections and only shipped once a year loses only about a tenth of the weight that is lost by newly made rubber shipped as soon as cured. A loss of three or four per cent. is quoted as the average in shipments from Manãos, a thousand miles up the Amazon River, to foreign ports. Some of the best qualities do not show so great a reduction, while there are inferior kinds of rubber that double that percentage of lost weight in transit.

Brazil practically controls the rubber trade of the world, reaping a revenue from this source that reaches an average of fifty million dollars a year. The States of Amazonas and Pará are the great rubber-producing regions, and their supply is said to be absolutely inexhaustible, though the scarcity of labor limits the amount exported, so that as the demand increases the price is raised, being nearly double to-day what it was twenty years ago, notwithstanding that the supply has increased enormously within that time, so great is the universal call for "more rubber." The world's total supply of rubber does not exceed sixty thousand tons, though the constantly increasing use of this article of commerce points to an unlimited demand, so that as a source of revenue it promises even greater value in the future than at present, and the wealth of Brazil, estimated by the possibilities of this product alone, may be regarded as almost incalculable, restricted only by her ability to gather the harvest. Foreign capital is employed to a considerable extent in the development of this vast treasure store. An American, Mr. Charles R. Flint, of Flint, Eddy & Co., long ago recognized the advantages to be gained by judicious investment in this direction, and early in the eighties visited the Amazon country, buying large tracts of rubber lands and establishing houses for handling the crude rubber industry. Since that time, the various organizations with which he has been identified as the chief leader have handled crude rubber to the value of over two hundred and fifty million dollars in gold. The Rubber Goods Manufacturing Company of the United States, and the American Cycle Company, both organized by Mr. Flint, in 1899, are among the largest purchasers of rubber in the world.

Rubber has been called the "Cinderella of civilization;" crowded into obscurity by her more gaily decked sisters of the forest, she eclipses them all in real worth, the fairy Prince of Commerce seeking in vain elsewhere for a queen so admirably fitted to wear the crystal emblem of universal travel and unique destiny.

CHAPTER XXIX

AMAZONAS



COLONEL SILVERIO NERY, GOVERNOR OF AMAZONAS.

AMAZONAS is the largest and one of the richest of the Brazilian States. Its area is nearly two million square kilometres; it extends from the fifth degree north latitude to the tenth degree south and from the fifty-fourth to the seventy-seventh degree west longitude. It is bounded on the east by Pará, on the north by Venezuela and Guiana, on the west by Colombia and Peru, and on the south by Bolivia and Matto Grosso. Unique in the character of its history and the apparent greatness of its destiny, the State of Amazonas has reversed the order of progress in other civilized countries of the globe, having been the favored haunt of the scientist and the scholar centuries before the commercial world awoke to a realization of its industrial possibilities. The record of its earlier days is filled with anecdotes of world-

wide celebrities who visited its shores, buried themselves in its forests, and found it a terrestrial paradise. The little home where Agassiz spent many happy years is still pointed out among the chief attractions of the city of Manaus; scholars whose names are honored in the proudest capitals of the world, are remembered here with many familiar little incidents that marked their visit; while the plodding centres of Europe have been busy with the problems of commerce, the gentle students of nature have found, over and over again, without being able to convince their more "practical" brethren, the richest country toward

which the eager emissaries of trade have ever set their faces. Humboldt said long ago, in respect to commerce, which successively crowded the ports of the Ganges, the Euphrates, and the Nile, that it would find on the Amazon the greatest wealth of all, declaring "it is there that one day, sooner or later, will concentrate the civilization of the globe." The first sign of this coming greatness appeared when steamships were employed to carry its products to foreign lands and when the mighty river was opened to free navigation; especially was the last act a boon to the country, well deserving of the commemoration it has received from the State by the recent erection of a handsome monument in one of the



RUA DO INSTALAÇÃO, MANAOS.

prominent squares of the city of Manaus. Everything favors a great future for Amazonas, which is rich in animal, vegetable, and mineral wealth, and accessible in every part of its vast territory by means of the most extensive water way in the world. The majestic Amazon, which, from an impetuous little mountain stream sixteen thousand feet above the sea, watering the Peruvian valley of Huantar, between the Cordilleras of the Andes, less than a hundred miles from Lima, broadens into a spacious river two thousand miles above its entrance to the sea, toward which, after leaving the Andes, it flows with leisurely movement, receiving tribute from left and right in the currents of innumerable affluents, gradually widening throughout its course until it forms an estuary more than two hundred miles wide

at its mouth. The mighty and peerless Amazon is the natural link between the Atlantic and the Pacific sea-boards of the southern hemisphere; while through its tributaries, the Negro from Venezuela, the Madeira from Bolivia, the Juruá, Purús, and Javary from Peru, the Iça and Japúra from Colombia, the Nápo



GOVERNOR'S PALACE, MANAOS.

from Ecuador, the Tocantins from Goyaz, and the Tapajós from Matto Grosso, the gigantic river possesses the requisite means of transportation to develop the region through which it makes its stately progress to the sea as the most important commercial highway of the western world.

By the Brazilians the Amazon has been named the *Rio-Mar*, or "river-sea," and the various explorers who have given accounts of its vast expanse and wonderful volume have referred to it as an inland sea, the Mediterranean of America, or similar titles indicative of its immensity. To the north, the basin of the Amazon is united with that of the Orinoco by the Cassiquiare River, which flows either into the Rio Negro or into the Orinoco according to the strength and direction of the tide; and to the south, in the State of Matto Grosso, the Amazon plain joins that of La Plata. With the construction of a few short canals, water communication would be uninterrupted from the Caribbean coast down through the heart

of the continent to the estuary of La Plata; and modern engineering will no doubt soon find a way to extend navigation over the short distance that remains between the head-waters of the Amazon and the Pacific Ocean. The entire basin of this mighty river covers an area of seven million square kilometres, of which a part belongs to Peru, Ecuador,



OLD PALACE OF GOVERNOR, MANAOS.

and Bolivia. At its source, the river is named the *Marañon*; on the border of Brazil, it takes the name *Solimões*; and after its confluence with the Madeira, it becomes known as the *Amazon*. It is three thousand five hundred miles in extent, and so level is its course that throughout two-thirds of its length the channel slopes little more than two hundred feet. It is wider and deeper than any other river in the world. Although the surface is placid, showing little apparent current, the average depth is from seventy-five to one hundred and fifty feet, and in some places it has a depth of two hundred and fifty feet; the width varies from a mile and a half at Tabatinga, on the Peruvian border of Brazil, to four miles at the



THEATRO DO AMAZONAS, MANAOS.

mouth of the Madeira, and, again, to less than a mile as it passes the "narrows" at Obydos, though it is twelve miles wide below Santarem, where it receives the tributary Tapajós. According to generally accepted authorities, the estuary of the Amazon encloses the island of Marajó, and has a total width of two hundred and fifty miles. Some authorities claim that the real mouth of the Amazon is north of Marajó Island, the river forming an archipelago just below the confluence of the Xingú, and emptying into the sea through three channels, none of which are much used for navigation. A succession of narrow channels connects the main river with the Pará estuary south of Marajó Island, the last of these, the *Breves*, being scarcely one hundred and fifty feet wide, and almost completely embowered in

overhanging foliage. So great is the conflict between the current of the river at its mouth and the incoming tide of the ocean, that great billows, from ten to fifteen feet high, surge in at the northern entrance, especially, following each other with deafening noise, particularly during the time of the equinoctial gales, when the current is strongest; this tide from the sea is perceptible as far up the river as Obydos, about five hundred miles. Through-

out the lower course of the river are innumerable channels forming islands close to the shore, which during the dry season are the favorite haunt of the beautiful herons and other birds native to this region; these low-lying lands are called *varzeas*, or "flood-plains," and they disappear during the rainy season when the tides are high. The principal rise of the tide takes place in February on the Solimões, in April on the Amazon proper, and in June on the Pará. The level then falls until October, when a second rise of less importance begins, which lasts until January. These annual rises correspond with the rainy seasons



POLICE STATION, MANAOS.



PUBLIC MARKET MANAOS.

of the regions watered by the great river and its tributaries, the equatorial rains of the northern latitude recurring at a different time of the year from those of the south. A learned professor very beautifully expresses it: "In this oceanic river the tidal action has an annual instead of a daily ebb and flow; it obeys a larger orb, and is ruled by the sun and not by the moon." During the rainy season on the upper Amazon, the tide

sometimes rises to a height of from forty to fifty feet, submerging the forests and converting a vast territory into an inland sea. The Amazon basin receives more rain during the year than any other region of the same extent on the globe, and the volume of water it carries to the ocean is estimated at the enormous rate of a hundred thousand cubic meters per



MONUMENT IN MANAOS COMMEMORATING THE OPENING OF NAVIGATION ON THE AMAZON TO ALL NATIONS.

second, the water of the great stream coloring the Atlantic for hundreds of miles from its mouth. The dull opaque yellow of the main stream is tinged with various mixtures as it receives its immense tributaries, of which there are a dozen that extend each over a course of more than a thousand miles; the largest of these enter the river from the south, such as the Tocantins, Xingú, and Tapajós, in the State of Pará, and the Madeira, Purús, Juruá, and Javary, in Amazonas, the last four, which have an average length of sixteen hundred miles, watering a territory immensely rich in rubber-trees. The Madeira is the greatest southern tributary, having a length of more than two thousand miles from its headwaters in Bolivia, one branch rising near the

border of Chili and the other close to the Argentine boundary; it passes through a country rich in rubber, and is the great natural highway of traffic between the interior and the North Atlantic sea-board; for about six hundred miles navigation is uninterrupted, then a series of rapids obstructs it for about a hundred and fifty miles, after which there are no further obstacles to vessels going by this route to Bolivia and Matto Grosso. The water of the

Madeira is of a milky color, and at its junction with the Amazon it has a width of about two miles and a depth of seventy feet, making quite a perceptible change in the flow of the current where it enters the river, a few miles below the city of *Manãos*. The *Purús* is nearly as long as the *Madeira*, and is navigable to its source, a distance of about nineteen hundred miles; it is said to be the fabled *Amarumayu*, or "serpent river," of the Incas. The *Javary* marks the

boundary between Amazonas and Peru, and is about fourteen hundred miles long. Of the northern tributaries, the *Rio Negro* is the largest and most important, having a length of fifteen hundred miles and an average breadth of nearly two miles for the first half of its course, and of from ten to fifteen miles for the remainder, which is channelled with islands; the name of this river, which takes its rise in the mountains of Colombia, is singularly appropriate, the water having a rich dark chocolate color which is not changed even at the confluence of the *Rio Branco*, whose milk-white tide is quickly lost in the greater current;

the water is light golden when placed in a white vessel, and has a delightfully satiny feeling which makes bathing in it an especial luxury and overcomes any prejudice against its color, that, though decided, does not interfere with its perfect transparency. The *Rio Negro* constitutes the chief highway of commerce between Brazil, Venezuela, and Guiana. The second in importance of the Amazon's northern tributaries is



RUA MUNICIPAL, MANÃOS.



BENJAMIN CONSTANT INSTITUTE, MANÃOS.

the Japurá, a thousand miles long, and having a delta which, although the principal mouth is only three hundred feet wide, connects it with the Amazon by a series of small channels for two hundred miles; it, also, rises in the mountains of Colombia, and passes through a territory rich in dyewoods, medicinal plants, cacao, castanha-nuts, and minerals. The Iça, another northern tributary of importance, is said to be very rich in precious minerals. The principal tributaries that enter the Marañon division of the Amazon are the Ucayali, Huallaga, Pastassa, and Napó. There is a host of minor branches large enough to be considered of importance in any other river system, but lost by comparison with the immensity of



WATER-WORKS AT CACHOEIRA GRANDE, MANAOS.

contiguous rivals. It is almost impossible to gain, from description or from figures, an adequate idea of this wonder of the natural world, which is just now beginning to awaken universal interest in its unlimited possibilities, and to change the vacant stare of incredulity into the clear sight of serious appreciation. There is no country on the globe that has the same outlook for commercial development as Amazonas. The climate is equable, and although the temperature is high, yet, owing to the constant evaporation due to the plentiful rains and the prevalent trade-winds, the actual heat is not so great as the latitude and the comparatively low land would lead one to suppose. Professor Agassiz was enthusiastic in

his praises of the climate and the country, of which he wrote to a friend: "I have the pleasure to repeat, in spite of all that may be said to the contrary, that I know of no country in the world so full of attractions, more fertile, more salubrious, and more fitted to be the focus of an immense immigration than the magnificent valley of Amazonas."

That part of the State which lies to the north of the Amazon is considerably higher and less marshy than the territory to the south; in the extreme north and west are mountainous regions, rich in mineral products, and on the banks of the Rio Branco, near its head-waters, are extensive grassy plains suitable for cattle-raising. The southern half of the State is regarded as the more valuable commercially, as it is in this region that the famous rubber-trees which supply the markets of the world with this product are most abundant and of



VIEW OF MANAOS AND THE RIO NEGRO.

the best quality. The wealth represented by this valuable resource offers such alluring reward to the investor, that the people of the State have become absorbed in its development almost to the exclusion of other enterprises. And yet, although the revenue from this resource is enormous, as shown elsewhere, there are other products which, if given equal attention, would yield very handsome returns. The greatest difficulty is found in securing sufficient labor to develop the country, the present population of Amazonas being scarcely half a million inhabitants, of whom more than a tenth are residents of the city of Manaus. Yet the inducements to immigration, especially of an agricultural class, are excellent; the climate and soil favor the growth of every kind of cereal, and are especially suited to the cultivation of rice, sugar, tobacco, beans, and similar products. The fertile region of the Nile

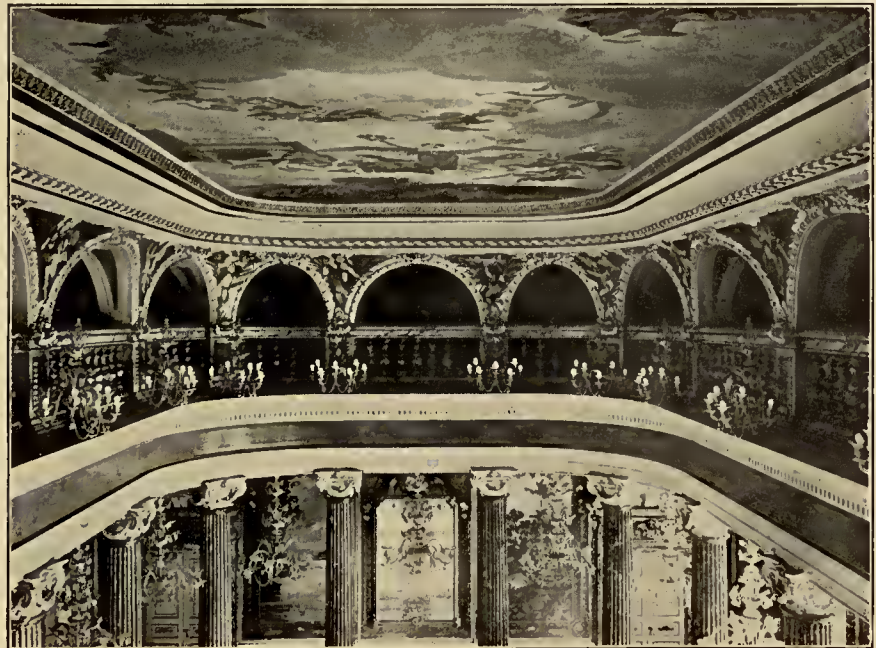


JARDIM PUBLICO, MANAOS.

enjoys no greater natural advantages in the periodical overflow that serves the double purpose of irrigation and fertilization than does the vast alluvial plain of the Amazon, periodically inundated by floods which cover a large area with a vegetable deposit at regular intervals. The absence of droughts or of insect plagues, from which some of the best farming regions of the world suffer, is an additional blessing. But until the population increases materially it is not

likely that the attention of the people will be diverted from the rubber trade and the commercial interests represented by various other natural products. Of these, the castanhanuts are among the more important; in the Amazon country they are collected on much the same plan as that followed by the rubber-gatherer. The forest is divided by paths, or *estradas*, which lead past three or four hundred trees, two men generally working a path together, and collecting on an average a thousand *barrels* a season, though the production varies greatly from year to year. Cacao grows wild in this State, but so little attention has been paid to its cultivation that even the home market is supplied from other sections. Birds, heron plumes, orchids, and the various hardwoods, dyewoods, and medicinal herbs are among its valuable productions, and it is rich in tropical fruits.

There is practically no limit to the wealth of Amazonas, and the remarkable advancement made within the past few years is, in some respects, unparalleled in



INTERIOR OF THEATRE, MANAOS.

the history of States. The capital city, Manãos, situated on the left bank of the Rio Negro, eight miles from the Amazon and a thousand miles from the Atlantic coast, is a conspicuous example of the rapid improvements that have been made. It is the social, educational, political, and commercial centre of the State, and in appearance is one of the most attractive of cities. Its streets are broad and well paved, the principal ones with asphalt blocks, and the others with granite cubes. It is lighted by electricity, and many of the private houses have installations. An excellent system of water-works is in use, the property of the government. The principal streets of the city are traversed by an electric street railway, fifteen miles in extent, having a loop line that runs around the city through the picturesque suburbs of Cachoeirinha, Flores, and other resorts, along the road to which the car passes through beautiful arbors of green, dense thickets of the richest tropical foliage, and avenues of magnificent palms; past flourishing fields of maize and *feijões*; over two handsome iron bridges that cross the river on the outskirts of the city, offering one of the most attractive of sylvan scenes. This railway was built by the Manãos Railway Company, of New York, under a concession from the government of Amazonas giving exclusive rights for thirty years and conveying the privilege of passenger and freight business. It is as thoroughly equipped as any trolley road in South America, the cars being of modern style and construction, the powerhouse and car sheds of steel structure, and the entire system a credit in every way to the progress of the community.



MONSIGNOR COUTINHO, VICE-GOVERNOR OF
AMAZONAS.

The government buildings, erected at a cost of millions of dollars, are unsurpassed in size and attractiveness by any other State buildings of the country. The new palace of the governor is a model of architectural beauty and commodious construction; the Palace of Justice, situated on one of the main avenues, is a stately edifice of white marble representing an enormous expenditure. The Teatro Amazonas is one of the handsomest in America; it was built at a cost of two million dollars gold, and is a particularly striking evidence of the great material prosperity of the State and the capital. Occupying a commanding site on the Avenida Eduardo Ribeiro, it is one of the most conspicuous features of the landscape as viewed from the harbor, when the sun gilds its magnificent dome, lighting up the national colors of the costly ornamental tiles that



OFFICES AND CARS OF ELECTRIC RAILWAY, MANAOS.

other essential and desirable features, and the Benjamin Constant Institute for girls. The public library contains more than four thousand volumes in Portuguese, French, and English. The museum is particularly interesting for its varied collection of Amazonian curiosities, in the form of Indian weapons, an Indian telephone of ancient usage which resembles a hollowed tree-trunk, Indian musical instruments made of beetles' wings, animals' teeth, etc., and countless antiquarian specimens. The public market, no less useful than the school in its relation to the *mens sana in corpore sano*, is one of the most creditable of the city's buildings, and an indispensable feature of the shopping district; it is spacious, cool, and well-ventilated, a prime necessity in this climate. The press is well represented, and there are half a dozen wide-awake dailies in

cover it like a protecting *bandeira*. The theatre is built of stone, the entrances and supporting pillars are finished in Italian marble, and the interior is decorated in the richest fashion, the allegorical paintings that ornament the ceilings of the foyer and the auditorium being the work of the celebrated Italian artist De Angelis. The various churches of the city are built principally in the Jesuit style of architecture, and the educational institutions, most of which have spacious and modern buildings, are equipped with the latest conveniences for school purposes, especially the Gymnasio, a capacious stone edifice with marble portico and finishings, having large recitation halls, gymnasium, and



SUBURBAN VIEW, MANAOS.

charge of active and well-informed journalists; the newsboys are as progressive as any of their metropolitan confrères, and have all the airs of the London or Paris newspaper vendor of tender years and wide experience.

The citizens of Manãos have many luxuries of especial value in an equatorial climate; many of the public offices, as well as private homes, are fitted up with electric fans, and the supply of ice is ample, there being two establishments for the manufacture of that gelid desideratum. A favorite resort in the evenings is the Jardim Publico, where an orchestra furnishes music from six o'clock until midnight; in the centre of the garden a fountain has been constructed which has a unique charm for every visitor, in the huge *peixe-boi* [cow-fish] which is so tame that it will take food from the hand, and so large that it resembles a gigantic cow with the fins and tail of an ungainly-looking fish; there are about five thousand species of this amphibious monster, which is found nowhere except in the Amazon. The *puraqué*, or electric fish, is another curiosity of the Amazon River, which abounds in fish and turtles. The *pirarucú*, weighing from one hundred to two hundred pounds, is the "silver king" of these waters, and, like the famous tarpon of North America, it is caught with hook and line, harpooned, or shot with bow and arrow, though differing from the tarpon, which is hunted only for sport and is not edible. The *pirarucú* is a favorite dish with the Brazilians, being dried and shipped from Manãos to all parts of the country. In the vicinity of the city several truck-farms have been cultivated with success, and the poultry is of an excellent quality. As the needs of a rapidly growing city become more imperative, the various enterprises branch out on a larger scale. There are several factories and machine-shops which are constantly increasing the number of employés in proportion to their growing business. The city is remarkably free from sickness: yellow fever occurs only in a sporadic form, and the usual complaints of a hot climate are not



REV. YOSÉ LOURENÇO DA COSTA AGUIAR,
BISHOP OF AMAZONAS.

common. In a great measure this healthfulness is due to careful attention on the part of the government, which has provided a good system of drainage, as well as a garbage crematory of modern manufacture, a valuable agency in disposing of the city's rubbish. The governor of the State of Amazonas is Colonel Silverio Nery, a member of one of the most distinguished families of Brazil, and widely known both in his own country and in Europe as a prominent statesman and political leader. Under his administration, the State is making the satisfactory progress to which its unlimited resources and great wealth entitle it. Colonel Silverio Nery succeeded Colonel Joaquim Ramalho, Jr. Monsignor Coutinho, one of the most highly esteemed scholars of Brazil, is the vice-governor. Among other leading men are the "*Pensadór*" [thinker], Colonel Eduardo Ribeiro, under whose administration as



MANAOS, STATE OF AMAZONAS.

governor many public improvements were inaugurated; Major Pedro Freire, prominent in the promotion of the educational interests of the State; and the learned Bishop of Amazonas, his Reverence José Lourenço da Costa Aguiar.

The foreign interests in Amazonas are very extensive, and continue to increase as the splendid opportunities for investment multiply. Many important enterprises have been established by English, German, and North American syndicates. Mr. Charles R. Flint, of New York, has been closely identified with the development of the rubber trade of the Amazon country, and is interested in many of the modern improvements of Manaus, which he regards as one of the coming great cities of America. The Manaus Railway Company is one of Mr. Flint's enterprises; the electric-light plant was furnished by him; a company in

which he is largely interested laid the asphalt pavements. Mr. Flint is the head of the great exporting house of Flint, Eddy & Co., and of the American Trading Company, which has branches and agents in every country throughout the world, and the most extensive connections for the exporting of manufactured goods; he is treasurer of the United States Rubber Company, which has a capital of fifty million dollars; chairman of the Board of Directors of the Rubber Goods Manufacturing Company, with a capital of twenty-five million dollars, and director of another rubber company with a capital of ten million dollars. During a visit to Manãos in 1884, Mr. Flint became acquainted with the conditions of the country and foresaw its vast possibilities, and since that time the various organizations with which he has been associated have handled hundreds of millions of dollars' worth of crude rubber. The fact that a financier so famous for his successful undertakings should have seen at once the promising future of the Amazon city, and sought investment in its municipal improvements, is a guarantee of the good prospects of this rich and prosperous



HARBOR OF MANÃOS.

centre. The administration of Mr. Flint's enterprises in Manãos is in the hands of Mr. E. M. Backus, a gentleman of capable business qualifications and the pleasing manner which is so important a factor in success of any kind. Among other foreign investors in Manãos, the Amazon Telegraph Company of England occupies an important place. Its affairs are conducted under the management of Mr. R. H. Mardock, who is highly esteemed by the Brazilians, among whom he has made many friends. The company is engaged in perfecting telegraphic communication between Manãos and Pará, which, although established by cable several times, has been frequently interrupted owing to the peculiar conditions of the Amazon river-bed, that constantly changes its position. The work is, however, very satisfactorily under way, and will soon be completed by land lines.

A curious phenomenon of the Amazon country, which has been explained in various ways, is known to the natives as the "Frost of Saint John." It occurs usually during the last week of June, and is noticeable as far down the river as Manãos, being ushered in with a rain-storm during which the thermometer drops to about 15° Fahrenheit, and

the water of the Amazon is so cold that the fish die by hundreds. According to one theory, this cold weather is due to the descent of large quantities of ice and snow from the Upper Andes, accompanied by high winds. During the few days that this frost continues, the people wear overcoats and wraps, and among the poor there is great discomfort, as the change of from 60° to 70° is so rapid that its effects are naturally very marked on the system, unprepared for such a shock. It is as keenly felt as a "blizzard" in colder climates. On the other hand, it serves a good purpose in destroying the germs of fever which cannot survive such a lowering of the temperature.

The outlook for the Amazon country is most promising from every standpoint. There are more than a hundred steamers navigating the river, an English company alone employing half that number. All the European and American companies have lines of steamers calling at *Manãos*, and every year brings new colonists to the State. Labor being scarce and wages high, there is a good opportunity for immigrants, especially from tropical countries less favored by nature. There are about a hundred English-speaking residents in *Manãos*, and in other towns of the State several European families have settled. The Italian colonies are increasing in numbers, and there are several flourishing small towns in the State that have been populated chiefly by foreign immigrants. With the increased facilities for transatlantic travel afforded by recent additions to the number of steamship lines calling at *Manãos*, the new-comers will no doubt rapidly change the small villages into thriving cities, and the capital itself into a teeming equatorial metropolis.



BRIDGE AT CACHOEIRINHA, MANÃOS.



STEAMBOAT STATION ON THE LAKE OF FONTE BOA.

CHAPTER XXX

MATTO GROSSO AND GOYAZ



CAYAPÓ INDIAN CHIEF.

MORE than one-fourth of the entire territory of Brazil is comprised in the two States of Matto Grosso and Goyaz. Together they extend over an area of seventy thousand square leagues, constituting an important part of the great central table-land of Brazil and marking the dividing-line between the two gigantic river systems of the South American continent,—the Amazon and the La Plata. The history of their discovery and development is similar in some respects to that of the interior districts of neighboring States. The Paulistas were the first to penetrate the depths of their forests and to navigate their innumerable rivers in an effort to settle the country; after the discovery of gold in these States in the eighteenth century, the immigration of hosts of eager gold hunters and diamond seekers rapidly peopled the territory, and these temporary settlers were followed by more permanent colonists. Both States originally belonged to São Paulo, until, about the middle of the eighteenth century, each was made an independent

capitania; Matto Grosso under the administration of Rolim de Moura, and Goyaz under Marcos de Noronha, afterward Conde dos Arcos. The numerous stories related of the discovery of gold in these States indicate the abundance of the metal found by early explorers. Of Matto Grosso it is said that the first gold was found by an Indian slave sent out from the camp of his Paulista masters to search for honey for their evening meal; night came without the return of the slave, and the rage of his masters was at its height when he appeared long after midnight; they were about to administer the severest punishment, when he suddenly spread out before their astonished gaze a handful of gold nuggets, weighing altogether about two pounds, telling them, at the same time, that at the place where he had gathered them the ground was covered with hundreds more of the same



PICTURESQUE COUNTRY ROAD.

kind. The honey was forgotten in the richer prize, and early the next morning he led them to this El Dorado, the very spot upon which the present capital of the State, Cuyabá, is situated; they were in transports of delight when they saw the glittering gold scattered about in profusion, and began at once to gather it by handfuls, returning to their tent in the evening with more than two hundred ounces as the reward of their day's work. According to excellent authority, the gold secured from this locality toward the close of the eighteenth century amounted in one month to twelve thousand pounds' weight, taken from diggings of less than three feet in depth. Equally marvellous tales are related of the early mining days of Goyaz, the story of "*Anhanguera!*" being applied by some authorities to the incidents connected with the expedition of the adventurous Paulista, Bueno da Silva, who, in 1682, set out for this region in search of gold, accompanied by

his little son, twelve years old, and a numerous company of followers; it is said that he returned with great wealth, presenting a thousand ounces of gold to the São Paulo government, which subsequently appointed his son *capitão-mór* of the district. The mining of those pioneers was attended by the greatest danger, in consequence of the hostility of the Indians, who destroyed whole settlements of the gold diggers, effectually checking the industry. Now that modern enterprise is opening up this rich territory by the construction of railroads to traverse even the most remote sections, the prospect is excellent for a revival of mining on a larger scale, and perhaps with even more astonishing results.

The general aspects, as well as the resources, of Matto Grosso and Goyaz are similar in some respects. Both States have an extensive area of mountainous regions and plateaus, and in each there are low-lying tracts of land along some of the river-courses. Goyaz extends farther north than Matto Grosso, though not so far south, and its area is less, covering twenty thousand square leagues, while Matto Grosso has fifty thousand square leagues. The outline of the two States, which together occupy the most central position on the map of South America, is, very appropriately, heart-shaped; the apex is formed by the southern part of Matto Grosso where it touches the boundaries of São Paulo, Paraná, and the republic of Paraguay; Goyaz touches the western limits of Minas Geraes, Bahia, Piauhy, and Maranhão; Matto Grosso marks the eastern boundary of Bolivia and the southern boundary of Amazonas; and both States extend north as far as the southern boundary of Pará. When, in the near future, the railway systems of South America traverse

the continent in every direction, the importance of these central States as busy highways of traffic will be of the first degree; for, in whatever direction transcontinental lines are built, they must pass through this section in order to unite the farthest limits. Aside from this fact, their own wealth must attract both railways and capital, for both States are rich in minerals and vegetation, while the conditions of climate and soil greatly favor agricultural development.

The mineral wealth of Matto Grosso includes gold, iron, silver, platinum, copper, lead, diamonds, agates, mica, limestone, fine qualities of plastic clay, granite, and marbles. Hardwoods used for cabinet purposes, dyewoods, medicinal plants, and rubber are exported in increasing quantities annually. Sugar-cane, coffee, tobacco, rice, and other staple articles grow with little cultivation. Immense herds of cattle graze on the plateaus and hill-sides, the exportation of hides forming one of the chief sources of revenue. Yerba maté of the finest quality comes from this State, the natural conditions favoring the growth of this product especially; the flavor of the yerba maté grown in Matto Grosso is delicious, and as the demand for this drink increases in European and North American markets, the development of the industry may be expected to constitute one of the most important features of agricultural progress in the near future. Even now, the extensive yerba-maté plantations are scarcely adequate to the demand for the product, though there is practically no limit to the territory in which the yerba may be successfully cultivated, and every year finds the investments in land for this purpose increasing, particularly in the southern part of the State. Although the principal means of transportation from Matto Grosso at present is either *via* La Plata River and its tributaries or the Madeira and the Amazon, yet every indication points to the early completion of railway communication between Matto Grosso and Rio de Janeiro, which will greatly facilitate the export trade. Steamers that make the voyage to Matto Grosso *via* La Plata stop at Corumbá on the southwestern frontier, where the business of the custom-house, or *Alfandega*, of the State, is transacted. Corumbá is a busy little city, occupying a picturesque site on the brow of a hill overlooking the river; it is the chief shipping port for a large territory, and has a thriving



BAIÃO, ON THE RIO TOCANTINS.

trade with the interior towns and villages. From Corumbá to the State capital, Cuyabá, a distance of several hundred miles, the trip is made by smaller steamers *via* the São Lourenço branch of the Paraguay River. The scenery along this route is intensely tropical, and vegetation presents the most exaggerated specimens to be found on the face of the globe; the same is true of the Guaporé River banks, where, according to scientific authority, a commission appointed by the government to explore this region, in 1875, discovered a climbing palm, belonging to the *Calamus procumbens* variety, which measured seven hundred feet in length and was scarcely half an inch thick. The foliage of trees and vines of every description grows to incredible proportions; nowhere else are such gigantic water-lilies to be found as the *Victoria Regia* of these regions; the cotton-tree grows wild, the

long silky fibre of its blossoms making a most admirable substitute for feathers in filling pillows or cushions.

The capital of Matto Grosso is Cuyabá, a city of about thirty thousand inhabitants, situated in the central part of the State, a mile or two from the steamboat landing, with which it is connected



ANCIENT INDIAN POTTERY.

by street cars. The city was founded, soon after the discovery of gold, early in the eighteenth century, upon the site of the richest deposit. It lies between the hills of Boa Morte and Prainha, and is traversed by a small stream, an affluent of the São Lourenço. So rich is this region in gold, that specimens of the precious metal are frequently found even in the streets after a heavy rain. The city is progressive, and has many modern improvements, such as street-car lines, water-works, a very beautiful praça, overlooking which are the government buildings and the palace of the bishop; excellent schools, including the Lyceu Cuyabano and the Collegio São João Baptisto, and a number of charitable institutions, one of which is an orphan asylum for boys, numbering three hundred beneficiaries. The government of the State is progressive and liberal, the president, Colonel Antonio Pedro Alves de Barros, being an administrator of acknowledged ability.

Goyaz, as well as Matto Grosso, has in prospect a great future, not alone through the development of its mines, but through the promotion of agricultural industries. The soil and climate are adapted to the cultivation of a variety of products, especially tobacco, sugar, cotton, and cereals, though cattle-raising and mining are the chief sources of wealth at present. Wine-growing is an increasing industry in the southern part of the State. The chief highways of traffic between Goyaz and the outside markets are the Tocantins River

and its tributaries, which connect it with the sea-port of Pará, and the Paranahyba River and its tributaries, which carry the products of the southern districts to the ports of the Paraná River. The climate of Goyaz is dry and moderate, and generally healthful; the State is traversed by several mountain ranges and watered by large rivers. In the heart of the chief mountain range a territory has been surveyed for the future national capital, though it is not likely that a change will be made from the present site until more satisfactory railway communication has been established, at least between the most important points. The capital city, Goyaz, famous as the Villa Boa of the early gold-mining days, is picturesquely



WEAVING BASKETS FOR CARRYING PRODUCE.

situated in the valley of the Araguaya, the twin confluent of the Tocantins, near its source in the high mountains of the Serra Dourado, where it is separated only by a narrow ridge from the source of the Tocantins, the two streams watering different valleys through the whole length of the State until joined in a single current at its extreme northern limit. The city is the centre of the cattle industry, of important wine-manufacturing interests, and of the chief culture of tobacco, of which this State produces a very superior quality, greatly in demand.

The population of the State is about three hundred thousand, and of the capital, twenty-five thousand inhabitants. Among the public buildings are the president's palace,

constructed during the administration of Conde de São Miguel; the hospital of São Pedro de Alcantara, founded in 1826; the bishop's palace, cathedral, hospitals, and numerous schools, one of the most important of which is the Seminario de Santa Cruz, founded in 1873 by the Reverend Bishop Joaquim Gonçalves de Azevedo. Besides the capital, there are several prosperous small towns: Pyrenopolis, formerly Meia Ponta, with thriving cotton factories and spinning-mills; Santa Luzia; Jaraguá, a beautiful town near the head-waters of the Tocantins; and Bomfim, with important gold mines. The political affairs of the State are administered with judgment and tact by the present executive, Dr. Urbano Coelho de Gouvea, who, in his official capacity as president of the State, enjoys the confidence and esteem of the people in the highest degree.

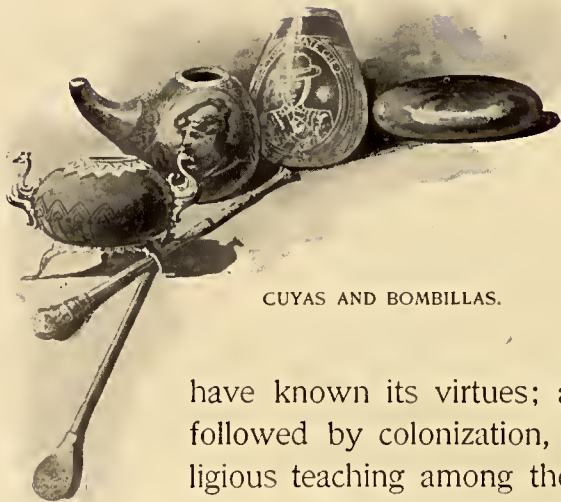
A few years will undoubtedly witness wonderful progress in the two States of Matto Grosso and Goyaz, which are both rich in natural resources, and capable of unlimited development, requiring only the encouragement of a closer communication with the outside world, which the construction of projected railway lines will certainly accomplish. Immigration can be more easily promoted under such conditions, and the benefits resulting would inevitably justify every effort directed toward such a consummation.



GARUPÁ, STATE OF PARÁ, ON AMAZON RIVER.

CHAPTER XXXI

YERBA MATÉ



CUYAS AND BOMBILLAS.

TRAVELLERS and explorers in South American countries have long since learned the good qualities of yerba maté as a refreshing and invigorating beverage. Darwin thoroughly appreciated its value, and in letters to his friends, as well as in the pages of his *Journal of Researches*, written after his South American journey, he lauds it as an "ideal drink."

From time immemorial the Guarany Indians have known its virtues; and when the discovery of the New World was followed by colonization, and the Jesuits entered upon their work of religious teaching among the settlers and in the camps of the natives, it was not long before the wonderful plant was recognized by the new-comers as possessing desirable properties both for use as a beverage and as a preservative of health. It was the priests who first observed that these dusky sons of the forest were able to withstand to an amazing degree all kinds of hardships, going without solid food for days at a time, deriving all their sustenance from the chewing of this yerba maté, or, as they called it in Guarany, *caá*. The holy fathers experimented with the herb, and found it so good that they established maté plantations and taught the Indians to cultivate it. Later, immense maté forests, or *yerbales*, were discovered in all the southern States of Brazil, the most valuable being those of Paraná and Matto Grosso, which are to-day the great sources of the yerba-maté supply for the markets of the world, though the territory within which the plant will grow may be said to extend from Minas Geraes to Rio Grande do Sul and from the Paraguay River to the Atlantic Ocean. In the early days of the industry, every mission had its yerbale under cultivation, the Jesuits directing the labors of the Indians, who were carefully drilled in

their work, dividing attention between the *caá mini*, or best quality, and the *caá nana*, of inferior worth.

The yerba maté is not an herb, but a shrub, even a tree, about the size of an orange-tree, though its boughs are more slender. It sometimes grows to a height of twenty-five feet, the trunk measuring over three feet in circumference. The principal yerbales are situated in the remote country districts, far from towns, and the *yerbateiros*, or maté-gatherers, are obliged to make a long trip across the country before reaching their destination. The time for collecting maté usually begins in December, and continues until



TRANSPORTING YERBA MATÉ.

August. The *yerbateiros* set out with their provisions, tools, and cattle, prepared to establish a camp for the season in the maté forest. The picking, drying, and packing were previously performed on the grounds, but since the perfection of machinery suitable for the process of drying and packing, this part of the work has been done in large central mills, to which the product of an entire dis-

trict is taken. Under the old system, the *yerbateiros* usually travelled in companies of twenty or thirty, forming quite a little settlement wherever they erected their huts. Their first work consisted in preparing an open space about six feet square, beating the ground hard and smooth with mallets. Then they cut the maté and placed it in the clearing, building a fire around it to give it a preliminary roasting, after which it was arranged on a frame-work of poles with a fire underneath for a second roasting, this process requiring great care, as the aroma of the maté depended upon it; the required amount of heat was only learned by long experience. After two or three days of drying, the leaves were reduced to coarse powder, and packed in *serons*, or bags of raw hide, which shrank when

exposed to the sun, thus completing the preparation of the maté for shipment. The preliminary roasting is still done on some of the yerbales in large copper pans over a slow fire, after which the maté is put in bags and stored away until it is shipped to the harbor of export in wagons drawn by long trains of mules or in the river-boats that carry this freight in great quantities.

More than twenty million people in South America drink maté daily, and find it a more acceptable beverage than tea or coffee, having none of the deleterious effects of these drinks even when taken to excess, but, on the contrary, promoting digestion, soothing the nerves, and giving immediate activity to the brain. According to high scientific authority, it is the only beverage which leaves absolutely no bad after-effects upon those who drink it in large or small quantities. Its dynamic value is enormous; by its use the cowboys of the plains and soldiers in battle are enabled to endure the most terrible fatigue and even to live for days without solid food. During the Paraguayan war, it was an indispensable agent in preserving the lives of the fever-stricken armies, and many times it formed the sole means of sustenance during long and wearisome marches. The importance of this fact has been so impressed upon government officials in foreign countries that extensive experiments are now being made with this drink in the armies of France and Germany, it is said, with altogether satisfactory results, and it has been recommended to the United States government by some of its officials in South America as a valuable drink for its soldiers in the hot climates of Cuba and the Philippines. As a safeguard against insomnia, it is highly spoken of, and in those countries where it is a constant beverage such affections as gout and indigestion are unknown. As a drink, it is especially beneficial to those



MATÉ BLOSSOMS.



RIVER-BOAT LOADED WITH YERBA MATÉ.

of sedentary habits and to brain-workers who find the use of coffee or tea harmful to the nervous system. In certain parts of South America, where maté is the only drink, the people present an appearance of healthy activity, freshness, and good physical condition which cannot be attributed solely to the influence of climate or circumstances, but seems rather to be the result, in a great measure, of abstemious

habits, fostered by an absolute freedom from the use of intoxicants—which are seldom in demand among maté-drinkers—or of tea and coffee, so harmful under some conditions, and their consequent benefit from the therapeutic qualities of the yerba maté, which they drink in unlimited quantities. *Gaiichos*, guanaco hunters, miners, and soldiers are contented with rations that include nothing more than a hard piece of bread or a bit of dried beef, providing they are well supplied with maté. In every sphere of life and in every circle of society the South Americans enjoy this excellent beverage. In some homes it is the custom to take maté several times a day, sipping it from the *cuya* through a *bombilla*. The *cuya* is a diminutive calabash, usually about the size of an orange, with a small opening, through which the maté is put in and hot water poured over it, often not larger than just



INDIANS CARRYING YERBA MATÉ TO THE MILL.

sufficient to admit the bowl of the *bombilla*. *Cuyas* are of every shape and size, some richly ornamented and others of the most primitive manufacture. The *bombillas*, or, as the name signifies, “little pumps,” are utilized similarly to the “straws” through which North Americans sip their lemonade, though quite different in appearance, being usually

made of metal, with a small perforated bulb or strainer at the end, in order that the tea may be imbibed without any of the maté leaves being drawn into the mouth. There is wide latitude for the indulgence of individual taste in the selection of a *cuya* and *bombilla*, some of which are very handsome and elaborate, beautifully carved, and mounted in silver or gold. After every few sips, a fresh supply of hot water must be poured over the tea-leaves, to which sugar and cream are added if preferred. In most homes of the better class, a neat little servant stands ready to replenish the *cuya* as required. A custom of the maté countries, which is symbolic of the most cordial hospitality, consists in passing the *cuya* around, so that every one present may partake of the beverage, usually through the same *bombilla*, after the manner of the “pipe of peace.” Foreigners quickly learn to enjoy the maté, sometimes following the native custom of taking it from the *cuya*, but quite as often

using a cup and saucer in "five-o'clock" style. Although it is an acquired taste to some extent, there are few who do not become confirmed maté-drinkers after a few trials of the beverage, and the most enthusiastic native is not louder in praise of its wonderful qualities than the newly-won advocate from across the seas. The amount of maté used in preparing the drink varies according to individual taste. An ounce of the yerba to a quart of water is generally the proportion used, the tea being strained and ready for serving after steeping ten or fifteen minutes. It may be sweetened to taste and a little milk or rum added, if preferred. Iron utensils should be avoided, as they give a dark color to the beverage.



YERBA-MATÉ TREES.

Sometimes the maté is put in a bag and hot water poured over it, thus obviating the necessity of straining when serving it in the cup-and-saucer style, though the majority of "confirmed" maté-drinkers prefer the *cuya* and *bombilla* of South American custom on all occasions, and certainly there is the element of the picturesque in this quaint fashion.

A chemist of world-wide reputation, who has had years of experience in analyzing teas in London, says: "Yerba-maté tea must be considered a most valuable beverage. It is especially beneficial to the stomach and nerves. It has great sustaining power, but does not irritate. Its effect is soothing and quieting, with no deleterious consequences of any kind. Maté may be freely drunk after it has stood forty-eight hours, without any unpleasant



CUYAS.

disturbances, even in strong decoction. It remains just as healthful as when freshly made." Dr. Mantegazza, the great Italian physician, says that maté is especially good for those who are under great mental strain, whose labors are chiefly intellectual. Dr. Assis Brasil, the Brazilian Minister at Washington, in a valuable article on the subject of yerba maté, speaks of it as "a quencher of thirst *par excellence* and a great restorative."

The exports of maté from Paraná, one of the greatest yerba-maté States in Brazil, amount annually to about twenty-five thousand tons, valued at one million dollars gold, or over two hundred thousand pounds sterling. The State of Matto Grosso produces a particularly fine quality, and all the southern States have a soil and climate favorable to its growth. Under the present system of preparing the maté in large factories for shipment, some of the more important companies owning vast estates have their mills thoroughly equipped with modern conveniences for this purpose. The Matte Larangeira Company has extensive mills in Rio de Janeiro, Buenos Aires, and other cities, fitted up with necessary machinery, including hydraulic presses, with workshops, electric lights, and other accessories of a big establishment. When the maté is taken to one of these mills, it is first triturated and separated from the stems and dust by means of mechanical crushers, sifters, and ventilators; when sufficiently pulverized, it is passed through troughs into a second grinder, the twigs being again sifted and broken, after which they are separated and classified, some being used as fuel, and the rest forming an indispensable part of the maté sent to consumers. Within recent years its cultivation has received every attention, especially since the Paraguayan war, when the great demand for it resulted in the accumulation of several fortunes among the yerba-maté proprietors, the profits reaching a hundred per cent. clear of all expenses in some cases, so great was the demand.

As Brazil distinguished herself during the nineteenth century among the commercial nations of the world by making her coffee an almost universal beverage, it is not too much to predict that results as wonderful will be accomplished during the present century with her tea, the yerba maté, which is rapidly winning favor in the homes of North America and Europe, and may even find its way to the Orient, the home of its Chinese rival.





WATER-FALL NEAR CURYTIBA, PARANÁ.

CHAPTER XXXII

PARANÁ



A PATHWAY IN PARANAGUÁ, PARANÁ.

THE picturesque scenery and salubrious climate of the State of Paraná are attractions exceeded only by the more substantial advantages of a fertile soil and abundant natural wealth. The pleasure-seekers and tourists who now crowd the various mountain resorts of Europe will some day discover that in the *serras* of Paraná are more magnificent vistas, richer color-effects in foliage and blossoms, more wonderful contrasts in the light and shade that envelop alternately the sunny crests of the mountains and their unfathomable gorges, than in many of the Old World's most famous highlands. But a more potent charm to the practical mind exists in the rich agricultural resources of this favored State, which occupies a region of the greatest productiveness,

watered by numerous rivers that cross it from the mountain chain of the Serra do Mar, or, by a felicitously apt comparison, the "Alleghanies" of South America.

Originally forming a part of the capitania of São Paulo, Paraná became a separate province in 1853 under the administration of the illustrious statesman Conselheiro Zacarias de Vasconcellos, afterward elected a Senator of the empire. From this date the progress of the territory began to march rapidly: steamers visited its ports, its rivers were explored, telegraph lines were built; foreign colonies immigrated in increasing numbers, public roads were opened up, the development of the educational and social interests of the State received

special attention, the press became a greater political and social factor through the increasing number of periodicals, public charities were instituted, and many of the social and political clubs, which to-day wield an important influence in the affairs of the State, among others the Club Coritibano, were organized. A realization of the great possibilities of the province began to be impressed upon the people, and private enterprises were established throughout the country for the development of its vast resources.

The territory of Paraná covers eighty-six thousand square miles, nearly equalling the area of Great Britain, and is divided by the Serra do Mar into two distinct zones: the littoral,



PUBLIC GARDEN, CURYTIBA.

comprising a narrow strip of low land along the sea-coast; and that of the interior plateaus, extending from the Serra do Mar to the western boundary, marked by the river Paraná, separating the State from the republic of Paraguay. The northern boundary of Paraná is partly traced by the Paranapanéma branch of the Paraná, which divides it from São Paulo; to the east the State extends to the Atlantic Ocean; on the south lies the State of Santa Catharina, separated from Paraná by the river Iguassú, which forms a confluence with the Paraná River at the southwestern frontier of the State. The principal tributaries of the Paraná, in addition to the Paranapanéma and the Iguassú, are the Ivahy, or Rio dos Patos, and the Piquiry. The scenery along the Paraná and its tributaries is magnificent, some of

the water-falls, such as the Salto das Sete Quedas, Salto do Osorio, and Salto do Rio dos Patos, which mark the descent of the Paraná, the Iguassú, and the Ivahy, respectively, being unsurpassed in picturesque grandeur; the channel of the Itararé, a branch of the Paranapanéma, is subterranean at several intervals along its course. All the rivers are navigable for a considerable distance, facilitating transportation in the districts which are not traversed by railway lines. The land

lying along the sea-shore is, generally, flat and marshy, and the climate less agreeable than in the interior, the temperature varying from 10° to 35° centigrade; on the plateaus and in the mountainous regions of the State the climate is salubrious, and the temperature ranges from 4° to 30° centigrade, with a mean annual register of 17° . The altitude of the tablelands varies from five hundred to four thousand feet, affording a variety of conditions of soil and climate suitable to the development of all kinds of agricultural crops. From the prolific rice-fields of the coast country to the vast cattle-plains of the interior, the industries of the State include the cultivation of most of the products of tropical and temperate zones. In addition to the cultivated crops, the spontaneous harvests are rich and valuable, especially in the yerba-maté forests, which flourish throughout the State wherever the altitude reaches two thousand feet, being especially abundant along the course of the Iguassú River and its tributaries. The *Ilex paraguayensis*, as the yerba-maté tree is known to science, has



RUA 15 DE NOVEMBRO, CURYTIBA.



POST-OFFICE, CURYTIBA.

grown so rapidly in importance of recent years, since the introduction of the beverage into European and North American homes, that its product forms one of the chief articles of export in Paraná, and more than twenty large mills for preparing the maté for market have been established in various cities of the State. But though this article constitutes a very important source of revenue, and the increasing development of the trade promises immense wealth

to the State, it represents only one of many resources for the promotion of which the conditions are excellent; there is only one deterring influence, the lack of a population sufficiently numerous to cultivate a territory of such vast dimensions and possessing such unlimited stores. It is impossible to attain the greatest advancement and prosperity industrially without a large farming community. There is so much to attract the immigrant of the industrious class to Paraná, that there seems no reason why the foreign colonies should not grow rapidly under the excellent opportunities that exist. With the extension of new railroads into the interior, and the constant improvements of different kinds that are being



HOUSE OF CONGRESS, CURYTIBA.

made in the State, the inducements grow continually more favorable to the foreign resident, whether farming colonist or investor. The present population of Paraná is four hundred thousand inhabitants, the largest proportion living in the eastern section of the State, which is well provided with railways and in every respect more developed than the vast interior plains. The colonies settled in the neighborhood of Curytiba, the State capital, are very prosperous, cultivating with satisfactory results a great variety of products, including Indian corn, barley, oats, wheat, rye, and potatoes; wine-growing is one of the industries of this section, and in the districts of Lapa, Palmeira, and Ponta Grossa cattle-raising is the chief source of revenue. Cattle and sheep thrive with little attention, and the future offers great

promise for the development of this interest; dairy-products are not exported to any extent, though there seems no apparent reason why these should not form one of the leading features of trade. Next in importance to the yerba maté as an article of export from Paraná are the splendid hardwoods which the forests yield in almost endless variety, though the trade in this product has not yet been developed to the full extent of its possibilities,

owing to the difficulties of transportation. The Paraná pine, or *Araucaria brasiliensis*, is one of the prominent features of the landscape in this State, where it sometimes grows to a height of one hundred and twenty-five feet, with a diameter of six feet; it is exported to all the States of Brazil for building purposes, as well as various other uses to which pine is especially adapted; the fruit is very nutritious; the resin contains turpentine, pitch, and a gum similar to gum arabic, which give it great therapeutic value, and the nuts are extensively used in the manufacture of buttons. The mineral wealth of Paraná includes gold,



A RUSTIC SCENE IN THE PUBLIC GARDEN, CURYTIBA.



STREET IN CURYTIBA, SHOWING THE AMERICAN SCHOOLS ON EACH SIDE.

which is found in the districts of Morretes, Rio Negro, and João dos Pinhaes, in the southeastern part of the State, and at Tibagy, in the central part; diamonds, found in the rivers Tibagy and Jordão; iron, mined everywhere in the State; manganese ore of exceptional richness, found a few miles northwest of Curytiba and also near the port of Antonina, a short distance from Paranaguá; lead and quicksilver near the southern border; alum in Ponta Grossa, and bituminous slate, marble, lime, kaolin, and granite in numerous sections. The manufacturing industries keep pace with the development of other interests. Saw-mills are established at several points along the line of the Paraná railway; the match factories of Curytiba supply the trade of several States; companies are extensively engaged



PALACE OF THE GOVERNOR, CURYTIBA, PARANÁ.

in the manufacture of furniture; breweries, factories for preparing dried meats, preserves, and divers products are numerous; the industrial interests of Withers & Co. are quite extensive; there are factories for making soap, candles, hats, and shoes; fine porcelain is manufactured from kaolin, a large establishment for this industry having been opened a few years ago at Colombo, near Curytiba.

The chief port of the State, Paranaguá, is visited regularly twice a week by Brazilian steamers of the Lloyd-Brazileiro Company and the Costeiro Line, and, on an average, a hundred foreign steamers annually call here on trips between Rio de Janeiro and Buenos Aires. The Paraná railroad connects the sea-port with the State capital, Curytiba, sixty

miles distant, a picturesque city of about fifty thousand inhabitants, situated in the high table-land of the Serra do Cubatão, three thousand feet above the level of the sea. Curitiba is one of the chief cities of southern Brazil, having many of the modern improvements that add to the attractiveness of a city,—a good street-car system, broad and well-paved streets, fine public buildings, churches, and schools. The government buildings are handsome white stone edifices of modern construction and architecture, and the post-office is a commodious and attractive structure, unsurpassed in southern Brazil. The Hospital de Caridade is one of the numerous charities most creditable to the humanitarian principles of



THE AMERICAN CHURCH, CURYTIBA.

the people, extending its beneficent protection to hundreds of the poor; and the educational opportunities open to the children of the State may be judged from the official budget showing that more than two hundred public schools for primary instruction are supported by the government, in addition to which there are many of the higher grade institutions,—the Escola Normal; the Escola Carvalho, in which are courses in the arts and industries; and the Gymnasio Paranaense, which, in addition to scientific studies, includes instruction in English, French, German, and Latin. The Escola Americana was organized in January, 1892, by Miss Mary P. Dascomb and Miss E. Kuhl, who were formerly connected with the

American schools of São Paulo, of which this is one of the principal branches; about two hundred pupils, boys and girls, are in regular attendance, and a boarding-school for girls is conducted in connection with the day-school. Miss Dascomb and Miss Kuhl are very highly esteemed as educators of ability and ladies of charming social qualities. They are firm believers in a future of the greatest prosperity for their adopted State. Paraná enjoys every benefit of good government, under the judicious administration of Dr. Francisco Xavier da Silva, a gentleman highly esteemed for his progressiveness and the earnest endeavor with which he seeks to promote the interests of his government. Dr. Xavier da Silva has been a prominent figure in the political advancement of his country for many years, and has won many admirers not only in his native State, but throughout Brazil. Another leader of importance in the history of Paraná politics is Senator Vicente Machado, a native Paranaense, and a graduate of the São Paulo Law School, who occupied several important official positions under the empire, and was elected first governor of Paraná under the republic; he did good service for the Federal government during the naval revolution, and, since 1895, has been a Senator of the republic, prominent in the affairs of his State. Among other leaders in the political, commercial, and educational advancement of Paraná, one of the best known, especially through his important scientific articles on the subject of yerba maté, is Dr. Victor Ferreira do Amaral, a physician of high standing, and the president of the State Society of Agriculture, which in 1900 held an exposition in Curytiba that attracted thousands of visitors, the chief feature being the yerba maté.

Prosperous and growing towns are scattered throughout the State, the centres of yerba maté, mining, or agricultural industries. There is much to encourage immigration in the statement of Saint-Hilaire respecting Paraná: "Of all the States of Brazil, none offers greater advantages to the European farmers; they find here a temperate climate; pure air, the fruits of their country, a land in which they can raise all the produce that may be grown in their own country."



PUBLIC WASH-HOUSE FURNISHED BY THE GOVERNMENT.

CHAPTER XXXIII

SANTA CATHARINA



SUBURBS OF FLORIANOPOLIS, SANTA CATHARINA.

THE State of Santa Catharina affords one of the most favorable examples of successful foreign colonization to be found in Brazil. Prosperous farming communities are developing the agricultural industries of the State, and commercial enterprise, which always accompanies industrial progress, is rapidly extending foreign relations. Possessing the advantage of one of the best harbors on the Brazilian coast, the State requires only that an adequate system of railways, connecting the interior with the sea-ports, should be perfected, in order to achieve the greatest results in trade; the natural resources of the State are abundant, the soil is suitable to the cultivation of all the products of the temperate zone, and the climate is superb. The area of the State is about thirty thousand square miles, and its population half a million. Santa Catharina was one of the first points of discovery on the South American coast, the navigator João Dias de Solis having

visited it in 1515, and Sebastian Cabot in 1525, though it was not settled until 1650, when Francisco Dias Velho Monteiro and his four sons established themselves on the island which extends along the coast midway between the northern and southern limits of the present State for a distance of about twenty-five miles. Monteiro gave to the island the name of Santa Catharina in honor of his daughter, immediately erecting a chapel to Nossa Senhora do Desterro [Our Lady of the Exile] upon the site of the present State

capital of Florianopolis. The mainland remained unsettled until about the end of the seventeenth century, when the Paulistas founded an agricultural colony first known as *Prazeres*, from the church of Nossa Senhora dos Prazeres [Our Lady of Joys] erected at this place, though afterward the name was changed to *Villa dos Lages*, by which it is known to-day as one of the thriving towns of the State. There was no extensive colonization of the State until the eighteenth century, when King João V. sent out families from the Azores to settle the mainland and the island. In 1813, the present limits were established, and in 1824 the territory became a province of the empire, the first president being João Rodrigo de Carvalho. From this date, the settlement of the country progressed gradually, until, in 1849, a new impetus was given to its growth by the establishment of the German colony of Joinville in the northeastern part of the State, a few miles inland from the bay of São Francisco, which is one of the best harbors along the South American coast. The conditions surrounding this settlement were favorable to development, and within a few years the success of the enterprise was apparent in one of the most flourishing of the towns to



LAKE AT BLUMENAU, SANTA CATHARINA.

be found in southern Brazil; broad, shaded streets fronting pretty cottages and even more pretentious residences, and attractive gardens beautified with shrubs and flowers, gave to the town an appearance of prosperity in keeping with the advancement made, which was gratifying to both the founders and the colonists. Joinville now has a population of about forty thousand inhabitants, nearly all Brazilian citizens, and it is the chief town of a rich agricultural district, as well as a manufacturing centre of importance. Hundreds of wagon-loads of yerba maté pass through the city to the sea-port of São Francisco for shipment; tobacco, wheat, rye, barley, and dairy-products are grown in this district; and in the vicinity there are distilleries, breweries, saw-mills, and other manufacturing interests.

Shortly after the establishment of the Joinville colony, Dr. Blumenau founded the German colony which still bears his name, and chose as a site for its location a tract of land in the most fertile region of the State, bordering on the river Itajahy, southwest of Joinville and northwest of Florianopolis, about equidistant between these two ports. Blumenau has developed rapidly; it now numbers about fifty thousand inhabitants, and has

many important manufactories. Its chief port is Itajahy, situated at the mouth of the river of the same name. The Itajahy River, varying in width from five hundred feet to a fourth of a mile between Blumenau and the sea-port, is navigable by small vessels for thirty miles. The exports of Blumenau include tobacco, sugar, wheat, and dairy-products. It is one of the most picturesque of the many attractive towns of Santa Catharina, and the predominance of Teutonic types and customs gives it an appearance less Brazilian than German, though its inhabitants are loyal Brazilians in their love for the land of their adoption. Near Blumenau there is another German colony, Brusque, which also ships its products through the port of Itajahy. Not only have the foreign colonies shown steady development, but



CASCADE IN SANTA CATHARINA.

other enterprises of the government have been most successful. Since the discovery of coal at Tubarão, in the southern district, a railroad has been built as far as the Serra do Mar, passing through the mining region, and connecting with Imbituba and Laguna on the coast. Laguna, one of the first cities of the State in importance, is situated on a narrow tongue of land, and overlooks the bay of Laguna to the west and the Atlantic Ocean to the east; an interesting feature of the city is the immense *sambaqui*, or shell-mound, of prehistoric construction, piled up near the ocean. Similar formations are found at other points along the coast, notably at the picturesque little harbor of Porto Bello, about thirty miles south of Itajahy, which has further interest for the archæologist because of the peculiar hieroglyphics that mark the sea-front of the little rocky island of João de Cunha in this harbor.

In addition to the Dona Theresa Christina Railway at Tubarão, several more important lines have been projected, which, when completed, will cross the State from north to south, forming part of the coast-line of railways of Brazil, and from east to west, connecting the State capital, Florianopolis, with the Paraná River at the junction of the Iguassú. The climate of the State is uniformly temperate and salubrious, though a little warmer along the sea-coast than in the interior. It is generally compared by travellers with that of Italy. In addition to the agricultural products usually grown in this latitude, the State exports flax, silk-worms, and honey. Wine-making is an industry of increasing importance, and quinces, apples, limes, and other fruits constitute the source of an important revenue derived from the export of fine jellies and preserves. The extensive forests of the interior yield many valuable hardwoods, which are shipped to foreign ports. The annual exports exceed a million dollars gold in value. The capital city of Santa Catharina, Florianopolis, which has a population of thirty thousand people, is built on a sloping hill-side, and presents a very picturesque aspect when viewed from an approaching steamer, its spacious public buildings and beautiful residences appearing to distinct advantage against their background of luxuriant verdure. The palace of the governor is a handsome modern structure of white stone, elegantly furnished; the Charity Hospital, the theatre Santa Isabel, the numerous schools and churches, are commodious and well appointed; the public library contains a collection of five thousand volumes. The public gardens and suburban resorts are rich in tropical foliage and flowers. The State enjoys all the advantages of good government, the administration of the present executive, Dr. Felipe Schmidt, who enjoys the full confidence and esteem of the people, being marked by prudent and judicious measures in every department. The present State officials are alert in perfecting the educational, industrial, and other institutions. In the rapid development of southern Brazil, Santa Catharina keeps in the front rank with the best of her neighbors.



STREET SCENE IN FLORIANOPOLIS.



PRAÇA GENERAL DEODORO, PORTO ALEGRE. SHOWING TREASURY BUILDING AND THEATRE.

CHAPTER XXXIV

RIO GRANDE DO SUL



JARDIM PUBLICO, PELOTAS.

NO State of the Brazilian Union has been more prominent politically from the earliest days of its history than Rio Grande do Sul, and no State has made more rapid progress socially and industrially within the past few years. Originally, this territory, which covers an area of nine thousand square leagues, the Uruguay River forming the northern and western boundaries, the Atlantic Ocean the eastern, and the republic of Uruguay the southern, belonged to the disputed possessions on the banks of the Uruguay which were claimed

both by Spain and Portugal, and it was the scene of continued warfare for many years. During these troublous periods, the people developed a spirit of military valor and unyielding independence which found expression in many noble deeds of patriotism, a great many of the nation's most distinguished generals having been cradled in this State, which gave to Brazil the immortal hero General Bittencourt, and the invincible leader General Osorio. The records of military glory for many years eclipsed the annals of more prosaic achievements in industrial development, though in the intervals of quiet that marked the history of the country after it became a province of the empire in 1822, and especially during the government of its first president, Visconde de São Leopoldo, great advancement was made in colonization, education, and the charitable enterprises that are always indicative of social progress. The greatest development of its vast resources has been accomplished within a



BUSINESS STREET, PORTO ALEGRE.

comparatively short time, and at the present rate of growth there is no limit to the prosperity near at hand for the enterprising people who now control an important share of the commercial interests of Brazil, and are annually extending the trade of their State.

Rio Grande do Sul is the southernmost State of Brazil. The Serra do Mar, or, as this coast range is called in the more southern sections of Brazil, Serra Geral, divides the interior from the coast as in all the States through which it passes; but the coast region of Rio Grande do Sul differs from that of the more northern States, being covered by lakes and lagoons; the principal of these is the Lagoa dos Patos, about a hundred and fifty miles long by thirty miles wide, which is navigable by ocean vessels, though at some seasons, when the tide is low, delays are occasioned by the sand-banks; the Itapoan lighthouse is picturesquely situated in the Lagoa dos Patos for the guidance of pilots taking ships to the various ports. In addition to the range that extends along the coast, there is a series of *serras* crossing the State from the Serra do Mar, at a point near the northern extremity of the Lagoa dos Patos, to the western boundary; this range divides the interior of the State into two natural regions: the northern, which is watered by innumerable tributaries flowing northward into the river Uruguay, that marks the State boundary line; and the southern, traversed by the lower tributaries that flow west to join the Uruguay, and also by the rivers that flow east into the Lagoa dos Patos, principally the Jacuhy, Taquary, and Camaquam. The northern section of the State is covered with vast and fertile *campos*, or plains, and *seriões*, or woodlands; it has not



LANDING, RIO GRANDE DO SUL.

been developed, except to a limited extent, but is suitable for cattle-raising and wheat-growing; valuable mineral deposits have been located in this region. The southern part of the State has been subject to more favorable conditions for industrial growth than the northern districts, and is generally cultivated; two lines of railway cross it from the sea-coast to the Uruguay River, and numerous agricultural colonies have been established in the most favorable localities; the coal mines in the southeast, and the copper, gold, and other minerals, have been worked only to a limited extent. The chief revenue of the State is derived from the vast pasture-lands upon which graze thousands of herds. The



RUA SETE DE SETEMBRO, PORTO ALEGRE.

dried-beef exports amount annually to more than five million dollars in value, the town of Pelotas alone disposing of half a million head of cattle for this purpose. In addition to the wealth derived from the cattle-ranches, the State receives a large revenue from the export of tobacco, leather, wool, cotton, fruits, and vegetables. The climate of Rio Grande do Sul is moderate and agreeable. There are four seasons of the year: summer, during January, February, and March; autumn, April, May, and June; winter, July, August, and September; and spring, October, November, and December. Summer and winter are the most pronounced seasons; in winter, the cold wind from the Andes causes freezing weather, and in the more elevated regions of the State the winter is intensely cold, the lakes freeze



ISLAND OF PEDRAS BRANCAS, NEAR PORTO ALEGRE.

over, and snow falls; in summer the heat is intense, especially in the northern sections, the temperature sometimes rising to 40° centigrade. The State is renowned for the salubrity of its climate, malaria being practically unknown even in the vicinity of the lakes and rivers. Rio Grande do Sul has one million five hundred thousand inhabitants, and many thriving cities are established throughout

the State, along the lines of railway or steamship transportation. The capital city, Porto Alegre, is the most important city of southern Brazil. Situated near the northern extremity of the Lagoa dos Patos, surrounded by a number of large and prosperous German colonies, and connected by railway with the interior cities and towns, the capital is the commercial and industrial centre of a fertile territory covering thousands of square miles. It is built on a picturesque promontory jutting out into the lake from the eastern bank and facing a narrow passage at the mouth of an estuary formed by the confluence of the Jacuhy and the Gua-
hyba rivers. The city was originally settled, in 1742, by colonists from the Azores, who gave it the name of *Porto dos Cascaes*, which was changed thirty years later to its present name, *Porto Alegre* [the Joyful Port]; the foundation of its commercial prosperity was laid when large colonies of Germans were established there after the Prussian revolution of 1848. The city numbers a hundred thousand inhabitants, of whom nearly one-fourth are of German descent. It is metropolitan in appearance, having broad, well-paved streets, handsome public buildings, large business houses, and attractive residences and parks; electricity and gas are used for lighting purposes, and the water-works system is excellent. Among the



QUARTEL AND INTENDENCIA, RIO GRANDE DO SUL.



CASCADE IN RIO GRANDE DO SUL.

manufacturing interests, of which Porto Alegre has an important number, are steam saw-mills, furniture factories, planing-mills, breweries, safe-deposit vaults, foundries, soap and candle factories, woollen-mills, and establishments for lithographing. Although essentially a business city, Porto Alegre is provided with the best educational institutions of southern Brazil. In addition to the military school placed here by the national government, there are several colleges of importance. In 1897, the primary-school system of the State was completely reorganized, and a college of engineering was established. A fine library of several thousand volumes is accessible to the public in the Bibliotheca building, in which the normal school is also conducted. A number of beautiful churches ornament the principal praças and streets; the arsenal of war, which overlooks the Praça da Independencia, was founded in 1723, by the Azorian colonists. The palace of the president is a handsome stone structure overlooking the Praça General Deodoro; it is of modern design, and is furnished throughout with artistic taste. The Intendencia, or municipal building, is spacious, and the interior arrangements suggest comfort and convenience. Among other buildings of importance are the numerous hospitals, particularly the Beneficiencia Portuguesa, and the chief theatre, which is located near the treasury building, on the Praça General Deodoro.

The principal sea-port of the State is Rio Grande do Sul, situated at the southern extremity of the Lagoa dos Patos, where a narrow strait connects the lagoon with the ocean. It lies on a sandy peninsula, and is the port of entrance for all vessels going to Pelotas and Porto Alegre. The population of the city of Rio Grande do Sul is about twenty-five thousand; there are several modern buildings, and the schools and libraries occupy attractive locations.

Pelotas, the second city of the State in importance, lies on the southwestern border of the Lagoa dos Patos, a few miles from the city of Rio Grande do Sul, with which it is connected



MATRIZ, PORTO ALEGRE.

by railway. It also constitutes the eastern terminus of a railroad which extends across the State in a northwesterly direction as far as the Uruguay River, passing through the thriving little city of Bagé and the picturesque town of Alegrete, and having as a western terminus the city of Uruguayana, the most populous of the western district, with ten thousand inhabitants, having important frontier connections and an extensive traffic. Pelotas has a population of more than forty thousand, and presents a very attractive appearance, with its broad, shaded avenues and handsome buildings. It is a wealthy and growing centre of trade, the exportation of *xarque*, or jerked beef, amounting to immense sums annually; there are also in the city several breweries, steam flour-mills, glass factories, and others of

significant importance. In educational matters the city is well advanced, and its charitable institutions are equal to the best in the State.

The richest foreign colony, which, however, is no longer foreign, as its ten thousand inhabitants are principally of Brazilian birth and many of Brazilian parentage, is the prosperous municipality of São Leopoldo, twenty miles from the State capital, on the line of the New Hamburg railway, and in the heart of the richest district in the State. It has several manufactories, and is an attractive place of residence; two colleges, the Collegio São José,



PORTUGUESE HOSPITAL AND CHURCH, PORTO ALEGRE.

founded in 1869, which has three hundred boys in attendance, and a girls' school, established in 1872, which has two hundred and fifty pupils, are among the best educational institutions in the town.

The State of Rio Grande do Sul, while making rapid strides forward in commercial importance, is not neglectful of the intellectual graces that give to society its finest charm. Not only have great generals claimed as their native place the green hill-sides and flourishing groves of this Brazilian southland, but giants in the arena of mental contest have been proud to point to this favored country as their beloved home. Statesmen, orators,

jurists, celebrated educators, and renowned journalists have gone out from the Joyful Port to fight the battle of life with a proud purpose and steady principle, and have won the applause of a grateful nation for contributions to science surpassing in value even the more dazzling accomplishments of military glory; and no State has given a greater number of good soldiers to Brazil than has Rio Grande do Sul. In the arts of peace, a spirit of determination and a clear-headed grasp of the situation are making these people successful in solving the problems of social and political life, and in achieving the greatest prosperity.

Combining the characteristics of a fortunate political leader with the amiable qualities that win the admiration and devotion of hosts of followers, General Julio Castilho is one of the greatest men that Rio Grande do Sul has given to the republic; his countrymen have reason to be proud of the brave man whose love for his State outweighs all other ambitions and absorbs all his interests. To his earnest, determined effort is largely due the rapid advancement which this State has made, placing it among the most progressive and prosperous of the Brazilian Union. Not only during his official term as State president did General Castilho make his administrative power felt for good, but during all his public career he has worked constantly to promote its welfare, and there is no man in southern Brazil better known for his distinguished services.

The present president is Dr. Borges de Medeiros, a gentleman of polished manners and pleasing address, quite a young man to have won the high confidence of the people which his exalted office demands. But the young men of America, both North and South, are the victorious men of the hour, and in southern Brazil especially is this noticeable in public affairs, more particularly in Rio Grande do Sul, "The Prairie State of Brazil."



LIGHTHOUSE OF ITAPOAN, NEAR PORTO ALEGRE.

CHAPTER XXXV

PRIMITIVE INHABITANTS AND FOLK-LORE



INDIAN. BOLIVIAN, OF MANÃOS,
WITH HIS CLOTHING IN ONE
PIECE, MADE FROM THE
FIBRE TURURI.

AS the most advanced civilization is not without traces of its primitive origin, so among the most savage tribes there are customs and characteristics that accord with the canons of refined society. It has been said that an excess of civilization leads back to barbarism, but it may be questioned whether human culture has ever yet reached a plane absolutely above the domain of savage instincts. The boast of aristocracy in the modern world is not essentially different from the claims to precedence among primitive tribes; the high-sounding title of a scion of royalty has its counterpart in the hyphenated superlatives that announce the prowess of a barbarian chief; and the proudly emblazoned coat of arms of a great military leader is not different in significance from the gorgeous head-dress of the aboriginal war-lord, with its dangling scalps. In the record of ancient lineage, the son of the forest yields the palm to none of his usurping conquerors; his "family tree" antedates the sources of the world's proudest dynasties, and its origin can be traced far back to the uncertain realm of speculation. History pauses in wide-eyed wonder upon the threshold of his untraceable past, illumined here and there by evidences of a civilization advanced in scientific knowledge and artistic culture. Archæology has found in America the ruins of a civilization akin to that which flourished in the oldest

empire of the world, proving that long before the European invaded the red man's forests a civilized people inhabited its shores.

In Brazil, especially, the Oriental features of the Indian of the Amazon, his undemonstrative nature, the traditions to which he clings, and many of his customs, are seeming

proofs of his Asiatic origin. The great Brazilian ethnologists, Dr. Barbosa Rodrigues and General Couto de Magalhães, have shown many instances of the similarity that exists in the traditions and symbols, and even in the speech, of the various tribes of North and South America, linking them with the inhabitants of the Eastern Archipelago, Japan, China, Egypt, and India. One of the most interesting of these connecting legends is that which surrounds the *muirá-kitan*, the Sacred Green Stone of the Amazon, which has its exact counterpart in Asiatic traditions; it is also a peculiar fact that the specimens of this stone preserved among the Indians of the Amazon are cut and figured in precisely the same way as those found in Europe and Asia. Dr. Barbosa Rodrigues says that, although the jade



HEAD OF A GOD.

worn as an amulet by the Brazilian Indians is such an extremely hard, fine stone that only a skilled lapidary could cut and polish it, the heirlooms of the savage Amazon tribes are not only beautifully polished, but fashioned as disks and cut in intaglios, representing fishes, horses' heads, hatchets, and other emblems, such as are also found on the jade amulets collected from various sources in the Old World and preserved among the treasures of noted archæologists, some of whom declare that the green jade amulet was made in China twenty-six centuries ago, where it is still prized for its talismanic virtue, being known to the Celestials by the name of "Yu." The Amazon name, *muirá-kitan*, is said to be derived from two Tupinambá words meaning "a knot of wood," the same interpretation applying to the name by which one kind of green jade is called in China, from its peculiar formation. Even the legend of

finding the Amazon stone in the sacred lake is apparently taken from the Chinese annals of the seventh century, that tell of the jade being collected from the river at full moon. In most of the legends of the sacred Amazon stone, it is connected with the "Children of the Sun and the Serpent." General Couto de Magalhães relates an interesting story told him by an Indian chief of the Tocantins country, who declared that his forefathers came from the mountains where the sun died into the country where it was born, and that the chiefs, some days before leaving the home land, sounded the war-horns and shouted the war-cry: "Let us march to the land of the palm, with weapons in our hands, and we shall be the conquerors of it"; and that with this cry they advanced and took possession of the country.

When the Portuguese landed in Brazil they found two leading tribes governing the entire country, the Tupy and the Guarany; and so closely allied were the two languages, that the Jesuits, who undertook the civilization of the natives, found it possible to teach all the tribes by using an adaptation of the Tupy-Guarany, and to this day, notwithstanding the changes that have naturally arisen after four centuries of relations with other barbarian tribes, as well as with the civilized people who have invaded their territory, the Tupy and the Guarany can easily understand each other's language. Besides these two principal tribes, there are many others scattered throughout the country, notably the Botocudos, who have been gradually driven back from the lower river-banks of Bahia, Espirito Santo, and Minas Geraes to the virgin forest of more remote sections. It is claimed by some authorities on the subject, that the Botocudos belong to the Mongolian group of races that came over about the year one hundred of the Christian era, took possession of the Pacific slope of Central and South America, and founded the ancient Peruvian empire; it is said that the Botocudos separated from their fellows and became nomads, following the manners of a degraded tribe. They are different from the other Indian races of Brazil, and bear a strong resemblance in appearance to the Chinese. The Botocudos do not number more than about four thousand, but it is a remarkable fact that they have never been civilized to any extent, although in closer proximity to the populated centres of civilization than other tribes which have yielded more generally to such influences. The name "Botocudo" is indicative of the fashion that prevails among these Indians of wearing disks of wood in the lower lip, and in the lobes of the ears; when these ornaments are first inserted they are very small, being exchanged for larger ones as often as it is possible to stretch the opening for them, until, in some cases, a block measuring three inches in diameter is inserted. All their customs are most primitive; they live in huts made of branches, and have few utensils of any kind, their food consisting of wild animals, fish, wild fruits, and vegetables; it is said that even the more tractable of the Botocudos, who are occasionally induced to work on a plantation, cannot be relied upon to remain for any length of time, but disappear suddenly, without any apparent reason, and never return. The uncivilized Indians of Brazil are comparatively few, not more than a hundred thousand; the half-civilized tribes are numerous in the



INDIAN OF MATTO GROSSO.



AMAZONIAN INDIAN BOY.

interior, along the head-waters of the chief rivers in the Amazon valley especially. The Munducurús, the most numerous and powerful tribe in the Amazon valley, are quite advanced toward civilization. They cultivate the fields, and are the most expert of all the tribes in weaving hammocks, and in the other primitive industries of this region. In the remote interior, the Indians make the finest quality of hammocks, especially of feathers, some of which sell for more than a hundred dollars gold. It is necessary to give the order a long time ahead for these articles, as the Indians do not work rapidly, and they have no established agencies where the goods are kept on sale. A very good hammock of less expensive fabric is made by them and sold everywhere in northern Brazil, as this is one of the necessities of life in the Amazon country, every traveller taking his hammock with him wherever

he goes. These Indians are expert, also, in making the fancy calabashes that are sold all over the world. The method of preparation is simple, but quite unique. The trees are planted anywhere around the houses, the fruit resembling round, green melons, or citrons, more than anything else, and growing on short stems attached to the branches. To make the calabashes, the fruit is first cut in two and the inside thoroughly scraped out, the shells being well soaked to facilitate this work; the gourd is then painted with a solution of *cumati* bark, which, when exposed to the fumes of ammonia, becomes a brilliant black lacquer, proof against hot water, and very durable. The prettiest calabashes are those which have this black coating cut out in fancy designs to show the white shell beneath. The Munducurús are considered the most expert workers in feathers of all the South American tribes, and in lace-making they are also proficient. Each tribe has a "medicine man," who is a soul physician as well as a doctor for bodily ills, being something of an oracle, and regarded as a personage of the very highest gifts. It is a custom among the Munducurús to keep the bones of their dead warriors in the house for three years, after which they are placed in an urn and buried.

Many of the Indian tribes cremate their dead, and this seems to have been an ancient custom, according to evidences supplied by the numerous burial caves that have been discovered in various localities. The burial urns in which the ashes were preserved by these ancient tribes are curiously shaped, and are ornamented with symbols of phallic worship. Among the important archæological discoveries in Brazil made during the last century were those of the Danish scientist Lund, who found, about the year 1840, in the limestone caves of Minas Geraes in the vicinity of the Rio das Velhas, a quantity of human bones; in

the cave of Sumidouro, about fifty miles from Ouro Preto, he discovered the petrified remains of thirty individuals, besides a number of human skulls, of which one was sent to the Rio museum, one to London, and the remainder to Copenhagen. From Professor Lund's description of the peculiarly formed lower jaws, it is generally believed that these fossil remains belonged to a tribe that wore the strange ornaments now used by the Boto-cudos. In the side of one of the mountains belonging to a chain that extends for some distance east of the city of Juiz de Fóra, in the State of Minas Geraes, are three grottoes, excavated in the solid rock, of which one was used in ancient times by the Indians as a burial place; it measures seventy-five feet in length, forty feet at its greatest breadth, and about twelve feet in height. Human remains were found in this cavern, first by Dr. Manoel Bazilio Furtado, and subsequently by other scientists, including Dr. Ladislão Netto in 1875, which disclose the skeletons of Indian men, women, and children, interred in earthen vessels, sometimes wrapped in hammocks, and supposed to have been buried hundreds of years ago.

Much of the prehistoric débris now in existence consists of immense *sambaquis*, or shell mounds for burial purposes, found in southern Brazil, and of the funeral piles in the Amazon country; hieroglyphics on the rocks, curious idols, fetiches, pottery, hatchets, spear-heads, and other remains of antiquity are found in many sections. The most important excavations were made by Dr. Ladislão Netto, of Rio de Janeiro, Professor Orville Derby, of São Paulo, and Dr. Ferreira Penna, of Pará, between the years 1870 and 1880. One of the funeral stations discovered by Dr. Ferreira Penna is an artificial hill, which was apparently built originally in the form of a turtle, an animal that has always played a conspicuous rôle in the myths and traditions of the Amazon; here were found vases engraved or painted, fragments of pottery, idols of baked clay, and burial urns shaped and ornamented according to their use as receptacles for the bones of male or female members of the tribe. Discoveries of polished stone implements are numerous, the greater number of the specimens which are preserved in the Rio museum being of diorite, though there are also several hatchets of quartzite, gneiss, etc., some of which are of proven antiquity, as is the case also with some of the objects from Maranhão, presented to the Anthropological Society of Paris a few years ago.

According to the records which are preserved relating to the trip made by Pedro Teixeira up the Amazon River in 1640, idol worship was found at that time among the Indians, who tied their gods to the prows of their canoes when they went out



A BOTOCUDO MOTHER.



INDIAN ORNAMENTS FROM THE BORDER OF PERU.

to battle. Dr. Barbosa Rodrigues describes one of these idols as representing a beast of prey devouring a turtle; the whole was carved out of soapstone and measured eight inches in height. In the museum of the Trocadéro, at Paris, there is a statue of great antiquity, measuring five feet in height, which was found near Santarem, in the State of Pará, in 1846. All the States have archaeological curiosities of more or less considerable interest, and in many places there are inscriptions cut on the rocks, some with illustrative accompaniment, and others merely traced in indecipherable characters.

A great deal of instructive, as well as entertaining, knowledge respecting the primitive inhabitants of Brazil may be gained from the folk-lore of the country, particularly from that which is of Indian origin; for it may be said that there are three distinct sources from which the traditional stories, popular songs, and philosophical sayings of the people have been derived: the European, which furnished the legends of the early Portuguese settlers; the African, seen in the surviving dances and ditties of the slave days; and the Indian, the truly native folk-lore. The Portuguese immigrants put into their songs and legends the tone of homesickness which oppressed their hearts in a new and foreign country, and they also adapted many of the romances of European or Oriental origin which they had learned in their childhood, but which, through repetition, gradually assumed variations from the original. The negro lore, while revealing the spirit of longing for that lost freedom once enjoyed on the sands of the native desert, is more in the happy, careless vein of contentment that marks the character of the negro, in whatever clime or condition he may be found. The Indian myths and legends are particularly remarkable for the supernatural element that is so conspicuous, and for their metaphysical trend.

The study of Brazilian folk-lore has received the special attention of several distinguished writers, among others Senhor Santa-Anna Nery, whose "Folk-Lore Brésilien" contains a very interesting collection of the ballads, legends, and proverbs familiar in the

early days of Brazil. The homesickness of the Portuguese settler is well expressed in such lines as:

"I am not a son of this land,
I was born over there, far away;
I am here to fulfil Fate's command,
But I'm going back there some day."

One of the romantic legends and songs of European origin, "Reginaldo," relates the adventures of Eginhard, the gallant secretary of Charlemagne, though greatly changed from the original, in the Brazilian version. In the French romance, Eginhard, who loves Charlemagne's daughter, visits her in her boudoir one winter's night; while he is with her, the snow falls, covering the ground so that it is impossible for him to leave without betraying their rendezvous; the lady carries him on her back to a place of safety, but is discovered by her father, who is so struck by this proof of love that he forgives all and sanctions their marriage. In the Portuguese version, the princess makes the first advances. Besides the romances, many of the popular games and songs of childhood are found in slightly differing versions from those of European origin. We all know the numerous little rhymes repeated to decide who shall be "it" in the game of "Blindman's Buff," or in similar trials of childish agility and wit. In Brazil, one form is the following, found at Bahia:

"I am the little widow
From the sea-coast there;
I wish to find a husband,
But I know not where.
Shall I marry this one? yes.
Shall I marry that one? no.
Shall I marry this one? yes;
For I love him so."

Another game well known to children everywhere, and to which different names are given, according to locality, consists in the forming of a circle of boys and girls. These join hands and dance around



AMANAS. CANNIBALS, WITH ARMS AND ORNAMENTS.

one in the centre, whose eyes are covered until a certain signal is given, when those in the ring drop their hands, and the one in the centre must run and seize a partner, leaving the central place to the one who fails. While dancing around, the following rhyme is sung:

“ Madame Dona Sancha,
Covered with silver and gold,
Take away your veil, then,
Your face we would behold.”

The one in the middle, uncovering her face, answers:



AMAZONIAN INDIAN GIRL.

“ I am the daughter of a count,
The grandchild of a king;
Under a stone they made me hide,
A most disgraceful thing.”

The others then sing in chorus:

“ Valentin—tin—tin—
Who is married?
Who is married?
She who is not must remain alone.”

Then each girl makes a rush for a cavalier, and all form in couples; the one who fails to “catch” a cavalier takes her place in the centre of the ring—or, “under the stone.” “Little Sally Walker” has its counterpart in:

“ Constance, my Constance,
Of constancy there’s no such thing;
Everything changes with Fortune,
With the world turns everything.”

“ In the garden of beautiful ladies,
Which one shall I choose?
I choose this one for mine.
Choose thou that one for thine,” etc.

A cradle song of the Amazon country runs somewhat as follows:

“ Tana, Tana, Tana,
Make me my bed.
With what shall I make it?
With a piece of wood.
Where is the wood?”

The fire has burned it.
Where is the fire?
The water has quenched it.
Where is the water?
The cow has drunk it."

The African element in the folk-lore of Brazil has given it a note of spontaneity in strong contrast with the Portuguese and the Indian characteristics. Appreciating the injustice continually done him, the negro framed his opinions in proverbs and couplets of homely but candid sentiment; as, for instance:

"The black man who robs is a thief;
The white man who robs is a chief."

Many ballads and rhymes are devoted to the charms of the mulatto woman, or the "mulatinha."

"Little Mulatinha gossips,
That the devil himself disowns;
They have stolen my money
And left me bewildered—
Ye gods, they are my damnation!"

The mulatinhas, fickle and vain, seem to have played havoc with all hearts, guarding their own jealousy:

"The poor, simple fellow!
He thinks that I adore him
Because he sees me crying!—
God knows for whom I cry!"

In repartee the negro seems to have shown a readiness at once original and expressive, as, for example, the following:

THE MAN:—I passed the Parnahyba,
Sailing on a raft;
The devil is in the petticoats,
And not in the pantaloon.



CAIXANAS. SAVAGE INDIANS, MAN AND WOMAN.

THE WOMAN:—They say that women are false,
 False as false can be;
 But who sold Jesus Christ?
 'Twas a man and not a woman.

Witches and goblins have furnished material for some thrilling stories and legends, especially in the Amazon country, though in many instances the same tradition is current in slightly different versions throughout all the States. The "Yara," according to the Pará version, is, as the name signifies, a water-spirit, that takes particular delight in enticing the young lovers of the neighborhood, so that they forget their true loves and become hopelessly enamored of this cruel water-witch, until she finally carries them away to her river haunt, their friends only learning their sad fate when their dead bodies are washed up on the banks of the stream. The first symptom a lover gives of being under the Yara's spell is the silly laugh which he cannot control; alas, for the peace of mind of the young girl who discovers evidences of too great hilarity in her sweetheart! She is miserable whenever he is out of her sight; she implores him to keep away from the river; but as the temperature in this latitude makes the nocturnal river-bath one of the most delicious of experiences, her counsels do not always prevail, and the Yara's sorcery continues to find victims enough to make her a dreaded rival. The following story illustrates the Manãos version of the Yara's witchery, as related by Canon Bernardino de Souza:

One day, a young *tapuyo* [civilized Indian], the son of a *tuchana* [tribal chief], went out in his canoe to the Cachoeira Grande [great cascade] near Manãos. He was a noble youth, the handsomest of all his tribe. Valiant and fearless, he had no superiors in dexterity with the terrible "sarbacana," whose arrow never failed under his aim to bring down its quarry; no arm could wield the "tacape" with such strength as his; no one could bend the bow with such invincible courage and unerring effect. During the fiestas, he was always the victor in the games, and won respect from young and old. He was the pride of his tribe, and a worthy successor of the old *tuchana*, who so many times had routed the savage Munducurús. Well, as it is said, one day this young *tapuyo* went out in his boat along the little stream of the Cachoeira Grande. It was a splendid afternoon, and the sun, which was already sinking behind the forest-covered hills, threw a glorious reflection across the beautiful bay formed by the Rio Negro. The sky was clear, and the horizon was aglow with the mingled red and gold of the sunset. The canoe of the young *tapuyo* lightly cut the restless waters of the river. The face of the youth was sad, his brow clouded. He returned late from his outing, fastened his little boat to the trunk of a tree, and entering his cabin, spent the night seated on the doorstep, motionless, taciturn, lost in reverie, uttering from time to time disconnected and meaningless words and phrases. And the old *tapuya*, his mother, who loved him with all the inexpressible tenderness of these children of the forest, wept in silence to see the deep sadness that brooded over the heart of her handsome son. "Listen, mother," said the young man; "listen; for to no one but to thee would I tell of the sadness that overwhelms me. A young girl—so beautiful!

so beautiful!—I have not seen one like her among all the girls of Manãos! The evening was beautiful, the canoe was skimming over the water in the direction of the Cachoeira Grande. Suddenly, I heard something like a distant voice singing, so softly and harmoniously that it seemed to mingle with the murmur of the breeze among the palm leaves. As the canoe pushed lightly along, the singing became more distinct. And then I saw—ah, mother, how beautiful she was! How beautiful was the woman that appeared before me! She was seated on the bank of the river. Her hair, a glorious golden color, was bound with the flowers of the *mururé* [a kind of water-lily], and she was singing—singing—ah, mother, as I have never heard any one sing before! Then, her green eyes rested upon me—she smiled—stretched out her arms as if she would embrace me—and disappeared, still singing, in the waters of the *igarapé* which opened to receive her!—Mother, mother, she was so beautiful—this woman that I saw—the sound of her voice as she sang was so delicious!”

From the eyes of the old tapuya the tears fell silently over the bronzed and wrinkled face. “My son,” she murmured, “return no more to the *igarapé*.”

The woman you have seen, my son, is the Yara!—Her smile, it is death!—Listen not to her voice, nor yield to her charm!”—And the young tapuyo, sitting there in the cabin door, buried his head in his hands, and was silent.



CAIXANAS. SAVAGE INDIANS, WITH LANCE AND CROWN OF CREEPERS ON HEAD.

The next day, at sunset, the canoe was lightly dividing the waters of the river, carrying the young tapuyo to the fatal spot, regardless of maternal counsels. What happened to him afterward, no one knows; for he was never seen again. Some fishermen, however, relate that whenever they pass by the igarapé of the Cachoeira Grande at night, they always see, at a distance, the form of a woman who is singing, and beside her a young man. And when one of the more courageous of these fishermen once approached nearer than his comrades, he saw the waters of the igarapé divide, and the two forms disappear within its depths together!

The Indian lore is rich in legends of a historical and religious character. Speaking of the Brazilian Indian, the poet José de Alencar, says: "I think that Brazil is the cradle of humanity, and that the Adam of the Bible, the red man made of clay, was the trunk of this American race, which some suppose to be a degeneration of other races, whilst, on the contrary, it is the common source of them." The story of the creation of the world, as related by the Indians, and given to us by the celebrated writer General Couto de Magalhães, is most interesting, reminding one, in many of its features, of the "Iliad" of Homer. The legend is as follows:

In the beginning, there was no night; it was always day; the night was asleep in the depths of the sea. There were no animals; all things could speak. The daughter of the Cobra-Grande [Great Serpent], it is said, was married to a young man. This young man had three faithful servants. One day he called them to him, and said: "Go you and take a walk, and remain until I send for you; for my wife will not consent to lie down to sleep." The servants went away, and the young man then called to his wife to come and lie down to sleep. The daughter of the Cobra-Grande answered: "It is not yet night." The young man said: "There is no night—there is only day." But his wife replied: "My father possesses the night. If you wish me to sleep, seek it across the great river." The young man called his three servants; the young woman sent them to her father with instructions to bring back a *tucuman* nut [similar to the cocoanut]. The servants went as they were bid, and, arriving at the home of the Cobra-Grande, made known their errand. They were given the tucuman nut, with the injunction: "Do not open it, or all is lost." They started homeward, but were soon arrested by a peculiar noise inside the tucuman nut—"ten, ten, ten!—chi!"—It was the sound of the crickets and little frogs that sing at night time. After they had proceeded some distance, one of the servants said to his companions: "Let us see what the noise comes from." But the leader answered: "No, no, for we should be lost! Let us hurry home!" They went on, but continued to hear the same noise, though they could not make out what it was. At last, unable to restrain their curiosity any longer, they got together in the middle of their boat, lighted a fire, melted the resin that held the nut together, and opened it. Suddenly all became dark. The leader exclaimed: "We are lost, for at this moment the young woman knows that we have opened the tucuman nut!" They continued their way. At the same moment, the young wife said to her husband: "They have let loose the night; let us await the

morrow." Then all those things that were dispersed throughout the woods became transformed into animals and birds; the things that were scattered into the water became water-fowl and fish; the basket was changed into a leopard, the spots of the animal being made of the holes in the basket; the fisher and his boat became water-fowl—his head, the head and beak of the duck, his boat its body, the oars its legs. When the daughter of the Cobra-Grande saw the morning-star, she said to her husband: "The morning is beginning to dawn—I am going to separate the day from the night." Then she unwound a thread, and said to it: "Thou shalt be the *cujubin*." [The "cujubin" is a kind of pheasant



IMPLEMENTS MADE BY THE INCAS, BORDER OF BRAZIL.

with red plumage and a white head; it sings at daybreak. Ornithologists have given it the name of *Penelope cumanensis*.] So she made the *cujubin*, painted the head white with some "tabatinga" [a kind of clay], and the legs red with some "roucou" [*Bixa orellana*], and then said to it: "Thou wilt always sing when the morning begins to dawn." Again she unrolled the thread, and, shaking some ashes over it, said to it: "Thou shalt be the *inambu* [a species of partridge whose note is heard during the night], to sing at certain hours of the night, and when day dawns. Since then, all birds have sung at their appointed times, and all sing at dawn to rejoice at the coming of day. When the three servants returned, their master said to them: "You have not been faithful, you have opened the

tucuman nut, you have let loose the night, and all is lost; and you, too, are changed into monkeys; you will live forever hereafter among the branches of the trees." Their black mouths, and the yellow ring which they have on their arms, it is said, mark where the resin spilled over them when they melted it to open the tucuman.

The Indian story of the Deluge and of the Indian Noah is as follows:

A long, long time ago, the rains fell in great torrents, and water covered all the earth. Everybody climbed up to the tops of the mountains. Only one man remained on the plain, with his wife; this was Tamandaré, who was the strongest and the wisest man in the world. During the night, God used to talk with him, and during the day this great man taught the children of the tribe those lessons which he had learned from heaven. When everybody was running to the mountains, he said to the affrighted ones: "Remain with me, do as I do, and let the flood come." But the people would not listen to him, and sought the high places, leaving him alone with his wife on the plain. Tamandaré took his wife in his arms, and climbed with her into the foliage of a great palm-tree, where they waited until the flood subsided, feeding themselves on the fruits of the palm. The waters rose so that they touched the sky; the earth disappeared, the mountains vanished, everything was submerged except this palm-tree, which, torn up from the earth by the current of the waters, floated always on the top, rising, as the flood rose, above the valley, above the forest, above the mountains. After three days and three nights, during which the waters touched the sky, and all living things perished on the face of the earth, except Tamandaré and his wife, the flood began to abate, and the waters slowly fell again until the earth once more emerged. When day appeared, after the waters fell, Tamandaré observed that the palm-tree was planted in the midst of the plain as before, and he heard the *guanumby* [humming-bird] fluttering his wings. (The "guanumby," according to Indian traditions, brought the souls from the other world to this one, and carried them back again.) Then he came down from the palm tree with his wife, and repeopled the earth.

A remarkable mythical character among the Indians is the Curupira—a little brown man whose feet turn backward so that his tracks are reversed, and any one attempting to run away from him along his trail runs to sure destruction. Some say he is bald, with enormous ears and green teeth—he lives in the forest, and leads people astray. They say he calls in the woods, and when any one follows, he calls again, leading his victim on till lost in the forest; then he kills and eats him. He is also said to be the guardian deity of the forest, punishing any one who destroys or injures the trees. In southern Brazil, the Curupira stories are widely known, one of which is related as follows:

One day, an Indian, hunting in the forest, lost his way. Night overtook him, and he fell asleep at the foot of a tree. The Curupira, the evil genius of the forest, came to him, and awakened him. "What are you doing here?" demanded the Curupira. "I have lost my way, and I am forced to pass the night here," answered the Indian. "Then," said the evil genius, "give me a piece of your heart to eat." Fortunately, the Indian had killed a monkey during his hunt. He turned round, opened the breast of the monkey, and taking out its

heart, gave a piece to the Curupira, who devoured it with much satisfaction, believing it was the heart of the Indian. "It is very good," said the Curupira; "give me the rest of it." The Indian did so, and then asked for a piece of the Curupira's heart. The other, believing that the man had taken out his own heart without suffering any bad effects, opened his breast in turn, and at once fell dead. The Indian, free once more, ran away.

At the end of a year, the Indian, remembering that the Curupira had beautiful green teeth, which would make a fancy collar, went back to the place of their meeting, and, finding the skeleton, began to shake it, in order to get out the teeth. The Curupira suddenly



RUINS OF THE PALACE OF THE INCAS, ON BORDER OF BRAZIL AND PERU.

rose up, smiling at him, and said: "Thanks, my friend, for waking me; I have had a long sleep." To recompense the Indian for this kindness, he presented him with a magic arrow, telling him that henceforth he would be able to kill all the animals he wished with this arrow, on one condition—that he should never reveal its origin. The Indian, who had before been a poor hunter, became the best archer of his tribe. His wife was astonished, and insisted on knowing the secret. He told her all—and immediately fell dead.

According to Senhor Padua-Carvalho, those who were unhappy in love sought some old woman to give them "the bath of fortune"; into the water were thrown some leaves

of *tajas* [caladium] of different kinds, and the odorous roots of the *priprioca*; the unsuccessful lover must throw the water over his head three times, and then cross his arms as if embracing his beloved, while the old woman chants the following prayer: "Wind that blows across this world of Christ, if thou meet 'a certain one,' thou shalt give to her three blows in the heart, that she may think only of me, and come to speak to me. Wind, bring me her thought and her body; that she may have no rest until she sees me, as the Holy Mary had none until she saw her well-beloved Son in His divine tribunal. Thou, beloved one, thou goest, thou comest, thou shalt cry after me! Heart, I break thee; blood, I drink thee; thought, I hold thee; if thou art with another, he will detest thee, he will become obnoxious to thee, as the scum of the river-bank; and I, beloved one, I will become to thee a diamond, clear as the sun, beautiful as the moon, bright as the stars. Wind, if this prayer is granted me, thou wilt turn round, and the beloved one will show herself behind thee."



POTTERY OF THE INDIANS.



RIACHUELO MONUMENT IN BAHIA, COMMEMORATING THE PARAGUAYAN WAR.

CHAPTER XXXVI

NATIONAL CUSTOMS AND CHARACTERISTICS



GAÚCHO OF SOUTHERN BRAZIL.

IN Brazil, as in the United States, the different elements uniting to form the national character have not yet sufficiently crystallized to make it possible to portray the whole in a single type. There are dominant traits in the descendants of the Portuguese, as there are distinctive attributes belonging to the great-grandchildren of the Pilgrim Fathers; but, in both countries, the influence of a mixture of races and nationalities is plainly apparent in the general life, manners, and customs. In Brazil, the extreme north bears the impress of the Indian element, while the coast country of Bahia and Pernambuco gives evidence of African influences. The effect of a mingling of nationalities is seen in every State of the Union, although, until the beginning of the nineteenth century, Portugal permitted no foreign immigration into Brazil, sending every year large colonies from her own territory to

establish themselves in the new province and increase the power and influence of the mother country. But as soon as the foreigners gained a foothold, their presence was felt in the national life and progress, and consequently in the national temper. The Germans have given to the extreme south of Brazil certain manners and customs that distinguish it from other sections; where Italian colonization has predominated, the characteristics of that nationality have gradually influenced the existing civilization; French modes and fashions have been engrafted on the social life of Brazil wherever the relations between these two

countries have been most noticeable, particularly in Rio de Janeiro; and, as friendly intercourse increases year by year between Brazil and the United States, it is safe to prophesy that the beginning of the next century will see these two "Americans" side by side in enterprise and progressiveness, distinctive types of western civilization in contrast to Old World models: "Columbia" representing the aggressive northern spirit, and the fair "Lady of the Southern Cross," that irresistible attractiveness of the southland that brings the world a-wooing.

If, as a celebrated French writer says, "the most salient features of the national character are tenderness and sadness," these emotional qualities, belonging essentially to the poetic children of southern climes, are, among the Brazilians, associated with the more intel-

lectual traits that find expression in ready wit, delicate perception, and imaginative power. A few words and a gesture will often convey more to the quick-witted Brazilian than a long line of reasoning to the slow-thinking inhabitant of a colder zone. A foreigner in Brazil can carry through a conversation with a vocabulary whose poverty would be a source of continual mortification in any other country. Politeness may have a great deal to do with the smoothness of the dialogue under such circumstances, however, for the Brazilian people are extremely considerate of the feelings of others. In addition to this quality, they have great admiration for talent wherever it may be found, and are both patient and painstaking in seeking knowledge through every channel. In consequence, they are pleasing conversationalists, and understand well the art of entertaining. The average traveller in Brazil cannot be relied upon to give correct information regarding



BAHIAN NEGRESS.

the social life of its people, because he does not have the opportunity of becoming intimately acquainted with the best Brazilian families. They are, as a rule, very conservative and exclusive, not caring to enlarge their list of acquaintances unless the introduction comes from a particularly desirable source. But once within that domestic circle, the hospitality is charming and the association most agreeable. The home life of Brazil is beautiful in its unity and harmony. Divorces are unknown, and there are very few bachelors in the land, facts which argue great confidence in the home-making abilities of Brazilian girls and pay a graceful compliment to their womanly qualities. In the history of nations, the importance of the home as "the chief bulwark of the State" has always been recognized, and so long as family ties have exerted an influence in holding a people to the discharge of its highest duty, the impulse has been constantly forward and upward in the struggle for

precedence. Ancient Rome led the world when the sacred "Lares and Penates," the household gods, claimed the first place in popular worship. Brazil cannot retrograde so long as her people give to the home its proper significance as the cradle of patriotism and the chief moulding power in her destiny.

A great deal has been written, sometimes correctly, and quite as often with gross error, relating to the jealousy of Brazilian men and their Oriental methods of guarding the sanctity of the fireside. It is quite true that, in earlier times, every Brazilian house of any pretensions had the "senhoras' apartments," cut off from the rest of the house by a latticed partition, with elaborately ornamented doors leading from the main hall of the *casa*, and arranged elegantly with *salas*, reception-rooms, bedrooms, music-room, in fact, all the comforts and conveniences of life—except absolute freedom; but this custom is explained partly by the unsettled conditions of the country in former days, depriving the women of their natural protectors a great deal of the time, and partly by the peculiar temperament and disposition of the people, who still show some traces of the influence exerted centuries ago by the Moors over the customs and manners of their Portuguese ancestors. To-day, this mediæval custom is vanishing; and, though the Brazilian ladies themselves complain less than foreigners about its abuses, maintaining that the feeling of security which it afforded outweighed any unhappy ideas of imprisonment, now that the occasion for such a custom does not exist, it is rapidly disappearing. Brazilian women go shopping, visiting, and even promenading, when they feel so inclined, usually accompanied, but not always observing even this last vestige of the old-time exclusiveness. In their homes they are charming hostesses, overlooking no detail that may contribute to the enjoyment of guests. At the frequent official balls and receptions of the capital, the ladies are handsomely gowned, generally showing a preference for Parisian styles; every Brazilian loves dancing, though there are many ladies of the extremely conservative set who never attend public functions. An educated and well-bred Brazilian woman of the best society often speaks three or four languages, and it is not unusual to find her familiar with half a dozen; as a rule, she has enjoyed the advantages of foreign travel, and is a graduate of an excellent school in Paris or Lisbon; she may also be an accomplished artist, though art is not made a "fad" among Brazilian ladies, as it is with their North American sisters. Music, on the other hand, is a social accomplishment that always forms an important feature in a young Brazilian girl's education. In one of the beautiful homes of Bahia, the three daughters of the family are excellent musicians; two of them sing remarkably well, having received their training under famous teachers in Europe; the eldest daughter, in addition to both the accomplishments named, can converse fluently in English, French, German, Spanish, and Italian, besides, of course, her native tongue, Portuguese; none of these young ladies are out of their teens, yet in womanly grace and tact they are above criticism, while their sweet naïveté, characteristic of the *jeune fille* of the new Brazil, is irresistible.

The delightful evening parties that constitute a feature of Brazilian social life are particularly enjoyable, because of the interesting nature of the entertainment provided. In

addition to dancing, which is indispensable, there is often a "professor" engaged to sing, give instrumental music, readings, or to perform wonders of rapid calculation, sleight of hand, or fortune-telling, as a diversion. The custom of afternoon calling is not so popular in Brazil as in some other countries, and there are not so many dinners, luncheons, and receptions to pay social debts, as among the English and American people, these affairs usually celebrating some birthday anniversary of the family, or the visit of a dear friend. Family connections are held in very high esteem in Brazil, and these birthday reunions are important functions, the invitation list sometimes including even remote



A LIBERIAN PLUTOCRAT OF BAHIA [ORNAMENTS OF PURE GOLD].

relatives, so that the number of guests in attendance is quite large. The ties of relationship among these people are considered sacred and binding to such an extent that, in case of need, it is not unusual for a distant cousin to undertake the care and education of a number of children, rather than see them separated or brought up among strangers. In such an event, the responsibility is accepted as a duty and a pleasure, and is usually repaid with gratitude and affectionate devotion. It is considered a sad misfortune by the Brazilians when there are no children to bless the home life, and the arrival of a little stranger is always announced with great rejoicings, cards being sent to all the relatives and friends of the family. The patron saint is invoked to guide the tiny footsteps in the right way, and to guard the life and fortunes of the little one. The "birthday book" is one of the most valued possessions of a Brazilian household; in it is kept a faithful record of the birthday anniversaries of all

relatives, friends, and acquaintances. It is unpardonable, in Brazil, to forget the anniversary of a friend's birthday, or neglect to extend congratulations and felicitations upon so happy an occasion. Usually a "card" appears in the newspaper, expressing the good wishes of some friend in the most complimentary language, or a poem written by an enthusiastic admirer who takes this opportunity to declare his devotion, and dedicates the effusion to the queen of his heart in honor of her natal day. On the President's birthday, an official reception is held at the palace, attended by the members of the cabinet, the diplomatic corps, army and navy officers, church dignitaries, and the public generally, who call to pay their respects and compliments to the Chief Executive, and to felicitate his Excellency upon the

happy anniversary. Telegrams and messages pour in from all parts of the republic, containing expressions of confidence and esteem, and praying for his continued good health and prosperity.

The Brazilian children are not like the emancipated nestlings that hold the reins in the average North American household; they are gentle, reserved, obedient little folk, with a reverence for the older relatives that is most attractive, especially as expressed in the prevailing custom by which the children of each generation kiss the hand of the older in salutation; no matter what the age or position, this courtesy is observed, the father of a grown-up family bending over his mother's hand in the same respectful attitude that marks his own children's greetings. The most thoughtless of play-loving romps will not fail in the observance of this rule; and if an aunt or other relative appear on the scene in the midst of their games, the children stop playing, and run to pay their devoirs in this way. When grown people meet each other, their greeting is an embrace, whether in the house or on the street; in the rush of business affairs, the sight of men hugging one another in cordial good-will is a continual reminder of the brotherhood of humanity, and must surely help to keep the heart warm in its sympathies and tender in its attachments, thus fostering "the most salient features of the national character."

The foreigner in Brazil will observe many customs that are different from anything seen at home. Sometimes he counts them as defects, criticising only from one point of view, and failing to recognize that the differences due to national characteristics are not defects, either in the Latin or the Anglo-Saxon people. For instance, the perfect freedom with which courtship is permitted in the United States is unknown in Brazil, yet the same goal is reached by a different route. An impatient North American, who was greatly impressed by the beauty and grace of a Brazilian *senhorita*, described the difficulties that a suitor has to encounter, in the following avowal: "I'd rather face a loaded cannon than the ordeal of courting the whole family to win that girl!"—adding, however, with true American spirit: "I'll win her or die in the effort!" But, sometimes, "love laughs at locksmiths," and lovers bid defiance to social traditions; there are many instances on record where the usual slow process of the accepted form of courtship has been disregarded, the stronghold of love stormed in one bold, brave onslaught that carried all before it, and won a victory at



A MOÇO CARRYING WATER.

the hazard of every hope. Such was the nature of the Italian patriot Garibaldi's impatient wooing of the pretty Senhorita Anita Ribeiro, of Santa Catharina, immediately on the arrival in port of that celebrated soldier, who reached there in 1839. It is said he fell in love, "at first sight," with a pretty face that he saw at one of the windows of the town, as he looked through his field-glasses while the ship was approaching the harbor. Upon landing, he set out at once to find the house where he had seen the bewitching beauty; after a long search which proved fruitless, he finally decided to postpone further efforts until another day, and accepted the invitation of one of the leading men of the town to dine with his family. His surprise, when he found himself in the very house he had been seeking, was only equalled by the ardor and dispatch with which he pressed his suit—successfully, of course.

In some cases, more frequently in the smaller towns and villages, courtship proceeds very happily, with the little senhorita leaning out of her window to listen, and the devoted admirer standing in the street below to tell her "the old, old story," undaunted by the interruptions of rattling carts and staring passers-by, that so often make a dreary hiatus of what promises to be the smooth approach to an effective climax, drowning in a horrible discord the low, sweet music of love-inspired speech. It may be that the lessons in patience learned under these trying circumstances have a salutary effect upon the temper of the matrimonial pair afterward, for they usually live in peace. When the Brazilian girl marries, she retains her maiden name, adding that of her husband if she wishes to do so. The children may take the name of either the father or the mother. Sometimes two children of the same family will have totally different names, so that the relationship could never be guessed by a stranger.

The everyday life in a Brazilian home is unpretentious, and governed by the simplest rules. The interior of the dwelling is furnished to suit the climate, heavy carpets and draperies being avoided in favor of more appropriate materials. The big lounging chairs and rockers scattered about with a disregard for "arrangement" in the parlors of North America are not often seen in Brazilian *salas*, which always have a sofa at one side, with two parallel rows of chairs facing each other and extending from each end of it toward the centre of the room. In this way, the hostess and her guests are within easy talking distance, though the stiff-backed chairs lack the luxurious comfort that a "cosy corner" affords, and seem to forbid all frivolous gossip. The furniture of the *sala* is often quite costly, and, in many of the more beautiful residences, the halls, dining-room, staircases, music-room, and even the *patio*, are filled with souvenirs of foreign travel. The people are early risers in this sunny land, where the bright light of morning comes a moment after the gray dawn that heralds it, and night "folds the drapery of her couch about her" without any lingering among the shadowy curtains of the twilight. As soon as a Brazilian wakens, coffee and rolls are brought to the bedside, breakfast *à la fourchette* not being served until noon; the dinner hours are usually from six to eight in the evening, though varying greatly according to choice. Sometimes, invitations are sent out for a *chavena de chá* [cup of tea] in the afternoon. Yerba maté is more popular than *chá* in southern Brazil. On the river steamers

plying up and down the Paraná, it is so unusual as to be quite remarkable for any passenger to appear on deck in the afternoon without a *cuya* of *maté*. If such a circumstance should occur, the omission is sure to be observed and a hospitable effort made to remedy it. To refuse a proffered *cuya* and *bombilla*, is to commit an unpardonable offence, even to offer an insult. In the third-class cabins on these boats, a happy group sits around a large kettle of boiling water, from which the *cuya* is filled from time to time and passed around the circle, each one taking a long draught of the delicious *maté*, to the accompaniment of merry jests and stories that make the hours pass quickly and agreeably until the kettle is empty and the contents of the *cuyas* have lost flavor. But it is *café*, that every one drinks in Brazil. Morning, noon, and night, in the *sala*, at the club, in the restaurants, *café*s, and



PICTURESQUE SCENE, NEAR PARÁ.

pastellarias, the cup of coffee is always acceptable, always delicious. Nowhere else in the world is the true secret of the art of making this refreshing beverage so thoroughly understood as in Brazil, and nowhere is hospitality more generous toward the appreciative guest, who realizes the force of the adage: "*Plus que l'on a, plus que l'on veut.*" Coffee is served every day in the Chambers, when Congress is in session; it is offered as a mark of courtesy to distinguished guests, when received by State officials or church dignitaries; in private houses it is never omitted, whether the occasion be an informal call or an important social function; from the President's palace to the humblest home in the land, the universal custom is to offer a cup of coffee, pure, hot, strong, and sweet, to the welcome guest. And as there are more very old people in Brazil than in most countries of equal population, the supposition that coffee is harmful meets with a strong challenge here, where every one

drinks it; children, students, physicians, and the aged alike enjoying its delicious aroma, and apparently none the worse for its use. In the offices of professional men, it is not unusual to have coffee served to clients, especially during a long and important interview.

Members of the different professions in Brazil are distinguished by a jewelled ring worn on the index finger, a lawyer wearing the garnet, a doctor of medicine the emerald, a pharmacist the topaz, and a doctor of engineering the sapphire. There are several women in the professions, who, without any ostentatious display of "advanced views," are quietly making their way to the front rank. São Paulo has a successful woman physician, and there are two who have good practices in Rio de Janeiro. In the law, there are women attorneys who enjoy an assured standing among the best. There are also women students of pharmacy and of architecture. The representatives of "the new woman" in Brazil are not so aggressive as in some other countries, and there are no Suffrage Societies or Women's Rights Leagues; the Brazilian feminine authority on "home rule" is not, however, the meek little creature that fiction portrays her, forever subject to the sovereign will of her lord and master. A proof of more independent tendencies is furnished by the story of the São Paulo women, who, in early colonial days, when their husbands on one occasion returned to them after a crushing defeat at the hands of the Indians of Minas Geraes, scornfully rebuked the vanquished warriors with the imperious command: "Go back and conquer, and as victors we will receive you!"

Travelling through the country, by any of the railway lines that traverse it, many interesting objects besides the beautiful landscape attract attention and arouse curiosity. Plain wooden crosses at intervals along the railroad mark the spot where some fatal accident or crime has occurred, and it is needless to say that the passenger sometimes feels a tremor at sight of them, when his train is going at a lively rate of speed, apparently in imminent danger of plunging over the cliff into a bottomless chasm. The country cottages have each their little white flag erected "to keep off the Evil Eye;" Saint Peter, Saint John, or Saint Anthony usually guarding their fortunes in this way. The life of the country people is very simple, especially among the poorer classes, who, however, seem quite content with their modest possessions, and happy, so long as there is farinha to eat and wine to drink; for no family is too poor to afford these Brazilian necessities. Farinha is to them what flour is to the North Americans, and is used in as many different preparations of food. The drink of the poor, as well as the rich, at meals, is wine, the quality, of course, varying according to the means of the purchaser; even the servant in the kitchen of a family is allowed wine with meals, though drinking at any other time of the day is not customary, the Brazilians being a very temperate people, and drunkenness practically unknown among them. In some districts they still refer to one of their comrades who has been drinking too much, and is intoxicated, as "bem Inglez," which means "quite English." The amusements of the poorer classes are principally of a sentimental character, some of the native dances being very popular at their "fiestas," as is also the music of their *modinhas*, or ballads. The love of music is innate with the Brazilians of all classes, and the guitar, or the *cavaquinho*,

which resembles it, is often among the treasures of the humblest, who would rather go hungry than live without music. In different States, the native dances vary in character: Matto Grosso has a dance called "cururu," and in Goyaz, Bahia, and other States there are still surviving traces of the once general favorites, the "sapateado," "fadinho," and "lundú." The "lundú" is now the most popular. It is of negro origin, and is known in all parts of the country. The song that accompanies this dance is teasing, impudent, and daring in tone, with frequent appeals to Saint Anthony, who is the accepted guardian of the negro's love affairs.



INDIAN CUISINE.

There are so many holidays in Brazil that it seems as if amusement were almost the chief occupation of the people; but under the new conditions fiestas are gradually lessening in number. The national feast-days are: January 1st, celebrating the universal brotherhood of man; February 24th, the date of the proclamation of the constitution of the Republic; April 21st, the martyrdom of "Tiradentes"; May 3d, the anniversary of the discovery of Brazil; May 13th, the fraternity of Brazilians; July 14th, the republic of liberty in France, and the independence of the sovereign people; September 7th, the anniversary of Brazilian independence; October 12th, the discovery of America; November 2d, the commemoration of the dead; November 15th, the establishment of the Brazilian

Republic. Besides these holidays, there are fourteen fixed and thirty movable religious feasts during the year, some of them celebrated with great demonstrations. Carnival time is especially gay and lively. Business is practically suspended, and the cities and towns are given over to merry-making. In Rio, where the festival is observed with the greatest display of enthusiasm, the streets present an appearance that is bizarre in the extreme. Quaint figures in mask and gown pass and repass along the main thoroughfares, and elbow each other in cafés and hotel corridors; befrilled and beruffled troubadours of the Middle Ages link arms with the trousered courtiers of modern society, and stroll across the praça, or rush to catch the nearest street car, with many grotesque gestures; Egyptian princesses giggle in twentieth century school-girl style as they adjust their masks, and proud countesses of the old French court munch bonbons and stumble over their gorgeous trains with a recklessness that would make those historical grand dames turn in their graves if they knew it; while the din of trumpets and horns, the shouting, laughter, and ringing of bells, announce to the sober world in unmistakable language that Momus has set up his court, and will maintain his authority at all costs. Showers of bright-colored *confetti* fall on "the just and the unjust" with impartiality and a delightful disregard of results; those tiny little paper disks of red, yellow, green, or blue, settle in the handsome folds of my lady's Parisian gown and scatter themselves all over her elegant boudoir, with the same democratic freedom that they display in decorating the tattered shawl of the poorest reveller. The next day, when the business world wakes up again to its responsibilities, cartload after cartload of *confetti* will be gathered up in the doorways and street corners, and carried away to be unloaded among the city's garbage; but for weeks to come, traces remain in the bright bits shaken out of clothes worn on that festive night of the closing carnival. When the holiday is past, the social atmosphere changes from one end of Brazil to the other, as completely and as suddenly as if under a magic wand. No more gaiety is seen, but the serious attitude of penitents and sinners toward all vain and transitory pleasures of this wicked world is observed alike in old and young. The church claims the attention that society is forced to dispense with, and if the pretty *débutante* has memories of the bright ballroom and the handsome cavalier whom she feels sure is contemplating a siege of the citadel of her heart—she does not say so. The Brazilian *débutante* differs little from her contemporaries of other lands in her happy, care-free enjoyment of life, and in the illusions that make the future a dream of paradise for her. She has many graces and charms that win the hearts of all visitors to the sunny land of her nativity, and, although she is not so conspicuously in evidence everywhere and upon all occasions as her North American sister, she is very sweet and refined, attracting her full share of the world's admiration.

To the visitor who is just arriving in Brazil, the all-absorbing feature is the scenery; the grandeur of Rio harbor, the picturesque beauty of the Bay of All Saints, the peculiar appearance of Recife, the pleasing aspect of Pará, are enchanting to the worshipper at Nature's shrine. Upon a further acquaintance with this wonderful land, enthusiasm is aroused over the prospect of its great future and the practical possibilities of its development.

Then, a study of the nation's history, of the record of unflinching patriotism, proud independence, and unfailing loyalty, impresses the stranger, and calls forth admiration for the character and spirit of the Brazilian. But, more attractive even than the beauty of its natural scenery, the promise of its unlimited resources, or the glory of its national history, is the social charm of its people, when a residence of a year or more among them has served to establish a true acquaintance. Courtesy finds its gentlest expression here; hospitality knows no more congenial atmosphere; and there does not exist in all the world a better example of what politeness signifies than is to be seen in the manner and speech of a typical Brazilian lady or gentleman. The exigencies of modern society, with the thousand demands that it



COUNTRY SCENE.

makes upon the time and attention, have not destroyed the finer sense of personal responsibility in regard to social obligations; here, it is not sufficient to observe the letter, while ignoring the spirit, of true friendship; in other words, there is little artificiality in the social fabric, compared with that which exists in so many countries. Life is not an unending struggle for position and money that makes it a burden. It is delightful to spend a season among these charming people, who are so gifted in the art of conversation, and so pleasing in the graces of the salon.

There is a word which all Brazilians love, for the associations it recalls, the deep meaning it expresses, and the fact that it has no equivalent in any other language—*Saudade*—it is

untranslatable. "Homesickness" conveys only a very meagre idea of its meaning; add to this expression all the words in the English language that convey the idea of loving remembrance of absent ones, fond recollections of past experiences, regrets at parting, love, friendship, sympathy,—a thousand tender sentiments of regard and devotion,—and still you have not fully explained what *saudade* conveys to the Brazilian heart. A Brazilian describes it as "the remembrance of, and the craving for, an absent person or act associated in the past with our life, which give at the same time the pleasure that the memory of sweet things, gone by, brings to us, and the sorrow of not possessing them any longer, together with the desire to possess them again," adding, "all these shades of sensation blended together constitute what we call '*Saudade*.'" Almeida Garrett, one of the greatest Portuguese poets of the nineteenth century, defines it thus:

"Saudade! gosto amargo de infelizes,
Delicioso pungir de acerbo espinho,"

which has been rendered into English as:

"Saudade! the unfortunate's bitter pleasure,
The tearing of a sharp thorn, yet sweet."

The visitor to Brazil who enjoys the friendship of these kind and gracious people, and learns to appreciate their good qualities, understands very well, when the time of departure comes, the expressive significance of that beautiful word in the heart language of the nation:

SAUDADE!



DAUGHTERS OF THE NEW BRAZIL.

EUDORO VILLELA

SÃO BENTO, 483-SÃO PAULO

São Paulo, 12 de agosto de 1966.

Prezado Senhor Guimarães,

Junto estou lhe enviando, para o Sr. conservar, caso tenha interêsse, um livro sôbre o Brasil antigo, no qual consta uma referência ao Dr. Luiz Viana, pae do futuro Governador da Bahia.

Sem mais, firmo-me

Atenciosamente



Ilmo. Sr.
Antonio Rocha Guimarães
Cia. Seguradora Brasileira
Bahia